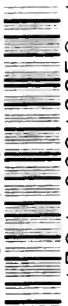
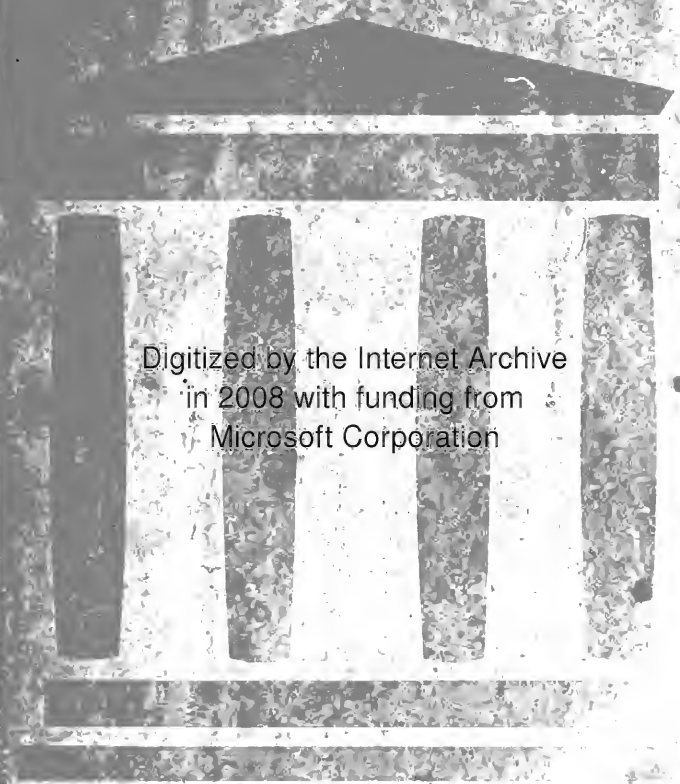


UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 00912258 1

THIS BOOK  
IS FROM  
THE LIBRARY OF  
Rev. James Leach

A high-contrast, black and white image of a classical building facade. The structure features a triangular pediment supported by four columns. The image is heavily textured with noise and grain, giving it a grainy, almost abstract appearance. The text is centered over the middle of the columns.

Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2008 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation



THE WORKS

OF

JOHN HOWE, M.A.



THE WORKS

OF

JOHN HOWE, M.A. *Printed*

SOMETIME FELLOW OF MAGDALEN COLLEGE, OXON.

VOLUME I.

THE BLESSEDNESS OF THE RIGHTEOUS;  
THE VANITY OF THIS MORTAL LIFE;  
AND  
MAN'S CREATION IN A HOLY BUT MUTABLE STATE.

WITH A GENERAL PREFACE

BY

HENRY ROGERS.

LONDON:  
THE RELIGIOUS TRACT SOCIETY,  
56, PATERNOSTER ROW; 65, ST. PAUL'S CHURCHYARD  
AND 164, PICCADILLY.

1862.

LONDON:  
BENJAMIN PARDON,  
*(Late Reed & Pardon.)*  
PRINTER, PATERNOSTER ROW.

BX  
9315  
H6  
1862  
V. 1





## GENERAL PREFACE

TO THIS EDITION.

---

ENOUGH has been said in the "Life," on Howe's merits and defects as a writer. Everywhere full of thought,—thought often deep, subtle, and not seldom sublime,—it is only now and then that he expresses himself with felicity and beauty commensurate with the grandeur of his conceptions. It must be confessed indeed that, with the exception of a pedantic ostentation of learning, from which, on the whole, he was far more free than most of his contemporaries, he shared, more or less, in nearly all their faults; in their redundancies, repetitions, needless divisions, involution, and rugged constructions.

I have always thought, however, that in his case these faults were greatly aggravated by his own system, or rather want of a system, of punctuation; by the unnecessary multiplication of parentheses, of which there are sometimes as many as four or five in a single paragraph; by the superfluous use

of italics, which, in the original editions, often extend to half the words in a sentence, and, so far from giving the key to the emphatic terms, distract attention by the mere number of the *seemingly* emphatic; and lastly, by the obtrusion into the text, at least in the greater part of his works, of Scriptural and other references, even where the passages referred to are fully cited. This practice was a common one in Howe's day, though not universal, nor always adopted even in his own writings; but it was particularly inexpedient in his own case, both because the frequent length, ruggedness, and involution of his periods, could ill bear any such adventitious encumbrance, and because, as his citations of Scripture are very numerous, the references, in fact, sometimes occupy half the space of a sentence, separating the clauses in a most awkward manner, and producing much the same impression on the feelings of the reader as if he were walking along a path with a series of gaps in it, or riding along what the Canadians call a "corduroy" road.

The following may be taken as a brief specimen of the irksomeness of these breaks; though the passage also illustrates some of the faults in Howe's style of punctuation:—

When the Apostle asserts, that *without shedding of Blood there is no remission* of sin, Heb. 9. 22. And that it was *impossible the Blood of Bulls and Goats should take it away*, Ch. 10. 4. and that therefore our Lord came to take it away, *in that Body prepared for him*, ver. 5, 6. He therein implies, it to be impossible to be otherwise taken away, than by *this Blood* shed upon the Cross. Nothing indeed being possible

to God which becomes him not. And it became him not otherwise to effect this design, and bring many Sons to Glory; but by the sufferings of *this his Son*. It was therefore not possible upon other terms, *Heb. 2. 10*. But in this way it was possible.

In the present edition the passage is printed thus:—

When the Apostle asserts, that “without shedding of blood there is no remission” of sin,<sup>1</sup> and that it was impossible the “blood of bulls and goats” should take it away; and that therefore our Lord came to take it away in that “body prepared for him,”<sup>2</sup> he therein implies it to be impossible to be otherwise taken away than by this blood shed upon the Cross; nothing indeed being possible to God which *becomes* him not: and it became him not otherwise to effect this design, and “bring many sons to glory,” but by the sufferings of this his Son. It was therefore not possible upon other terms;<sup>3</sup> but in this way it was possible.

The reader may take another brief instance. The last clause of the following sentence is lamentably cut in two by the references:—

Despair stupifies, hope fills the Soul with vigour, the favour of God is sought, not with cold indifferency, but as that wherein stands thy life, *Psal. xxx. 5*. and which is better than life, *Psal. 63. 3*. without it, can be.

It reads very differently if the references be left out:—

Despair stupifies, hope fills the soul with vigour; the favour of God is sought, not with cold indifferency, but as that wherein “stands thy life;”<sup>4</sup> and which is “better than life,”<sup>5</sup> without it, can be.

<sup>1</sup> Heb. ix. 22.

<sup>2</sup> Ch. x. 4, 5, 6.

<sup>3</sup> Ch. ii. 10.

<sup>4</sup> Psalm xxx. 5.

<sup>5</sup> Psalm lxiii. 3.

If it be said that it is as distracting to follow the reference to the foot of the page, I answer that this is quite true; nay, it would be much more distracting if it were at all necessary; but the fact is, that the passages cited are in general quite familiar, and the references are not heeded. They are useful simply because the reader may now and then wish to turn to a passage. Otherwise, the figures pointing out the references are disregarded by the reader's eye. They are there if he wants them, but do not obtrude themselves.

Trivial as such interruptions may singly seem, I feel convinced that, in the case of Howe, whose peculiarities of style require undivided attention, they greatly add to the tedium of the reader.

Considering these and similar uncouth devices in the mere modes of printing, I long ago came to the conclusion, that Howe's writings had been made more repulsive than they need have been; and that if, while sacredly preserving the text, these blemishes were effectually removed, his page would read much lighter than at present. This is what I have endeavoured to effect in the present edition. The reader will understand that everywhere the text has been preserved inviolate. The proofs have been and will be read, not from Calamy's folio, or any subsequent edition, but, wherever it is possible, from editions published in Howe's lifetime. Nothing has been altered, except where tables of errata in these editions justify it, or where the error is, palpably, one of the *press*. I should in many cases have

been glad, if I could have indulged myself in the liberty of adding or omitting a few words; of filling up an elliptical construction, of transposing a clause, or supplying, in very long sentences, the needful connectives of the too distant members;<sup>1</sup> for in John Howe's compositions such simple alterations would frequently make all the difference between clearness and obscurity: but I have felt that any such liberty was out of the question, and have therefore confined myself simply to the removal of the blemishes of *form*, above referred to.

For this no apology is required; it has been done, more or less, in all reprints of our old writers, and has been most conspicuously done in all the editions of Howe. In fact, his system of punctuation is so uncouth and misleading, that the earliest editor could not but feel the inexpediency of adopting it; and accordingly Calamy has continually altered it. He has, in numberless cases, though not consistently, rectified that very frequent fault—to which reference is made in the "Life"—of dividing a paragraph into four or five seeming periods, of which not one is really a period, but which are all, in fact, closely connected, and parts of one complete period;—thus perpetually balking the reader, and leading to a ludicrous misconstruc-

<sup>1</sup> This was done in Mr. Hunt's edition. "Where harshness of style," he says, "could be removed by transposing a word or member of a sentence, or by supplying an ellipsis, which is frequently the case, the Editor considered himself not only warranted, but bound to do it, as a service due both to the author and the public." But such liberty destroys all confidence in the integrity of an author's text, for it is impossible to assign the limits within which the editor has resorted to it.

tion of what is coming. It is true that this practice is more or less exemplified in most of the writers of the age, but scarcely in any, I think, so constantly as in Howe; while, in his case, it is rendered worse than in most others, by the frequent length of his sentences, which sometimes extend over more than a page. One would almost imagine, that feeling their preposterous length, he thought they would appear shorter, if they were cut up into seeming periods, with full stops and capitals; thereby promising the unwary reader the requisite full pauses,—a device about as successful as if one should try to make a long road shorter by fixing a turnpike gate at every few hundred yards. But though Howe certainly had no such thought, the practice has precisely the same effect as if he had; checking the reader's progress, cheating his expectations, and frequently compelling him to read twice before he can find out whether a part of one of these mock periods belongs to a foregoing or a subsequent sentence. It is quite true that the throwing down of these artificial barriers often makes the sentences of Howe immoderately long, but at least they *appear* what they are, and the reader is not seduced into the illusion that he is at the end of the sentence, when he is not; and it is hoped that by the proper use of the comma, semicolon, and colon, pauses will be frequent enough to make the parts of these long sentences more readily intelligible, and the reading of them much more easy, than they originally were. Calamy, as I have said, has, in

many places, though not consistently, altered the punctuation in this respect. He has also innovated in many other points, and not always, as I think, judiciously. One fault of Howe—that of too frequent employment of commas—he has unquestionably aggravated, having, in very many cases, inserted them where, as I see by inspection of the older editions, they were not originally to be found. In hundreds of cases Howe has placed them between words united by the closest connectives, as the conjunctions *and* and *or*; sometimes hardly three words in a sentence are found without this obtrusive pause. It was a fault that little needed aggravation, as may be seen from the following sentence, taken almost at random, from the Second Part of the “Living Temple,” published in 1702. “*What was to be remitted: it was not the single trespass of one, or a few, Delinquent Persons; but the Revolt, and Rebellion, of a vast community; an universal Hostility, and Enmity, continued and propagated through many successive ages, that was now, once for all, to be atoned for.*” This sentence also shows Howe’s excessive use of italics.

The later editors have, I believe, for the most part, followed Calamy in the *text*, though they have not servilely adhered to his punctuation, nor in every case to his division of paragraphs; as he again often, and not unreasonably, departed in this respect from the older editions. Frequently,—especially in his Sermons,—Howe has thrown single sentences, closely connected with what goes before

and after, into separate paragraphs; and thus we have three or four paragraphs in a few lines. In the later editions, both to save space, and because there was really no propriety in thus dislocating closely-related matter, these paragraphs have been often thrown into one.

In short, both Calamy, and subsequent editors and printers, naturally felt that much required to be done to relieve the works of Howe from the mere extrinsic deformities by which his mode of writing, and the current modes of printing, had disfigured them. They have, therefore, not merely modernized the orthography, and dispensed with capitals and italics, as is generally done in the reprinting of our older writers, but to some extent remodelled his punctuation and re-arranged his paragraphs.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Both the last editions, that of Mr. Childs, in one large volume royal 8vo, and that in 3 vols. 8vo, edited by the Rev. J. P. Hewlett, are printed with much care, and have to a certain extent removed many of the blemishes adverted to in this Preface. The former, however, adheres too frequently to the punctuation of Calamy, and has left too many of the mock periods to which I have above referred. Both retain the Scripture and other references in the text, and from the necessity of economising space, have often thrown together paragraphs which were originally, and ought still to be, kept separate, thus making the page heavier than it would have been. Both have also followed too closely the text of Calamy, which, as I shall presently show, is by no means worthy of implicit confidence.

It is proper to apprise the reader, lest he should consider it an inadvertence, of a variation purposely adopted in this edition, in the printing of the personal and possessive pronouns, as applied to the Deity. In passages, and in those only, in which the application of the very same words to *man*, as well as God, causes an unpleasant confusion, if not an ambiguity, the words as applied to God are printed with a capital initial. But the practice is not generally adopted, since, if it were, the perpetual recurrence of the words in question in many places of Howe's writings, would require so profuse an employment of capitals as would not merely disfigure the page, but rather perplex the eye than aid it.



The sum then of what I have attempted is this: I have endeavoured to revise the punctuation throughout; I have carefully removed to the foot of the page those Scripture references, and references to other books, which now, in all the editions, lie as stumbling-blocks in the text. I have also, in multitudes of cases, substituted commas for Howe's incessant parenthetical hooks; and as his divisions and subdivisions, in some cases, are so numerous as to be bewildering, I have adopted a simpler notation. For example, he sometimes employs the Roman numeral, then the Arabic numerals first with circular and then with square brackets. This often leads to confusion, and I have always dispensed with these last. Where minor divisions are to be expressed, I have frequently used the dotted Roman numerals, i. ii. etc., and in other cases have simply marked the transitions of thought in subordinate particulars, by putting the emphatic words at the commencement in italics. In his Sermons, where he has now and then divisions, (rank and file,) four deep, I have used a notation which gives each class of heads a distinct character; that is, the printed ordinal, the Roman numeral, the Arabic numeral, and the dotted Roman numerals; thus, First, I, 1, i. By this means it is conceived that the divisions, though intricate, may be kept pretty clear. In Howe's notation, it is really very difficult to remember them. As I have said in the "Life," the table of contents prefixed to the treatise "on Delighting in God," (not indeed drawn up by

him, but containing the skeleton of the work,) instead of assisting the memory, involves it in a labyrinth of utter perplexity.

While I have endeavoured by such changes as I have described,—changes in the mere form of Howe's writings,—to exhibit him in a more attractive guise to the reader, and shall think myself well repaid for much drudgery, if I have in any measure attained that object, the reader will distinctly understand that I have preserved the text inviolate. The proofs, as I have said, have been and will be read by the earlier editions; a course which, I apprehend, has not been taken, at least systematically, since Calamy's edition was printed. This I infer from the fact, that omissions and errors introduced into that edition have been in most cases retained in the later. One curious instance it may be as well to mention. It is an error of grammatical structure in a sentence in the Discourse on the Trinity, which Howe had himself corrected in a tract written in defence of that work. It was retained nevertheless in Calamy's edition, and has reappeared in every subsequent one, though Howe admits that, as it stands, it completely obscures the sense. It is an example of the involution and difficulty of Howe's style, for on analysis the sentence is seen to be completely ungrammatical, and in a plainer writer would have been detected as such by any ordinary printer. It is as follows:—"This now *supposed union, with such distinction,* must if it be judged impossible, as it is in our thoughts [introduced into *unmade being* ;

can no longer be judged impossible, as it is *an union* of distinct things, but only as it is *unmade*, or is supposed to have place in the unmade eternal Being."

One of Howe's opponents, it seems, had made some strictures, assuredly not unjustifiable, on the occasional intricacy and obscurity of his style. Howe, in his reply, modestly defends himself, but admits that there was *one* sentence (Sect. 8) in which the word *must*, followed by the word *can*, ought to be omitted. It is the sentence quoted above, in which the removal of the word in question makes the sentence, though certainly not elegant, at least grammatical. The passage, however, as I have said, has been reprinted with the original error in all the subsequent editions.

I have mentioned this instance partly for the purpose of observing that we must probably attribute to the inadvertence of the author some other intractable constructions, which might be corrected with equal ease, by the omission or addition of a word or two, if we had, as we have here, the author's warrant for it. In no case, however, have I allowed myself any such liberty of correction, excepting in a few cases where the error is plainly clerical.

It may, perhaps, be as well to give a few examples of the character and extent of the amendments attempted, by exhibiting a passage or two from the original editions, and subjoining the same passages, as printed in the present edition. The reader will then see, as I flatter myself, that, though

the author's meaning is much clearer in the latter form, all the alterations are perfectly innocent, and sacredly preserve the integrity of the text.

The following is a brief extract from the "Living Temple,"<sup>1</sup> vol. ii. p. 185-188, which I have selected, not because its more glaring faults, (which are obvious enough,) are now remedied for the first time, but because it chanced to exhibit at one view nearly all the blemishes which I have endeavoured to remove,—awkward division of paragraphs, mock periods, excess of italics, and profuse parentheses. I have appended to it the same passage, as it will stand in the present edition :—

But wheré have we that Representation of *God's Love* toward us, save in *Emmanuel*? This is the *Sum* of the *Ministry* [*of Reconciliation*] (or which is all one) [*of making Men love God*] to wit, *that God was in Christ reconciling the World to Himself, &c.* 2 Cor. 5. 18, 19.

This was the very *Make* and *Frame*, the *Constitution* and *Design* of the *Original Temple*, to be the *Tabernacle of Witness*. A *visible Testimony* of the *Love of God*, and of his *kind and gracious Propensions* towards the *Race of Men*, however they were become an *Apostate* and *Degenerous Race*. To let them see how *inclined* and *willing* he was to become acquainted again with them, and that the *old Intimacy* and *Friendship*, long since out-worn, might be renewed. And this *gracious Inclination* was testify'd. Partly by *Christ's taking up his Abode on Earth*; or by the *erecting of this Original Temple*, by the *Word's being made Flesh*. Wherein (as the Greek expresses it) he did *Tabernacle* among us. That whereas we did dwell here in *Earthy Tabernacles* (only now *destitute* and

<sup>1</sup> 1702. The book is handsomely printed, in fair type, and on thick paper.

*devoid of the Divine Presence*) He most kindly comes and pitches his *Tent*, amongst our *Tents*. Sets up his *Tabernacle* by ours, replenisht and full of God: So that, here the *Divine Glory* was familiarly visible, the *Glory of the only begotten Son of the Father*, shining with *mild and gentle Rays*, such as should *allure*, not *affright* us, nor their *terror* make us afraid. A *Vail* is most condescendingly put on, lest Majesty should too potently strike disaccustom'd, and misgiving Minds. And what is more terrible of this *Glory* is allay'd by being *interwoven with Grace and Truth*. Upon this account might it now truly be proclaim'd, *Behold! the Tabernacle of God is with Men!* That is performed which once seem'd hardly credible, and (when that *Temple* was rais'd that was intended but for a *Type*, and *Shadow of this*) was spoken of with *wondering Expostulation*, *In very deed will God dwell with Men on Earth*. Whereas it might have been reasonably thought, *this World should have been for ever forsaken of God*, and *no appearance of him ever have been seen here*, unless with a *Design of taking Vengeance*: How unexpected and surprising a thing was this, that in a State of so *comfortless Darkness*, and *Desolation*, the *Day-Spring from on high* should visit it, and that *God* should come down, and settle himself in so mean a *Dicelling*, on purpose to seek the *Aquaintance of his offending, disaffected Creatures!* But chiefly, and more eminently, this his *gracious Inclination* was testify'd.

By the *manner and design* of his *leaving this his Earthly Abode*; and yielding that his *Temple* to *Destruction*; *Destroy this Temple, and I will raise it up*. This being an animated *Living Temple*, could not be destroy'd without *Sense of Pain*, unto which it could not *willingly* become subject, but upon *Design*, and that could be no other than a *Design of Love*.

The reader will, if I mistake not, find the following smoother reading, but he will observe that not a single letter of the text has been altered.

But where have we that representation of God's love towards us save in Emmanuel? This is the sum of the ministry of reconciliation; or, which is all one, of making men love God; to wit, that "God was in Christ, reconciling the world to himself."<sup>1</sup> This was the very make and frame, the constitution and design, of the original temple; to be the Tabernacle of witness, a visible testimony of the love of God, and of his kind and gracious propensions towards the race of men, however they were become an apostate and degenerate race; to let them see how inclined and willing he was to become acquainted again with them, and that the old intimacy and friendship long since outworn might be renewed. And this gracious inclination was testified, *partly*,—

By Christ's taking up his abode on earth, or by the erecting of this original temple; by the "Word's being made flesh," wherein, as the Greek expresses it, He did tabernacle among us; that whereas we did dwell here in earthly tabernacles, only now destitute and devoid of the Divine presence, He most kindly comes and pitches His tent amongst our tents; sets up His tabernacle by ours, replenished and full of God: so that here the Divine glory was familiarly visible, "the glory of the only begotten Son of the Father," shining with mild and gentle rays, such as should allure, not affright us, nor their "terror make us afraid." A veil is most condescendingly put on, lest majesty should too potently strike disaccustomed and misgiving minds, and what is more terrible of this glory is allayed by being interwoven "with grace and truth." Upon this account might it now truly be proclaimed, "Behold the tabernacle of God is with men!" *That* is performed which once seemed hardly credible, and,—when that temple was raised that was intended but for a type and shadow of this,—was spoken of with wondering expostulation; "In very deed will God dwell with men on earth?"—Whereas it might have been reasonably thought this world should have been for ever forsaken of God, and no appearance of him

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. v. 18, 19.

ever have been seen here, unless with a design of taking vengeance,—how unexpected and surprising a thing was this; that in a state of so comfortless darkness and desolation the Day-spring from on high should visit it, and that God should come down and settle himself in so mean a dwelling on purpose to seek the acquaintance of his offending, disaffected creatures!

But *chiefly and more eminently* this gracious inclination was testified by the manner and design of his leaving this his earthly abode, and yielding that, his Temple, to destruction. “Destroy this temple, and I will raise it up.” This being an animated living temple, could not be destroyed without sense of pain, unto which it could not willingly become subject but upon design; and that could be no other than a design of love.

I will add another brief extract from the same work, vol. ii. p. 194.

But now where there is so express a Testification, as we find, in *the Gospel of Christ*, of God’s Willingness to be reconcil’d. A Proclamation distinctly made, that imports no other thing, but *Glory to God in the highest, Peace on Earth, and Good will towards Men*. For Confirmation whereof, the Son of God incarnate, is represented *slain*, and offer’d up a *Bloody Sacrifice*; and that we might see at once both *that God is reconcilable* (by the highest Demonstration imaginable) and *how, or upon what terms* he comes to be so; no Place for reasonable Doubt any longer remains. We have before our Eyes, what by the wonderful Strangeness of it, should engage the most stupid minds to consider the matter, *What ought to assure the most misgiving, doubtful Mind*; that God is in good Earnest, and intends no Mockery or Deceit in his offer of Peace. And what *ought to melt, mollify, and overcome* the most *obdurate Heart*.

This seems at first a maze of incomplete sentences. Yet if they be properly pointed, and the evidently

redundant “*and*” in one place struck out, it reads smoothly enough.

But now, where there is so express a testification as we find in the Gospel of Christ, of God’s willingness to be reconciled; a proclamation distinctly made, that imports no other thing but “Glory to God in the highest, peace on earth, and goodwill towards men;” for confirmation whereof the Son of God incarnate is represented slain, and offered up a bloody sacrifice,—that we might see at once both that God is reconcilable by the highest demonstration imaginable, and how or upon what terms he comes to be so,—no place for reasonable doubt any longer remains. We have, before our eyes, what by the wonderful strangeness of it should engage the most *stupid* minds to consider the matter; what ought to assure the most *misgiving*, doubtful mind, that God is in good earnest, and intends no mockery or deceit in his offer of peace; and what ought to melt, mollify, and overcome the most *obdurate* heart.

I add only two more remarks on this subject; one is, that some of Howe’s sentences and paragraphs are so crabbed, the construction so involved, and so bristling with parentheses, that I can hardly hope that any revision of the punctuation will materially lessen their obscurity or absolve the reader from the necessity of paying the closest attention. He may even fancy, unless he consult the original editions, that a passage must have been rather darkened by the changes effected, than made plainer. Whether this be probable or not, he may have some means of judging by reading the preceding extracts; but at all events I shall have no reason to complain if, in any such case, he will take the trouble to make a *comparison* with Howe’s original text. I rather think that dark as the



passage may seem with the new pointing, he will find it still darker with the old. The second remark is, that so jealous have I been of any appearance of tampering with the text, that in the few cases in which I cannot satisfy myself as to the construction or meaning of a passage, or where the probable sense, guessed at rather than seen, cannot be made clear by any mere changes of punctuation, I have left the passage just as it is; merely adopting the modern modes of printing as regards orthography and the use of capitals; as, for instance, in the following passage, of which I pretend not to make out the grammatical construction:—

Therefore, that when his *most transcendent Greatness*, is represented, in Terms as *high* and *great* as could come under Human Conception, *Heb. 2. 10. He, viz., for whom are all things; and by whom are all things:* (and what could sound higher!) *As such*, it is considered, what was *most becoming* of him; and determined that it *became him, for, and by whom all things were*, since there was *one* (tho' so *great a One*) that had undertaken for Sinners, to be the *Prince, or Prefect* over the great Affair of their Salvation, especially being to make them, of *Rebels, Sons, and as such, bring them to Glory*, out of the meanest and most abject State; that he should not be made perfect [not be duly initiated into his *Great Office*, or not be compleat Master of his *Design*] otherwise than by his own intervening Suffering.

Nor will the following sentence, perhaps, strike the reader as making any very clear sense:—

If all its (the Soul's) motions be such as import constant hostility towards God, infelicity and torment to itself; this is to be dead, not simply and naturally, 'tis true, but respectively, and not in some by, and less considerable respect,

but in respect of the principal and most important purposes of Life.

On a second or third reading, the reader may probably discover that the preposition "by" is, in fact, a prefix of the word "respect," to which it ought to be joined, as in the word "by-play." In another place our author has similarly employed the inseparable preposition *mis-*, followed, as "by" is here, with another qualifying term of the divorced and ill-treated substantive. In these cases, and in a very few others, where an ellipsis, which might hopelessly perplex the reader, can be readily removed by a word or two, I have inserted them, always however between *asterisks*, to show that they are interpolated. But whenever the meaning can be got at by the strenuous effort of the reader, I have preferred letting Howe speak in his own way, however uncouth, to making any alterations, even though fairly notified, in the text.

The folio edition of Calamy (1724) is handsomely printed, and, as already said, has been generally followed in subsequent editions. But it contains quite enough errors to convince me of the necessity of collation, wherever it is possible, with editions of Howe's separate works published in his lifetime. Thus in the Treatise on the "Blessedness of the Righteous," there are not only many minute errors of a purely clerical kind, but in many cases verbal substitutions, and in others omissions, for which I can find no authority, either in the edition of 1668 or that of 1678. In one paragraph (p. 120 of the

present volume) I found a whole clause omitted ; and between pp. 242—278, no less than ten words ; none of them, it is true, of much moment to the meaning, but showing that due care could hardly have been taken about the text. In these places I find the text of the folio followed in the subsequent editions. In another and more serious blunder, however, they have happily not followed it. I allude to an error in the sermon on the “Redeemer’s Dominion over the Invisible World,” where one sentence is turned into complete nonsense by the omission of five important words. Speaking of our redemption as releasing us from the “*curse* of the law,” not from the *commands* of it, Howe asks whether a liberty of *disobeying* it, especially its first and most comprehensive command, would not be ruin rather than redemption? He forcibly says, “Had *this* been Redemption? which supposes only what is *evil* and *hurtful* as that we are to be redeemed from ! This were a strange sort of self-repugnant redemption, not *from sin and misery, but* from our duty and felicity ! This were *so* to be redeemed as to be still lost ; and every way lost, both to God and to ourselves for ever !” In Calamy’s edition the words “*from sin and misery but*” are omitted, and the sentence reads, “This were a strange sort of self-repugnant redemption, not from our Duty and our Felicity.” In the “Living Temple” I have found similar deviations from the editions published in Howe’s lifetime, and in one case an entire clause omitted.

I do not mention these things as very seriously

detracting from the value of the folio edition, but as showing that there was at least reason for doing what has now been done,—reading the proofs rather from the editions published in Howe's lifetime than from the folio of 1724.

Had my object been to undertake the editing of Howe's works in the fullest sense, I should everywhere have collated the text of the folio with the earlier editions, and noted all the variations from the older text in the margin. But though, having read the proofs by the earlier editions, I have in fact embodied all the emendations which any such collation could have effected in the text, my object has not been to institute this minute collation, or to trouble myself or the reader with any such results. My editorial, or rather *extra*-editorial object, has been of a more limited, though sufficiently laborious, character—that of presenting Howe's works according to the authentic text of the best editions that could be procured, and with such typographical improvements and such changes of punctuation, as may make them more acceptable and intelligible to the large class of his admirers: and this occupied all the time, and perhaps rather more than all the time, I could conveniently spare.

For similar reasons I have, for the most part, left the quotations with which Howe has here and there “garnished his margins,”—though nowhere very liberally, except in the “Blessedness of the Righteous” and the “Living Temple”—much as he left them. To have verified them in every instance

would not only have required far more time than I could command, but, for reasons easily assignable, would hardly have repaid anybody's labour. Many of them—especially from the schoolmen and casuists—are from obscure books, hardly accessible except to those who live near the largest public collections; what is worse, Howe, after the manner of his day, often does no more than refer to the author, or at most some large division of the work cited, comparatively seldom to the very chapter or page: so that it is frequently necessary to read through a hundred pages to find a single sentence; as I have found to my cost in some cases, when I have had a special object in tracing a quotation. Nor is this the only thing that may well deter one from undertaking such thriftless investigations; for, as was so much the custom of that day, Howe evidently often quoted from memory, or probably from a commonplace book, in which the passages, hastily copied, might often have only the names of the author or the work appended to them. In many cases, he does not scruple to alter the construction of a sentence for the purpose of insulating it from the context, and adapting it to his purposes in citing it. In many instances, when I have traced a sentence to its hiding-place, I have found the *ipsissima verba* not given, though the substance is retained, and the application just. Thus in the very motto to the "Blessedness of the Righteous," where the reference is simply to *Plato. in Theat.*, he has omitted a clause, and altered the construction. As

it stands it is Ἄλλα τὰ κακὰ οὐ δυνατόν ἐν θεοῖς ἰδρῦσθαι, κ. τ. λ. The passage (Stallbaum's edition of the Theætetus, cap. xxv. p. 170) begins thus:—Ἄλλ' οὐτ' ἀπολέσθαι τὰ κακὰ δυνατόν, ὦ Θεόδωρε· ὑπεναντιοῦ γάρ τι τῷ ἀγαθῷ ἀεὶ εἶναι ἀνάγκη· οὐτ' ἐν θεοῖς αὐτὰ ἰδρῦσθαι, κ. τ. λ. To have given, therefore, the very passages to which Howe refers, and which he often rather hints at than quotes, would be not only to give more than he gives and frequently something different from what he gives, but something different from what he *intended* to give.

As instances tolerably indicative of quoting from memory, I may take the following. In chapter xix. of the "Blessedness of the Righteous," he has made a reference to one of the Dissertations of Maximus Tyrius in the following form, found alike in the editions of 1668 and 1678, and in the folio: *Max. Tyr. in dissert.* τὴν δὲ θεὸς κατὰ Πλάτωνος, instead of giving the true title περὶ τοῦ τί ὁ θεὸς κατὰ Πλάτωνα.

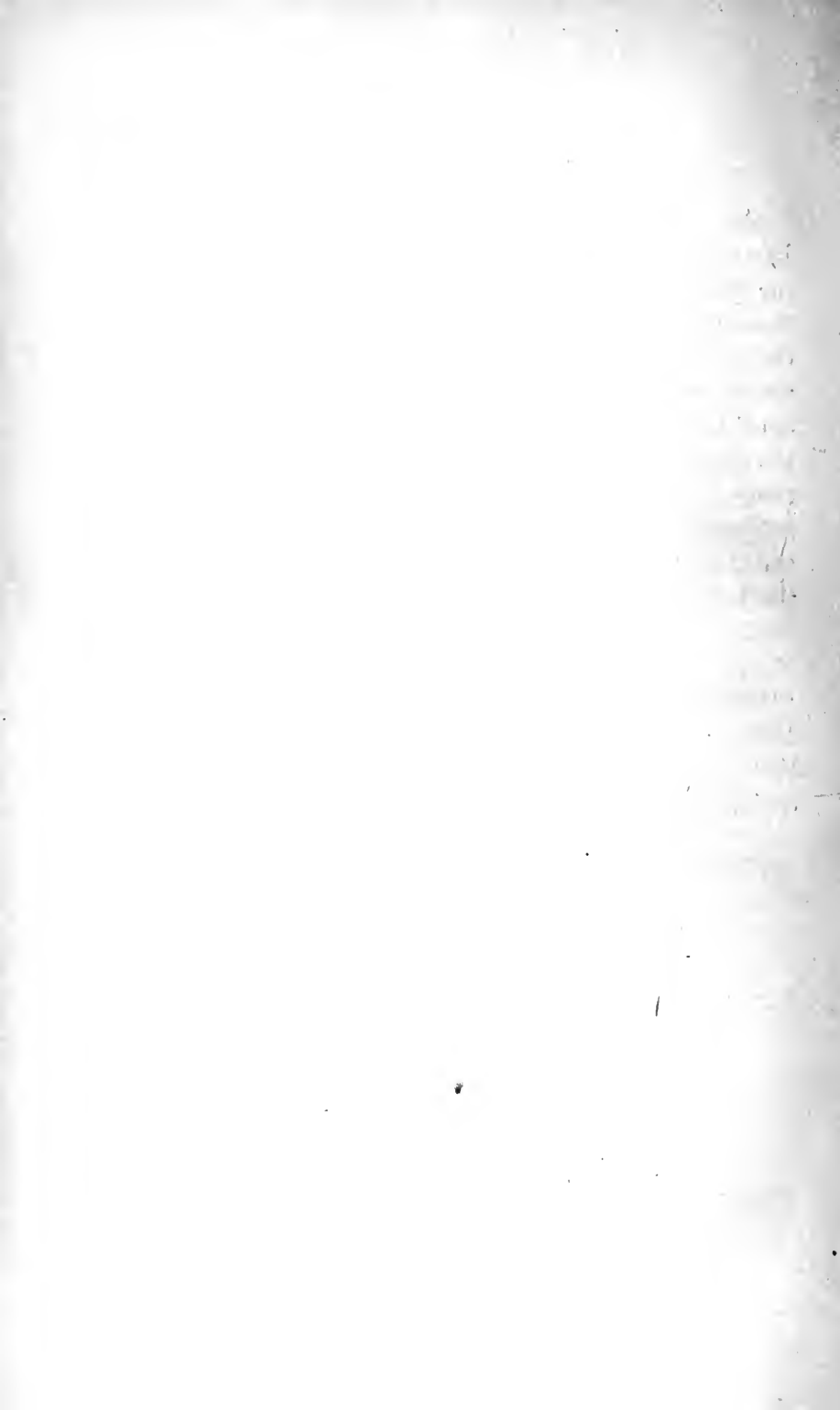
So also in citing, in chapter xvi. of the same treatise, a passage from Marcus Antoninus, and which is inadvertently given in this volume as it is found in the two early editions as well as in the folio, our author, it is evident, could not have had the original before him. It stands:—

Συζῆν θεοῖς· Συζῆ δὲ θεοῖς ὁ συνεχῶς δεικνὺς ἑαυτοῖς τὴν ἑαυτοῦ ψυχὴν ἀρεσκομένην μὲν τε τοῖς ἀπονεμομένοις, κ. τ. λ.

The passage will be found Lib. V. s. 27, of the Meditations, and stands thus:—Συζῆν θεοῖς· συζῆ δὲ θεοῖς ὁ συνεχῶς δεικνὺς αὐτοῖς τὴν ἑαυτοῦ ψυχὴν ἀρεσκομένην μὲν τοῖς ἀπονεμομένοις, κ. τ. λ.

As Howe's works were never collected in his lifetime, editors were necessarily left to judge for themselves as to the order in which they should follow one another; and this was in part determined by the size and number of volumes in which they were issued. Similar reasons will, in a considerable degree, determine the order in the present edition. At the same time, the dates of their publication, and the cognate nature of the subjects, will not be altogether neglected. Thus the three pieces in the present volume were among the earliest of Howe's publications, and are not unrelated in subject. Indeed the "Vanity of Man as Mortal" was appended by Howe himself to the "Blessedness of the Righteous" in the edition of 1678. The sermon on "Man's Creation in a Holy but Mutable State,"—Howe's earliest extant publication,—appeared in 1660.

H. R.

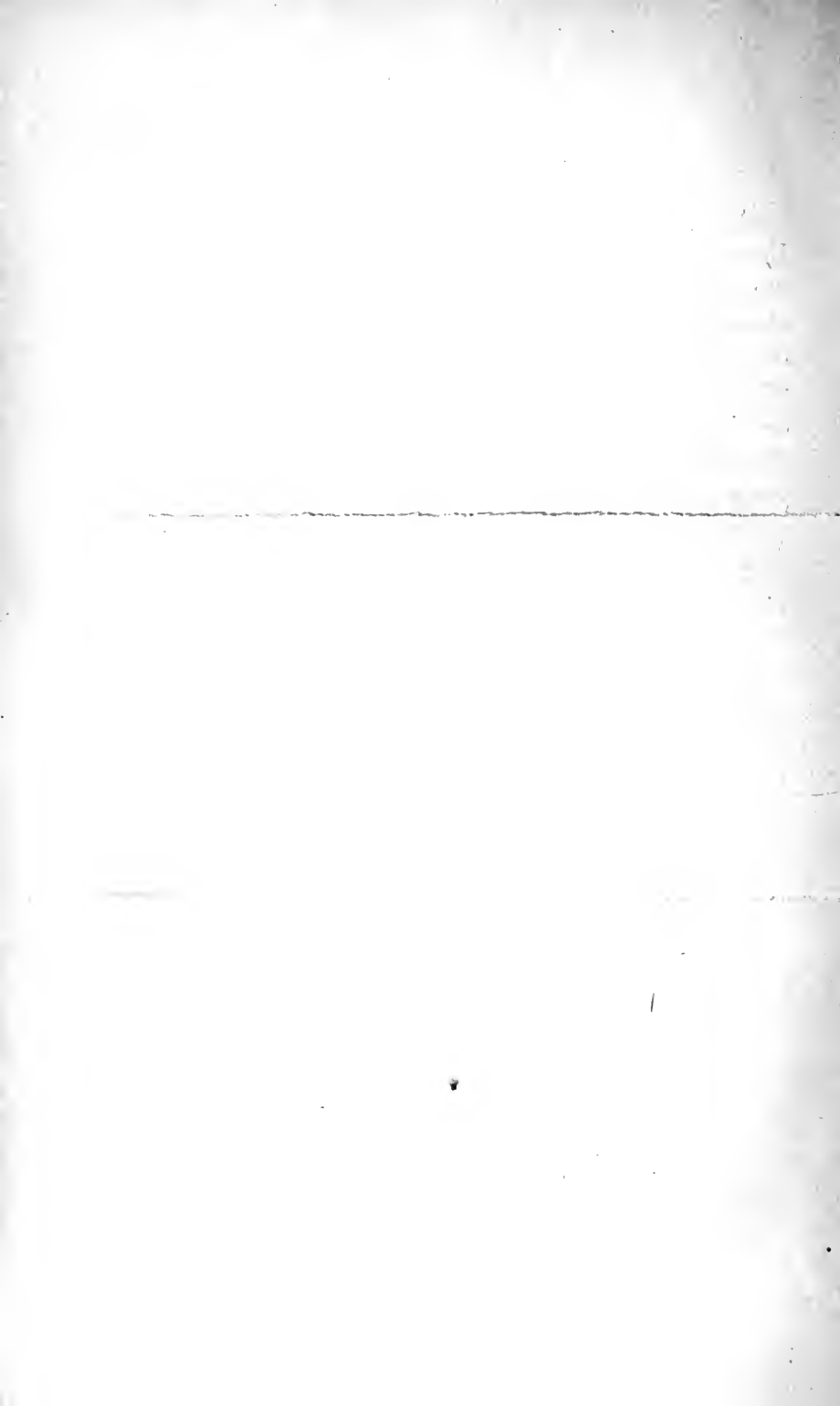




## ERRATA.

---

- Page 29, last line, for πασ' read πᾶσ'.
- „ 80, last line but one, for χορῶ read χορῶ̄.
- „ 171, note, lines 3 and 5, two parts of the verb ἐπιδεικνύω are inadvertently printed from the old edition as if it were ἐπιδεικνεύω.
- „ 244, note, for Συζῆ̄ read Συζῆ̄̄, and for ἐκάστω read ἐκάστῳ.
- „ 300, last line, for προσδοκᾶ read προσδοκῶ̄.



# CONTENTS.

---

GENERAL PREFACE TO THIS EDITION . . . . .	PAGE V
---	-----------

---

## THE BLESSEDNESS OF THE RIGHTEOUS.

TO THE READER . . . . .	3
-------------------------	---

### CHAPTER I.

A proemial Discourse—A Reflection upon some foregoing verses of the Psalm, by way of introduction to the text—A Consideration of its somewhat various readings, and of its literal importance—A Discussion of its real importance, so far as is necessary to the settling the subject of the present Discourse . . . . .	13
--	----

### CHAPTER II.

A summary Proposal of the Doctrine contained in this Scripture—A Distribution of it into three distinct heads of Discourse, viz., 1. The qualified Subject; 2. The Nature; 3. The Season of the Blessedness here spoken of. The first of these taken into consideration, where the qualification (Righteousness) is treated of; about which is shown, 1. What it is; 2. How it qualifies . . . . .	28
--	----

### CHAPTER III.

The Nature of this Blessedness propounded unto consideration, in the three ingredients, here mentioned, whereof it consists: 1. Vision of God's Face; 2. Assimilation to Him; 3. The Satisfaction resulting	
---	--

	PAGE
thence.—These propounded to be considered, 1. Absolutely and singly each by itself; 2. Relatively, in their mutual respects to each other—The first of these, Vision of God's Face, discoursed of; 1. The Object; 2. The Act . . . . .	46

#### CHAPTER IV.

The second ingredient into this Blessedness considered, Assimilation to God, or his Glory impressed—Wherein it consists, discovered in sundry propositions—The third ingredient, the Satisfaction and Pleasure which results, stated and opened . . . . .	61
---	----

#### CHAPTER V.

The relative Consideration of these three ingredients of the Saint's Blessedness: where it is propounded, to show particularly: 1. What relation Vision hath to Assimilation; 2. What both these have to Satisfaction—The Relation between the two former inquired into. An entrance upon the much larger Discourse, what Relation and Influence the two former have towards the third: what Vision of God's Face or Glory contributes towards Satisfaction, estimated from the consideration, 1. Of the Object, the Glory to be beheld; as it is Divine, entire, permanent, appropriate . . . . .	75
--	----

#### CHAPTER VI.

What the Vision of God's Face contributes to the Soul's Satisfaction, estimated from the consideration of the act of Vision itself. Wherein this Pleasure surpasses that of Sense. A Comparison pursued more at large between this Intuition and Discourse; between it and Faith. This Intuition more absolutely considered: its Characters, and what they contribute to the Satisfaction of the blessed Soul: that it is, namely, efficacious, comprehensive, fixed, appropriate . . . . .	93
---	----

#### CHAPTER VII.

Wherein Assimilation, the Likeness or Glory of God impressed, contributes unto Satisfaction: where is particularly propounded to be shown—What pleasure it involves—What it disposes to—What it involves in the 'esse' of it—What in the 'cognosci.'—I. The pleasure of "being like God" discovered—II. Showing, concerning the Image of God, generally considered, that it is the Soul's Health and Soundness restored—that it is a vital, an intimate, a connatural, a perfect Image . . . . .	106
--	-----

## CHAPTER VIII.

	PAGE
The Satisfaction carried in the Glory of God impressed, further shown by instances—Certain particulars of this Impression instanced in: a dependent frame of Spirit, Subjection or Self-devoting, Love, Purity, Liberty, Tranquillity . . . . .	119

## CHAPTER IX.

The Pleasure arising from knowing, or considering ourselves to be like God—From considering it, I. Absolutely—II. Comparatively, or respectively: To the former State of the Soul—To the State of lost Souls—To its Pattern—To the way of Accomplishment—To the Soul's own Expectations—To what it secures.—The Pleasure whereto it disposes: of Union—Communion.—A Comparison of this Righteousness with this Blessedness . . . . .	138
--	-----

## CHAPTER X.

The Season of this Satisfaction, which is twofold; at 'Death'—'Resurrection.'—The former spoken to; wherein is shown that this Life is to the Soul, even of a Saint, but as a Sleep: that at Death it awakes.—As to the latter; that there is a considerable accession to its happiness at the Resurrection . . . . .	151
---	-----

## CHAPTER XI.

An Introduction to the use of the Doctrine hitherto proposed.—The 'Use' divided into 'Inferences of Truth'—'Rules of Duty.'—I. Inference, that Blessedness consists not in any sensual Enjoyment.—II. Inference, the Spirit of Man, since it is capable of so high a Blessedness, is a Being of high excellency . . . . .	168
---	-----

## CHAPTER XII.

Inference III. That a Change of Heart is necessary to this Blessedness—The Pretences of ungodly Men, whereby they would avoid the Necessity of this Change—Five Considerations proposed in order to the detecting the Vanity of such Pretences—A particular Discussion and Refutation of those Pretences . . . . .	181
--	-----

## CHAPTER XIII.

Fourth Inference. That the Soul in which such a Change is wrought, restlessly pursues this Blessedness till it be attained.—Fifth Inference. That the knowing of God, and conformity to Him, are	
--	--

	PAGE
satisfying things, and do now in a degree satisfy, according to the measure wherein they are attained.—Sixth Inference. That the Love of God towards his People is great, that hath designed for them so great, and even a satisfying good . . . . .	205

#### CHAPTER XIV.

Seventh Inference. That since this Blessedness is limited to a qualified Subject, "I in Righteousness," the Unrighteous are necessarily left excluded.—Eighth Inference. That Righteousness is no vain thing, inasmuch as it hath so happy an issue and ends so well . . . . .	215
--	-----

#### CHAPTER XV.

Two other Inferences from the consideration of the Season of this Blessedness—The former, that inasmuch as this Blessedness is not attained in this life, the present Happiness of Saints must in a great part consist in hope—The latter, that great is the Wisdom and Sagacity of the Righteous Man who waives a present temporary happiness, and chooses that which is distant and future . . . . .	227
--	-----

#### CHAPTER XVI.

The second general head of the improvement or use of the Doctrine propounded from the text, containing certain Rules or Prescriptions of Duty connatural thereto.—1. That we settle in our minds the true notion of this Blessedness.—2. That we compare the temper of our own spirits with it, and labour thence to discern whether we may lay claim to it or no . . . . .	239
---	-----

#### CHAPTER XVII.

Rule 3. Directing such as upon inquiry find, or see cause to suspect, a total aversation in themselves to this Blessedness, to be speedy and restless in their endeavours to have the temper of their spirits altered and made suitable to it.—Doubts and Objections concerning the 'Use' of such endeavours, in such a case, answered.—Some Considerations to enforce this direction propounded and pressed . . . . .	258
--	-----

#### CHAPTER XVIII.

Rule 4. Directing to the endeavour of a gradual improvement in such a disposedness of spirit as shall be found in any measure already	
---	--

PAGE

attained, towards this Blessedness.—That it is Blessedness begun which disposes to the consummate state of it.—That we are therefore to endeavour the daily increase of our present knowledge of God, conformity to Him, and the satisfiedness of our spirits therein . . . 282

CHAPTER XIX.

Rule 5. Directing to raise our Desires above the 'actual' or 'possible' attainments of this our present, and terminate them upon the future consummate State of Blessedness. The Rule explained and pressed by sundry considerations.—Rule 6. That we add to a desirous pursuit, a joyful 'expectation' of this Blessedness : which is pursued in certain subordinate directions . . . . . 313

CHAPTER XX.

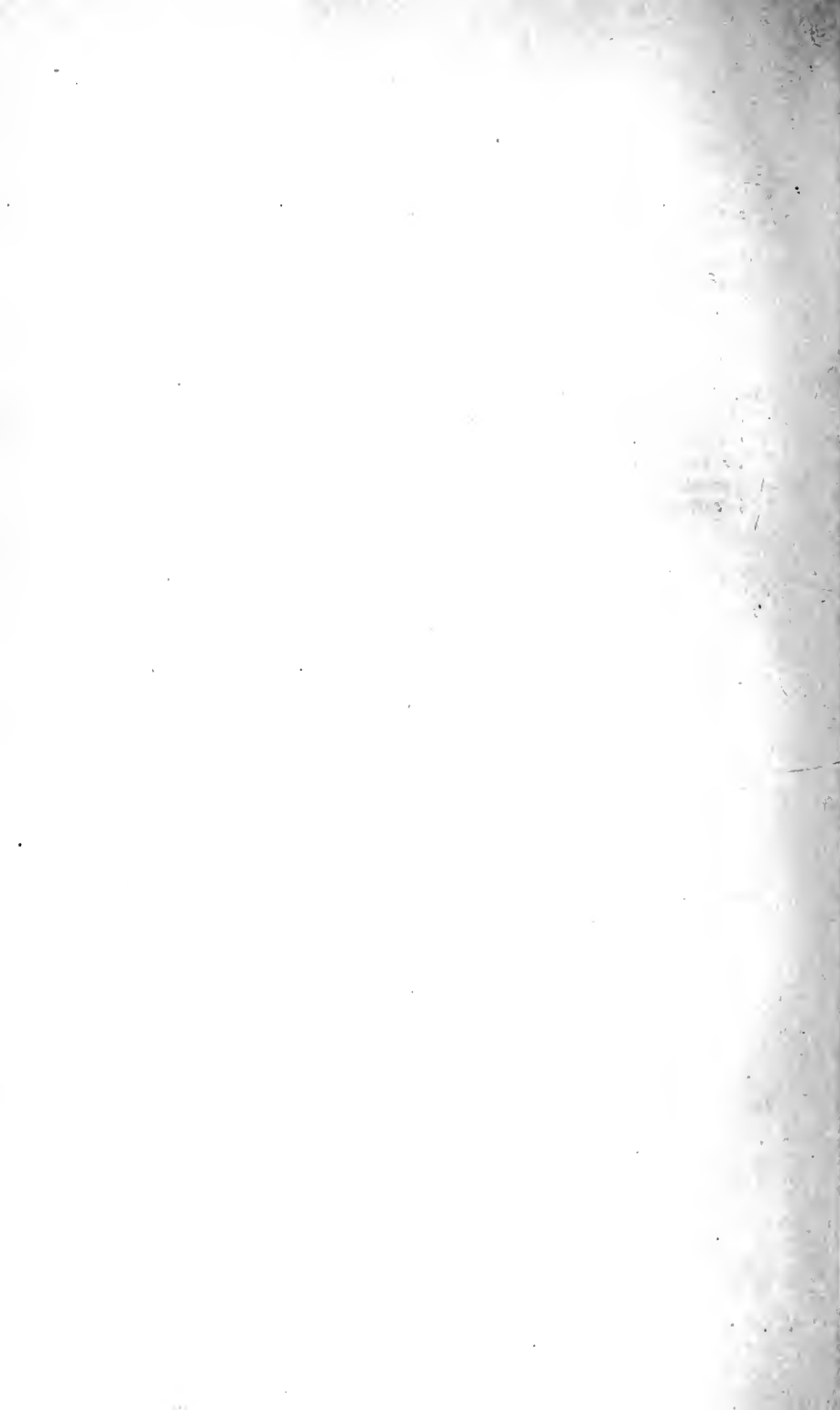
The addition of two Rules, that more specially respect the yet 'future' Season of this Blessedness, after this Life ; namely :—Rule 7. That we patiently wait for it until Death.—Rule 8. That we love not too much this present Life . . . . . 339

---

THE VANITY OF THIS MORTAL LIFE . . . . . 379

---

MAN'S CREATION IN A HOLY BUT MUTABLE STATE . . . . . 459





THE  
BLESSEDNESS OF THE RIGHTEOUS

OPENED, AND FURTHER RECOMMENDED FROM THE CONSIDERATION  
OF THE VANITY OF THIS MORTAL LIFE :

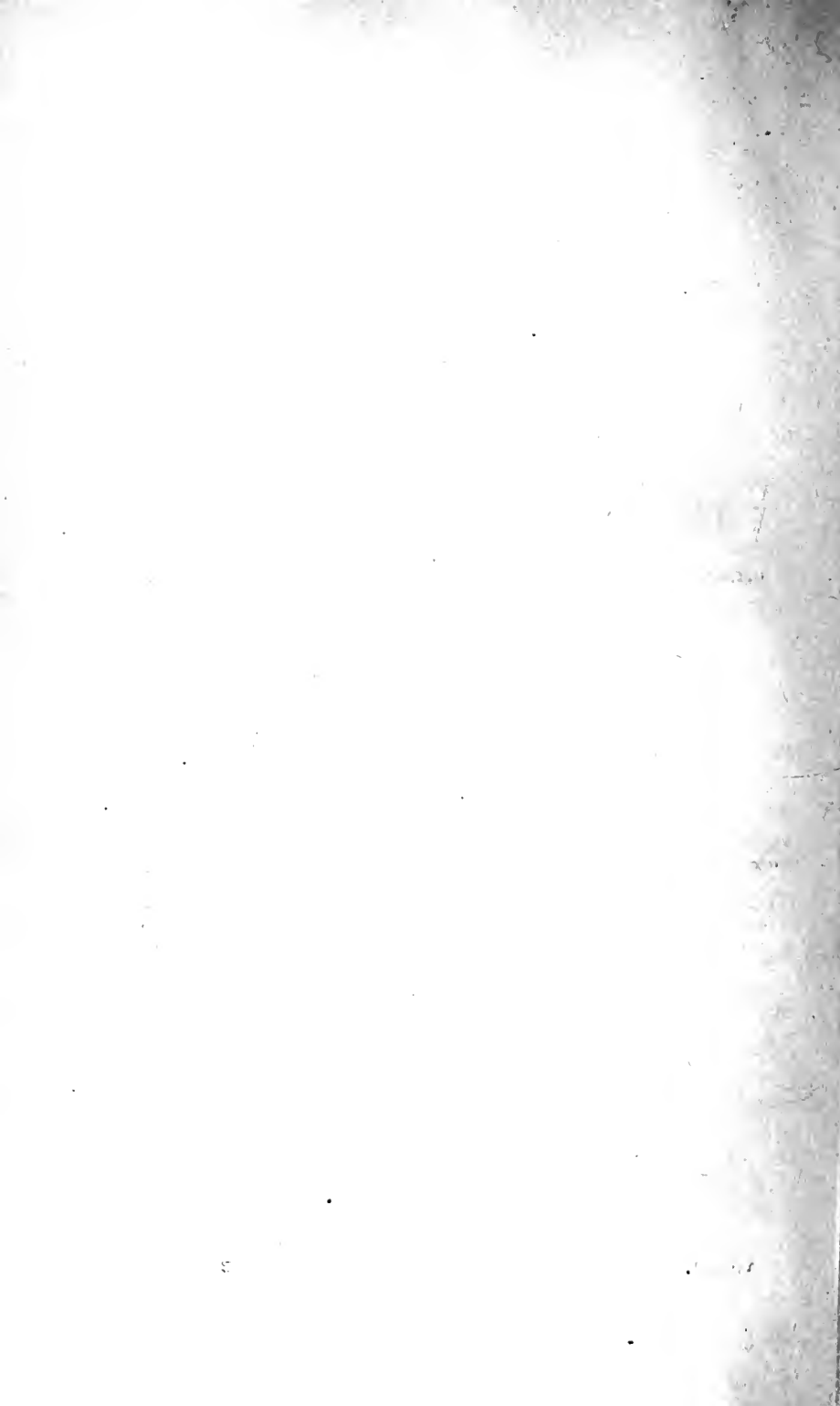
IN TWO TREATISES,

ON

PSALM XVII. 15, AND PSALM LXXXIX 47.

“When he shall appear, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is.”—1 *John* iii. 2.

Ἀλλὰ τὰ κακὰ οὐ δυνατόν ἐν θεοῖς ἰδρῦσθαι, τὴν δὲ θνητὴν φύσιν καὶ τόνδε τὸν τόπον περιπολεῖ  
ἐξ ἀνάγκης. Διὸ καὶ πειρῶσθαι χρὴ ἐνθένδε ἐκεῖσε φεύγειν ὅτι τάχιστα. Φυγὴ δὲ ὁμοίωσις θεοῦ  
κατὰ τὸ δυνατόν, ὁμίωσις δὲ δίκαιον, καὶ ὅσιον μετὰ φρονήσεως γενέσθαι.—*Plat. in Theæt.*



## TO THE READER.

I AM not at all solicitous that the world should know the history of the conception of this Treatise. If there be any thing that shall recompense the pains of such as may think fit to give themselves the trouble of perusing it, in the work itself, I should yet think it too much an undervaluing of them, if I did reckon the minuter circumstances relating thereto fit matter for their entertainment.

Nor am I more concerned to have it known what were the inducements to the publication of it. Earnest protestations and remonstrances of our good intentions in such undertakings, as they leave men still at liberty to believe or doubt at their pleasure, so they gain us little if they be believed. It is no easy matter to carry one, even, constant tenor of spirit through a work of time. Nor is it more easy to pass a settled invariable judgment concerning so variable a subject,—when a heart that may seem wholly framed and set for God this hour, shall look so quite like another thing the next, and change figures and postures almost as often as it doth thoughts.

And if a man should be mistaken in judging himself, it would little mend the matter to have deceived others also into a good opinion of him.

But if he can approve himself to God in the simplicity of an honest and undeceived heart, the peace that ensues is a secret between God and him. ‘They are theatre enough to one another,’<sup>1</sup> (as one said to his friend). It is “an inclosed pleasure:” “a joy which the stranger cannot intermeddle with.”

<sup>1</sup> Seneca.

It is therefore any man's concernment herein, rather to satisfy himself than the world; and the world's, rather to understand the design of the work than the author; and whither it tends rather than whereto he meant it.

And it is obvious enough to what good purposes discourses of this nature may serve. This is, in the design of it, wholly practical; hath little or nothing to do with disputation. If there be any whose business it is to promote a private, divided interest, or who place the sum of their religion in an inconsiderable and doubtful opinion; it doth not unhallow their altars, nor offer any affront to their idol. It intends no quarrel to any contending, angry party, but deals upon things in the substance whereof Christians are at a professed agreement; and hath therefore the greater probability of doing good to some, without the offence of any.

It is indeed equally matter of complaint and wonder, that men can find so much leisure to divert from such things,—wherein there is so much both of importance and pleasure,—unto what one would think should have little of temptation or allurements in it,—contentious jangling. It might rather be thought its visible fruits and tendencies should render it the most dreadful thing to every serious beholder. What tragedies hath it wrought in the Christian Church! Into how weak and languishing a condition hath it brought the religion of professed Christians! Hence have risen the intemperate preternatural heats and angers that have spent its strength and spirits and make it look with so meagre and pale a face. We have had a greater mind to dispute than live, and to contend about what we know not than to practise the far greater things we know, and which more directly tend to nourish and maintain the divine life. The author of that ingenious sentence<sup>1</sup> (whoever he were) hath fitly expressed what is the noisome product of the 'itch of disputing.' It hath begot the ulcerous tumours which, besides their own

<sup>1</sup> Pruritus disputandi scabies Ecclesiæ.

offensive soreness, drain the body, and turn what should nourish *that*, into nutriment to themselves. And its effects are not more grievous than the pleasures which it affects and pursues are uncouth and unnatural: 'The rough touch of an ungentle hand: that only pleases which exasperates,'<sup>1</sup> as the moralist aptly expresses some like disaffection of diseased minds. 'Toil and vexation is their only delight.' What to a sound spirit would be a pain, is to these a pleasure.

Which is, indeed, the triumph of the disease, that it adds unto torment reproach and mockery, and imposes upon men by so ridiculous a delusion—while they are made to take pleasure in punishing themselves—that even the most sober can scarce look on in a fitter posture, than with a compassionate smile: all which were yet somewhat more tolerable, if that imagined vanishing pleasure were not the whole of their gain; or if it were to be hoped that so great a present real pain and smart should be recompensed with as real a consequent fruit and advantage. But we know that generally by how much anything is more disputable, the less it is necessary or conducive to the Christian life. God hath graciously provided that what we are to live by, should not cost us so dear. And possibly, as there is less occasion of disputing about the more momentous things of religion, so there may be somewhat more of modesty and awe in reference to what is so confessedly venerable and sacred—though too many are over bold even here also—than so foolishly to trifle with such things. Therefore more commonly, where that humour prevails, men divert from those plainer things with some slighter and superficial reverence to them, but more heartily esteeming them insipid and jejune because they have less in them to gratify that appetite, and betake themselves to such things about which they may more plausibly contend: and then, what pitiful trifles oftentimes take up

<sup>1</sup> Ut ulcera quædam nocituras manus appetunt et tactu gaudent, et fœdam corporum scabiem delectat quicquid exasperat: Non alitè dixerim his mentibus in quas voluptates velut mala ulcera erupèrunt, voluptati esse laborem, vexationemque.—*Seneca de Tranquillitate Animi.*

their time and thoughts ; questions and problems of like weighty importance, very often, with those which, the above-named author<sup>1</sup> tells us, this disease among the Greeks prompted them to trouble themselves about ; as, what number of rowers Ulysses had ? Which was written first, the Iliad or the Odyssey ? etc. So that, as he saith, they spent their lives very operosely doing nothing ; their conceits being such, that if they kept them to themselves, they could yield them no fruit ; and if they published them to others, they should not seem thereby the more learned, but the more troublesome ; to this purpose he truly speaks. And is it not to be resented that men should sell away the solid strength and vital joy, which a serious soul would find in substantial religion, for such toys ! Yea, and not only famish themselves, but trouble the world and embroil the Church with their impertinences ! If a man be drawn forth to defend an important truth against an injurious assault, it were treacherous self-love to purchase his own peace by declining it ; or if he did sometimes turn his thoughts to some of our petty questions, that with many are so hotly agitated, for recreation sake or to try his wit and exercise his reason, without stirring his passions to the disturbance of others or himself ; it were an innocent divertisement, and the best purpose that things of that nature are capable of serving. But when contention becomes a man's element, and he cannot live out of that fire ; strains his wit and racks his invention to find matter of quarrel ; is resolved nothing said or done by others shall please him, only because he means to please himself in dissenting ; disputes only that he may dispute, and loves dissension for itself ;—this is the unnatural humour that hath so unspeakably troubled the Church and dispirited religion, and filled men's souls with wind and vanity, yea, with fire and fury. This hath made Christians gladiators, and the Christian world a clamorous theatre, while men have equally affected to

<sup>1</sup> Sen. de Brev. Vit.

contend, and to make ostentation of their ability so to do.

And surely, as it is highly pleasurable to retire one-self, so it is charitable to call aside others out of this noise and throng; to consider silently, and feed upon, the known and agreed things of our religion, which immediately lead to both the duties and delights of it.

Among which there are none more evident and undoubted, none less entangled with controversy, none more profitable and pleasant, than the "future blessedness of the righteous," which this discourse treats of. The "last end" is a matter so little disputable, that it is commonly thought (which is elsewhere more distinctly spoken to) not to be the object of election, and so not of deliberation consequently, but of simple intention only, because men are supposed to be generally agreed as touching *that*. And the knowledge and intention of it is apparently the very soul of religion; animates, directs, enlivens, and sweetens the whole thereof; without which, religion were the vainest, most irrational, and most unsavoury thing in the world. For what were there left of it but an empty unaccountable formality, a series of spiritless and merely scenical observances and actions without a design? For whereas all men's actions else, mediately tend to the last end; but that not being in view with the most, they pitch upon other intervenient ends, which, though abstracted from the last, should not be; yet they are actually to them the reason of their actions and infuse a vigour and liveliness into them: religion aiming immediately at the last end, that being taken away hath no rational end or design at all. And it cannot but be a heartless business, with great solemnity, in a continued course, to do nothing but professedly trifle, or keep up a custom of certain solemn performances which have no imaginable scope or end.

And because the more clearly this our last end is understood, the more powerfully and sweetly it attracts and moves the soul, this Treatise endeavours to give as plain

and positive a state and notion of it as the text insisted on, compared with other Scriptures, would afford to so weak an eye.

And because men are so apt to abuse themselves with the vain and self-contradicting hopes of attaining this end, without ever having their spirits framed to it or walking in the way that leads thereto, as if they could come to heaven by chance or without any design or care of theirs; the *proportion* is endeavoured to be shown between that *Divine Likeness*, in the vision and participation whereof this blessedness consists, and the *Righteousness* that disposes and leads to it: which may it be monitory to the ungodly and profane, who hate and scorn the likeness of God wherever they behold it! And let me tell such from better instructed Pagans,<sup>1</sup> ‘That there is nothing more like or more acceptable to God, than a man that is in the temper of his soul truly good, who excels other men, as he is himself excelled,’ pardon his hyperbole, ‘by the immortal God.’

‘That<sup>2</sup> between God and good men there is a friendship, by means of virtue; a friendship, yea, a kindred, a likeness, in as much truly as the good man differs from God but in time,’ (here sprinkle a grain or two) ‘being his disciple, imitator, and very offspring.’

‘That<sup>3</sup> God is full of indignation against such as reproach one that is like to him, or that praise one that is contrarily affected,’ or unlike; ‘but such is the good man,’ that is, he is one like God. ‘A good man,’ as it shortly after follows, ‘is the holiest thing in the world, and a wicked man the most polluted thing.’

And let me warn such haters of holiness and holy men,

<sup>1</sup> Nihil est Deo similis aut gratius quàm vir animo perfectè bonus, etc.—*Apuleius de Deo Socratis*.

<sup>2</sup> Inter bonos viros ac Deum amicitia est, conciliante virtute; amicitiam dico? etiam necessitudo, et similitudo, etc.—*Sen de Prov.*

<sup>3</sup> Νεμεσῶ γὰρ ὁ θεὸς ὅταν τις ψέγη τὸν ἑαυτῷ ὅμοιον, ἢ ἐπαινῆ τὸν ἑαυτῷ ἐναντίως ἔχοντα. ἔστι δ' οὗτος ὁ ἀγαθός . . . πάντων ἱερώτατον ἐστὶν ἄνθρωπος ἀγαθός, καὶ μιαιώτατον ὁ πονηρός.—*Plato in Minoe.*



in the words of this author immediately subjoined:<sup>1</sup> ‘And this I say for this cause, that thou being but a man, the son of a man, no more offend in speaking against a hero,—one who is a son of God.’

Methinks men should be ashamed to profess the belief of a life to come, while they cannot behold without indignation, nor mention but with derision, that holiness without which it can never be attained, and which is indeed the seed and principle of the thing itself.

But such are not likely much to trouble themselves with this discourse. There is little in it indeed of art or ornament to invite or gratify such as the subject itself invites not; and nothing at all but what was apprehended might be some way useful. The affectation of garnishing a margin with the names of authors, I have ever thought a vain pedantry; yet have not declined the occasional use of a few that occurred. He that writes to the world, must reckon himself “debtor to the wise and unwise.” If what is done shall be found with any to have promoted its proper end, *his* praises to God shall follow it, (as his prayers do that it may,) who professes himself

A well-willer to the souls of men,

J. HOWE.

<sup>1</sup> Τοῦτου δ' ἕνεκα φράσω, ἵνα μὴ ἄνθρωπος ὡν ἀνθρώπου, εἰς ἦρω Διὸς υἱὸν λόγῳ ἐξαμαρτάνῃς.

## CHRISTIAN READER,

You whose hearts are set on heaven, who are daily laying up a treasure there, here is a welcome messenger, to tell you more than perhaps you have well considered, of the nature of your future blessedness, and to illustrate the map of the Land of Promise, and to bring you another cluster of its grapes. Here is an useful help to make you know that holiness doth participate of glory, and that heaven is at least virtually in the seed of grace. Though this life be properly called a "life of faith," as contradistinct from the intuition and fruition hereafter, as well as from the lower life of sense; yet is it a great truth, and not sufficiently considered and improved, that we have here *more than faith*, to acquaint us with the blessedness expected. Between faith and glory, there is the spirit of holiness, the love of God, the heavenly desires which are kindled by faith, and are those branches on which the happy flower and fruit must grow: they are the name and mark of God upon us: they are our earnest, our pledge, and the first-fruits. And is not this more than a word of promise only? Therefore, though all Christians must live by faith, marvel not that I tell you, that you may, you must, have more than faith. Is not a pledge and earnest, a first-fruits, more? Therefore have Christians, not only a Spirit to evidence their title, but also some foretaste of heaven itself: for faith in Christ is to recover us to God; and so much as we have of God, so much of fruition; and so much as faith hath kindled in you of the love of God, so much foretaste you have of heaven; for you are deceived, if

you think that any one notion speaketh more to you of heaven and of your ultimate end, than THE LOVE OF GOD. And though no unsound, ill-grounded faith will serve to cause this sacred love, yet when it is caused, it overtops this cause; and he that perceiveth the operations of a strong effectual love, hath an acquaintance with God and heaven which is above that of believing. Faith seeth the feast, but love is the tasting of it. And therefore it is, that the holiest souls stick closest unto God, because, though their reasoning faculty may be defective, they know him by the highest and most tenacious kind of knowledge which this world affordeth—as I have lately showed elsewhere. Here you have described to you the true “witness of the Spirit;” not that of supposed internal voices, which *they* are usually most taken up with, who have the smallest knowledge and faith and love, and the greatest self-esteem or spiritual pride, with the strongest phantasies and passions: but the objective and the sealing testimony, the divine nature, the renewed image of God, whose children are known by being *like* to their Heavenly Father, even by being “holy as he is holy.” This is the Spirit of adoption, by which we are inclined, by holy love to God and confidence in Him, “to cry, Abba Father,” and to fly unto him: the Spirit of sanctification is thereby in us the Spirit of adoption; for both signify but the giving us that love to God, which is the filial nature and our Father’s image.

And this Treatise doth happily direct thee to that faithful “beholding God in righteousness,” which must here begin this blessed assimilation which full intuition will for ever perfect.

It is a happy sign that God is about to repair our ruins and divisions, when he stirreth up his servants to speak so much of heaven, and to call up the minds of impatient complainers, and contentious censurers, and ignorant self-conceited dividers, and of worldly, unskilful, and unmerciful pastors, to look to that state where all the godly shall be one, and to turn those thoughts to the furtherance of holiness, to

provoke one another to love and good works, which too many lay out upon their hay and stubble: and to call men from judging and despising each other (and worse than both those) about their “meats” and “drinks” and “days,” to study “righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.” “For he that in these things serveth Christ” (in which his kingdom doth consist) “is acceptable to God, and approved of men” that are wise and good. “Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another;” whilst the contentious for meats will destroy the work of God.<sup>1</sup> The union between peace and holiness is so strict, that he that truly promoteth one promoteth both.<sup>2</sup> The true way of our union is excellently described.<sup>3</sup>

If any plain unlearned readers shall blame the accurateness of the style, they must remember that those persons have not the least need to hear of heaven, and to be drawn up from the vanities of earth, who cannot digest a looser style.

As God hath endued the worthy author with a more than ordinary measure of judiciousness, even soundness and accurateness of understanding, with seriousness, spirituality, and a heavenly mind; so we have for our common benefit, the effects of all these happy qualifications in this judicious heavenly discourse. And if my recommendations may in any measure further your acceptance, improvement, and practising of so edifying a Treatise, it will answer the ends of him “who waiteth with you, in hope,” for the same salvation.

RICHARD BAXTER.

*Acton, May 30th.*

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xiv. 17—20.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. xii. 14; James iii. 17.

<sup>3</sup> Eph. iv. 11—16.

## THE BLESSEDNESS OF THE RIGHTEOUS.

PSALM xvii. 15.

“AS FOR ME, I WILL BEHOLD THY FACE IN RIGHTEOUSNESS: I SHALL BE SATISFIED, WHEN I AWAKE, WITH THY LIKENESS.”

---

### CHAPTER I.

A PROEMIAL DISCOURSE—A REFLECTION UPON SOME FOREGOING VERSES OF THE PSALM, BY WAY OF INTRODUCTION TO THE TEXT—A CONSIDERATION OF ITS SOMEWHAT VARIOUS READINGS, AND OF ITS LITERAL IMPORTANCE—A DISCUSSION OF ITS REAL IMPORTANCE, SO FAR AS IS NECESSARY TO THE SETTLING THE SUBJECT OF THE PRESENT DISCOURSE.

THE continual mixture of good and evil in this present state of things, with its uncertain fluctuations and subjection to perpetual changes, do naturally prompt a considering mind to the belief and hope of another, that may be both more perfect and more permanent. For certainly it could never be a *design* adequate, or any way agreeable, to the Divine wisdom and goodness, that the blessed God should raise such a thing as this lower creation out of nothing, only to give himself the temporary pleasure of beholding the alternate joys and sorrows of the best part thereof,—his reasonable creature seated in it: nor a *delight* at all proportionable to an eternally happy Being,—when he hath connaturalised such a creature to this sensible world,—only to take notice how variously the passions he hath planted in him may be moved and stirred by the variety of occasions which he shall thence be presented with, and what sudden and contrary impressions may be made upon his easy passive senses by the interchanged strokes and

touches of contrary objects: how quickly he can raise him into a transport of high contentment and pleasure, and then how soon he can again reduce him to a very paroxysm of anguish and despair. It would discover us to have very vile and low thoughts of God, if we did not judge it altogether unanswerable to his perfections, to design no further thing in creating this world and placing such a creature as man in it, than only to please himself for a while with such a spectacle, and then at last clear the stage and shut up all again in an eternal silent darkness. If we could suppose a *man* furnished with such *power*, he would surely add little to the reputation of his being *wise* or *good* beyond other men, by a design so to use it.

Much less can we think it worthy of God to perpetuate such a state of things as this, and continue a succession of such persons and actions as we now behold in the world through eternal generations, only to perpetuate to himself the same pleasure in the exercise of his immense power upon created natures, over which he hath so infinite advantage.

And indeed nothing can be more unconceivable, than that the great Creator and Author of all things should frame a creature of so vast comprehension as the spirit of man, put into it a capacity of knowing and conversing with himself, give it some prospect of his own glory and blessedness; raise thereby, in many, boundless unsatisfied desires after him, and unexpressible pleasure in the preconceived hope of being received into the communion of that glory and blessedness; and yet defeat and blast so great an expectation by the unsuspected reducement of the very subject of it again to nothing: yea, and that he should deal herein (as in that case he must) the most hardly with the best; and that such souls, whose mere love and devotedness to him had made them abandon the pleasures of this life and run through whatsoever difficulties for his sake, should fare worse than the very worst,—were, beyond all the rest, most utterly unimaginable, and a thought which pagan reason hath not

known how to digest or entertain. 'If' (saith one,<sup>1</sup> and he speaks the sense of many other, as well as his own) 'with the dissolution of our bodies, the essence of the soul, whatsoever that be, should be dissolved too, and for ever cease to be anything; I know not how I can account them blessed, that never having enjoyed any good as the reward of their virtue, have even perished for virtue itself.'

Wherefore it is consequent that this present state is only intended for trial to the spirits of men, in order to their attainment of a better state in a better world; that is, inasmuch as the infinitely wise and blessed God had given being to such a creature as man, in which both worlds, the material and the immaterial, did meet; and who, in respect of his earthly and spiritual natures, had in him somewhat suitable to each; and whereas this creature had lost, with his interest, his very inclination to the spiritual objects and enjoyments of the purer immaterial world, wherein alone his true blessedness could consist, suffered a vile depression of his spirit unto this gross corporeal world, and hereby brought himself under a necessity of being miserable, his nobler part having nothing now to satisfy it but what it was become unsuitable and disaffected to:—

His merciful Creator, being intent upon his restitution, thought fit not to bring it about by a sudden and violent hand, as it were to catch him into heaven against his will: but to raise his spirit into its just dominion and sovereignty in him by such gradual methods as were most suitable to a rational intelligent nature: that is, to discover to him that he had such a thing as spirit about him; whence it was fallen, how low it was sunk, to what state it was yet capable to be raised, and what He had designed and done for its happy recovery: and hence by the secret and powerful insinuations of His own light and grace, to awaken his drowsy and slumbering reason, and incline his perverse and wayward will to the consideration and choice of such things as that felicity

<sup>1</sup> Εἰ μὲν οὖν ἅμα τοῖς σώμασι διαλυμένοις καὶ τὸ τῆς ψυχῆς ὅ τι δηποτέ ἐστὶν ἐκείνο συνδιαλύεται, etc.—*Dionysius Halicarnassensis Antiq. Rom.* lib. viii.

consists in ; which that better world can afford, and his better part enjoy.

And while He propounds such things to him, how reasonable and agreeable was it, that He should keep him some time under a just probation ; yea, how much was there in it of a gracious and compassionate indulgence, often to renew the trial—whether he would yet bestir himself, and, having so great hopes before him and such helps and aids afforded him, and ready to be afforded, apply, at last, his intellectual and elective powers, to mind and close with so gracious overtures in order to his own eternal advancement and blessedness !

Nor was it an unreasonable expectation that he should do so. For, however the temporal good and evil that may constantly affect his sensitive part and powers be present and near, but the eternal misery or blessedness of his soul, future and remote : yet inasmuch as he is capable of understanding the vast disproportions of time and eternity, of a mortal flesh and an immortal spirit ; how preposterous a course were it, and unworthy of a man ; yea, how dishonourable and reproachful to his Maker, should he prefer the momentary pleasures of narrow incapacious sense to the everlasting enjoyments of an enlarged comprehensive spirit ! Or, for the avoiding the pains and miseries of the former kind, incur those of the latter !

Whence also, the Holy God doth not expect and require only, that men should make that wiser choice ; but doth most justly lay the weight of their eternal states upon their doing or not doing so, and, in that day when he shall “render to every one according to their works,”<sup>1</sup> make this the rule of his final judgment, to allot “to them, who by a patient continuance in well-doing, seek for honour, glory, and immortality,—eternal life:” to the rest, “indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish,” and that “whether they be Jews or Gentiles.”

<sup>1</sup> Rom. ii. 6—9.



Nor is it a new thing in the world that some among the children of men should in this comply with the righteous will of God, and so judge and choose for themselves as he is pleased to direct and prescribe. It is a course approved by the concurrent suffrage of all them, in all times and ages, into whose minds the "true light hath shined," and whom God hath inspired with that wisdom whereby "he maketh wise to salvation."

That numerous assembly of the perfected spirits of the just have agreed in this common resolution; and did in their several generations, ere they had passed this state of trial, with an heroic magnanimity trample this present world under their feet and aspire to the glory of the world to come; relieving themselves against all the grievances they have suffered from such whose "portion is in this life," with the alone hope and confidence of what they were to enjoy in another.

And hereof we have an eminent and illustrious instance in this context, where the ground is laid of the following discourse. For introduction whereto, observe that—

The title speaks the Psalm a prayer of David. The matter of the prayer is, preservation from his enemies. Not to go over the whole Psalm, we have in the 13th and 14th verses, the sum of his desires, with a description of the persons he prays to be delivered from: in which description every character is an argument to enforce his prayer.

*From the wicked.* As if he had said, They are equally enemies to Thee and me; not more opposite to me by their cruelty, than by their wickedness they are to Thee. Vindicate then, at once, Thyself, and deliver me.

*Thy sword, thy hand.* Thou canst as easily command and manage them, as a man may wield his sword or move his hand. Wilt thou suffer thine own sword, thine own hand, to destroy thine own servant?

*Men of the world, which have their portion in this life.* Time and this lower world bound all their hopes and fears; they have no serious believing apprehensions of anything beyond

this present life ; therefore have nothing to withhold them from the most injurious violence, if thou withhold them not. Men that believe not another world are the ready actors of any imaginable mischiefs and tragedies in this.

*Whose belly thou fillest.* That is, their sensual appetite : as oftentimes that term is used.<sup>1</sup> *With thy hid treasures*, namely, the riches which either God is wont to hide in the bowels of the earth, or lock up in the repository of providence, dispensing them at his own pleasure.

*They are full of children.* So, it appears by that which follows, it ought to be read, and not according to that gross,<sup>2</sup> but easy, mistake of some transcribers of the Seventy.

As if in all this he had pleaded thus : ‘ Lord, thou hast abundantly indulged those men already, what need they more ? They have themselves, from thy unregarded bounty, their own vast swollen desires sufficiently filled, enough for their own time ; and when they can live no longer in their persons, they may in their posterity ; and leave, not strangers, but their numerous offspring, their heirs. Is it not enough that their avarice be gratified, except their malice be also ? That they have whatsoever they can conceive desirable for themselves, unless they may also infer whatever they can think mischievous on me ? ’

To this description of his enemies, he, *ex opposito*, subjoins some account of himself in this his closure of the Psalm : *As for me* : here he is at his statque point ;<sup>3</sup> and, after some appearing discomposure, his spirit returns to a consistency in consideration of his own more happy state, which he opposes and prefers to theirs in the following respects :—

That they were wicked, he righteous. *I will behold thy face in righteousness.* That their happiness was worldly, terrene, such only as did spring from the earth : his heavenly and divine, such as should result from ‘ the face and image of God : ’ theirs present, temporary, compassed within this life : his, future, everlasting, to be enjoyed when

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xvi. 18 ; Phil. iii. 19.      <sup>2</sup> δῶν for διῶν, “ swine ” for “ children.”

<sup>3</sup> He arrests his argument at this point.

he should “awake:” theirs partial, defective, such as would but gratify their bestial part, fill their bellies: his, adequate, complete,<sup>1</sup> such as should satisfy the man. *I shall be satisfied, etc.*

The variety in rendering this verse (to be seen by comparing the original and translation noted in the margin<sup>2</sup>) need not give us any trouble, the differences not being of great moment, nor our own reading liable to exception. The word תמונה, about which is the greatest diversity, hath the significancy we here give it in the Second Commandment, and constantly elsewhere. And then, what more proper English can this text be capable of, than it hath in our Bibles? Each word hath its true and genuine import; and the syntax is sufficiently regular, and grammatical of the whole.

Only as to the former, that usual and obvious observation must here have place, that the ב prefixed to צדק, and which, with it, we read, “in righteousness,” doth often signify among its various acceptations, ‘by’ or ‘through;’ and that not only as denoting instrumentality; but more at large, the place of any medium necessary to the attainment of the end it subserves to; whence the same use of the Greek ἐν, that answers thereunto, is wont to go for an Hebraism.

And as to the latter, the only thing liable to controversy, is, whether the gerund<sup>3</sup> בהקיץ is to be construed with the *person* speaking—“when I awake,” or “in my awaking;” or with the *thing*, the likeness or image spoken of—“in the awaking of thine image,” or, “when thine image shall

<sup>1</sup> The εὐδαιμονία τοῦ συνθέτου.

<sup>2</sup> אֲנִי בְצַדֵּק אֶחְתָּה פְּנֵי אֱשֵׁנָה בְהִקְיָץ הַקְּיָרָה Sept. Ἐγὼ δὲ ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ ὀφθῆσομαι, τῷ προσώπῳ σου χορτασθήσομαι ἐν τῷ ὀφθῆναι τὴν δόξαν σου. The vulgar Latin, “Ego autem in justitiâ apparebo conspectui tuo, satiabor cum apparuerit gloria tua;” exactly following the Seventy, as doth the Ethiopic. The Chaldee paraphrase disagrees little, the Arabic less; the Syriac mistook, it seems, חמינה for חמונה, and so read that word *faith* which we read *likeness*.

<sup>3</sup> Hieronymus (juxta Hebr.) reads the words exactly as we do: “Ego in justitiâ videbo faciem tuam, implebor, cum evigilavero, similitudine tuâ.”

awake :” and I conceive we need not discuss it, but, following our own translation, leave the judgment of it to the ear itself, which (as Elihu tells us) trieth words.

In the mean time, the real importance of this Scripture more calls for discussion than the literal; concerning which, a threefold inquiry will be necessary for the settling of the subject of the following discourse.

1. What relation this “righteousness” must be understood to have to the vision of God’s face, and the other consequent blessedness.

2. What time or state “awaking” refers to.

3. What is intended by the “likeness of God.”

To the *first*, it is only necessary to say at present, that the already noted import of the preposition<sup>1</sup> “in” being supposed most suitable to this text (as apparently it is), “righteousness” must be looked upon in reference to this “vision,” not as in an idle or merely casual concomitancy, or as an unconcerned circumstance that hath nothing to do with the business spoken of, but as in a close and intimate connexion therewith; being, 1. Antecedent; 2. Conducibile; 3. Necessary thereto. Nor can I better express its place, and reference to it, generally and in one word, than in saying it *qualifies* for it; which how it doth, will be more proper to consider hereafter. It may now suffice to say, those words give us the qualified *subject* of this blessedness,—“I in righteousness,”—a righteous person as such.

To the *second*; taking it for granted that none will understand this awaking as opposed to natural sleep, in the borrowed or tropical sense it must be understood to intend either some better state in this life, in comparison whereof the Psalmist reckons his present state but as a sleep; or the future state of blessedness in the other life. There have been some who have understood it of the former, and thought the

<sup>1</sup> *בְּצִדְקָה* seems best to be rendered here, “by or through righteousness,” as by the condition in which he may expect the return of God’s mercies here, or the eternal vision of him hereafter, &c. So the learned Dr. Hammond, *Annot. in loc.* quoting also Castelleio to the same purpose.

Psalmist to speak only of a hoped freedom from his present temporal afflictions; but then, that which will be implied, seems not so specious—that trouble and affliction should be signified by the necessarily presupposed *sleep*, which sure doth more resemble *rest* than *trouble*.

I conceive it less exceptionable to refer “awaking” to the blessed state of saints after this life. For,—

That saints, at that time when this was written, had the knowledge of such a state (indeed a saint not believing a life to come is a perfect contradiction) no doubt can be made by any that hath ever so little read and compared the Old and New Testament. We are plainly told that those excellent persons mentioned in the famous roll,<sup>1</sup> lived by that faith, “which was the substance of things hoped for, and the evidence of things not seen:” that of them Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, while they lived in Canaan, yet “sought a better, an heavenly country: confessing themselves pilgrims and strangers on earth.” We know it was the more general belief of the Jews in our Saviour’s time. And whence should they have it, but from the Old Testament? Thither our Saviour<sup>2</sup> remits them to search it out, and the way to it. The apostle Saint Paul<sup>3</sup> gives it as the common faith of the twelve tribes, grounded upon the promise made to their forefathers; and thence prudentially he herein states the cause wherein he was now engaged,—supposing it would be generally resented, that he should be called in question for avowing only so known and received a truth. Sure they were beholden to these sacred writings they had then among them, for so common a belief; and since it is out of question, from our Saviour’s express words, they do contain the ground of that belief, what cause have we to be so shy of so interpreting Scriptures that have a fair aspect that way?

Is it that we can devise to fasten here and there another sense upon divers such? I wonder what one text can be

<sup>1</sup> Heb. xi. 1, 9, 13—16.

<sup>2</sup> John v. 39.

<sup>3</sup> Acts xxvi. 6, 7, compared with the 8th.

mentioned in all the Old Testament to this purpose, wherein one may not do so: and what then would be the tendency of this course, but to deny in all the particulars, what, upon so clear evidence, we are in the general forced to admit? and to put Moses, and Abraham, and David, in a lower class than Pythagoras, and Socrates, and Plato?

And I think it would not be easy to find one text in all that part of the Bible, where both the words thereof and the context do more fairly comply, than in this, so as not only to admit, but even to invite that interpretation.

For the term "awake," about which the present inquiry is, how apt and obvious is the analogy between our awaking out of natural sleep and the holy soul's rising up out of the darkness and torpor of its present state into the enlivening light of God's presence? It is truly said so to "awake," at its first quitting these darksome regions, when it lays aside its cumbersome night-veil. It doth so, more perfectly, in the joyful morning of the resurrection-day, when "mortality is swallowed up in life," and all the yet hovering shadows of it are vanished and fled away. And how known and usual an application this is of the metaphorical terms of "sleeping" and "awaking" in Holy Writ, I need not tell them who have read the Bible. Nor doth this interpretation less fitly accord to the other contents of this verse: for to what state do the "sight of God's face," and "satisfaction with his likeness," so fully agree, as to that of future blessedness in the other world?

But then the contexture of discourse in this and the foregoing verse together, seems plainly to determine us to this sense: for what can be more conspicuous in them than a purposed comparison and opposition of two states of felicity mutually each to other; "that of the wicked," whom he calls "men of time" (as the words are rendered by one,<sup>1</sup> and do literally signify) and "whose portion," he tells us, "is in this life;" and "the righteous man's," his own; which he

<sup>1</sup> ממהים מהור, Homines de tempore.—*Pagnin*.

expected not to be till he should awake, that is, not till after this life.

*Thirdly*, it is further to be inquired, How we are here to understand "the likeness of God." I doubt not but we are to understand by it, his glory: and the only difficulty which it will be necessary at present to consider about it, is, Whether we are to take it objectively or subjectively; for the glory to be *represented* to the blessed soul, or the glory to be *impressed* upon it; the glory which it is to behold, or the glory it shall bear. And I conceive the difference is more easily capable of accommodation, than of a strict decision on either part.

By "face" is undoubtedly meant objective glory, and that in its most perfect representation—the face being, as we know with men, the chief seat of aspectable majesty and beauty. Hence, when Moses desires to see God's glory, though he did vouchsafe some discovery of it, yet he tells him his *face* cannot be seen. Hereupon, therefore, the next expression "thy likeness," might the more plausibly be restrained to subjective glory, so as to denote the image of God now in its most perfect impression on the blessed soul.

But that I insist not on: supposing, therefore, that what is signified by "face" be repeated over again in this word "likeness," yet I conceive the expression is not varied in vain; but having more to say than only that he expected a state of future *vision*, namely, that he assured himself of satisfaction too, another word was thought fit to be used, that might signify also somewhat that must intervene in order to that satisfaction. It is certain the mere objective representation and consequent intuition of the most excellent, even the divine, glory, cannot satisfy a soul remaining disaffected and unsuitable thereunto. It can only satisfy, as, being represented, it forms the soul into the same image, and attempers it to itself: as if it were said, 'I expect hereafter to see the blessed face of God, and to be myself blessed or satisfied by his glory, at once appearing to me, and transfusing itself upon me.' In short, therefore, I understand by that term, the glory of God as transforming, or as impressive of itself. If therefore

glory, the object of the soul's vision, shall by any be thought to be intended in it, I contend not; supposing only, that the object be taken not materially or potentially only, for the thing visible in itself considered; but formally and *in esse actuali objecti*, that is, as now actually impressing itself, or as connoting such an impression upon the beholding soul; for so only is it productive of such a pleasure and "satisfaction" to it, as must ensue. As in this form of speech—"such a man takes pleasure in knowledge,"—it is evident knowledge must be taken there both objectively, for the things known; and subjectively, for the actual perception of those things; inasmuch as, apparently, both must concur to work him delight; so it will appear, to any one that attentively considers it, "glory" must be taken in that passage, "we rejoice in hope of the glory of God."<sup>1</sup> It is Divine glory both revealed and received; his exhibition and communication of it according to his immensity, and our participation of it according to our measure, that must concur to our eternal satisfaction. Herein the Platonic adage<sup>2</sup> hath evident truth in it; pleasure is here certainly made up of something finite and something infinite, meeting together. It is not (as the philosopher speaks) a χωριστόν, but a κτητόν τι,—not anything 'separate' from the soul, but something it 'possesses,' that can make it happy. It is not happy by an incommunicate happiness, nor glorious by an incommunicate glory. Indeed, the discovery of such a glory to an inglorious unholy soul, must rather torment than satisfy. The future glory of saints is therefore called "a glory to be revealed in them,"<sup>3</sup> or "unto them," as the word signifies. And in the foregoing words, the Apostle assures Christ's fellow-sufferers, that they shall be glorified together with him. Surely the notation of that word, the formal notion of glorification, cannot import so little as only to be a spectator of glory: it must signify a being made glorious.

Nor is the common and true maxim otherwise intelligible;

<sup>1</sup> Rom. v. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Voluptatis generatio est ex infiniti et finiti copulatione.

<sup>3</sup> Rom. viii. 18, εἰς ἡμᾶς.



that grace and glory differ only in degree. For certainly it could never enter into the mind of a *sober* man, (though how dangerously some speak that might possibly have been so, if too much learning had not made them mad, will be animadverted in its place), that objective glory, and grace in saints, were the same specific, much less the same numerical, thing.

It is true, that Scripture often expresses the future blessedness by *vision* of God. But where that phrase is used to signify it alone, it is evident (as within the lower region of grace, words of *knowledge* do often imply *affection* and correspondent impressions on the soul) it must be understood of affective, transformative vision,—such as hath conformity to God most inseparably conjunct with it. And that we might understand so much, they are elsewhere both expressly mentioned together as joint ingredients into a saint's blessedness; as in those words, so full of clear and rich sense: "When he shall appear, we shall be like him: for we shall see him as he is."

Which text I take for a plain comment upon this: and methinks it should not easily be supposable, they should both speak so near the same words and not intend the same sense: you have in both the same season, "When he shall appear," "when I shall awake:" the same subject, the righteous person, "born of God" (compare the close of the former chapter with the beginning of this); and "I in righteousness:" the same vision, "We shall see him as he is;" "I shall behold his face:" the same assimilation, "We shall be like him," "I shall be satisfied with his likeness." Concerning the *σκέσις* or habitude this vision and assimilation mutually have to one another, there will be consideration had in its place.

I therefore conceive neither of these notions of the Divine likeness do exclude the other. If it be inquired, which is principally meant? That needs not be determined: if the latter, it supposes the former; if the former, it infers the latter. Without the first, the other cannot be; without this other, the first cannot satisfy.

If any yet disagree to this interpretation of this text, let them affix the doctrine propounded from it to that other last mentioned;—which only hath not the express mention of a consequent satisfaction, as this hath; whence therefore, as being in this respect fuller, my thoughts were pitched upon this.

Only withal let it be considered how much more easy it is to imagine another sense, and suppose it possible, than to disprove this or evince it impossible. How far probable it is, must be left to the judgment of the indifferent: with whom it may not be insignificant to add, that thus it hath been understood by interpreters, I might adventure to say the generality, of all sorts. However, the few annexed<sup>1</sup> (for

<sup>1</sup> ‘Agitur de resurrectione et manifestatione gloriæ cœlestis.’ Ruffin. in loc. ‘Cum apparuerit gloria tua, *i.e.* gloria resurrectionis.’ Bed. Comment. in Psalm.

How the Jews were wont to understand it, may be seen at one view in that of Petrus Galatinus, in loc. ‘Duo, mi Capnio, me hic per priscas Judæorum Scripturas ostendere hortaris, et generalem mortuorum resurrectionem futuram esse et eam per Messiam factum iri; primum itaque patet non solum per sacræ scripturæ testimonia, verum etiam per Talmudistarum dicta. Nam illud quidem, Psal. 17, dictum “Ego in justitiâ,” etc., sic exponunt, et presertim Rabbi Abraham Aben Ezra et Rabbi Solomo, etc.’ and so he goes on to recite their words, ‘De Arcanis Catholicæ veritatis.’

‘Opponit hæc, iis quæ de impiis dixerat. Illi sapiunt terrena, saturantur filiis, et portionem suam in hâc vitâ ponunt, mihi verò contempta est hæc vita; ad futuram festino, ubi non in divitiis, sed in justitiâ videbo, non terrena hæc transitura, sed ipsam faciem tuam: nec saturabor in filiis carnis, sed cum evigilavero tuâ similitudine, sicuti 1 John iii. 2. Cum apparuerit, etc.’ Luth. in Psal.

‘Resurgam è mortuis . . . videbo te perfectissimè sicut es, similis ero tibi.’ Jun. et Tremel. in Psal. 17.

Mollerus thinks it ought not to be restrained to life eternal, but saith; some understand it of the glory, ‘quâ ornabuntur pii in vitâ æternâ:’ and adds, . . . ‘et quidem non male.’

‘Ego vero et omnes electi tui . . . piè et justè vivimus in hoc sæculo; ut aliquando in futuro sæculo videamus faciem tuam, et eâ satiemur cum sc. à pulvere terræ evigilaverimus et reformati fuerimus ad similitudinem Christi tui.’ Seb. Munster. in notis in loc.

‘Cum ego ad imaginem tuam conditus resurrexero.’ Vatablus; though he adds, ‘alii ad resurrectionem non referunt.’

‘De futuræ vitæ fœlicitate, ait, satiabor quum expergiscar, *i.e.* quum

I neither apprehend the necessity, nor have the present conveniency of alleging many) will suffice to avoid any imputation of singularity or novelty.

resurgam è mortuis . . . Similitudine tuâ, hoc est videbo te perfectissimè, sicuti es ; et similis ero tibi quum patefactus Christus glorioso adventu suo, 1 John iii. 2.' Fabrit. Conc. in Psal. 17, ult.

' Describit his verbis Psalmographus beatitudinem æternam filiorum Dei.' Gesnerus in loc.

## CHAPTER II.

A SUMMARY PROPOSAL OF THE DOCTRINE CONTAINED IN THIS SCRIPTURE—  
A DISTRIBUTION OF IT INTO THREE DISTINCT HEADS OF DISCOURSE, VIZ.,  
1. THE QUALIFIED SUBJECT; 2. THE NATURE; 3. THE SEASON OF THE  
BLESSEDNESS HERE SPOKEN OF. THE FIRST OF THESE TAKEN INTO CON-  
SIDERATION, WHERE THE QUALIFICATION (RIGHTEOUSNESS) IS TREATED  
OF; ABOUT WHICH IS SHOWN, 1. WHAT IT IS; 2. HOW IT QUALIFIES.

Now the foregoing sense of the words being supposed, it appears that the proper argument of this Scripture is, 'The blessedness of the righteous in the other life, consisting in the vision and participation of the Divine glory, with the satisfaction that resulteth thence.'

In which summary account of the doctrine here contained, three general heads of discourse offer themselves to our view;—The *subject, nature, season* of this blessedness; or to whom it belongs, wherein it consists, and when it shall be enjoyed.

First, then, we begin with the consideration of the subject unto whom this blessedness appertains. And we find it expressed in the text, in these only words "I; in righteousness;" which amounts to as much as *A righteous person as such*. They represent to us the subject of this blessedness in its proper qualifications: wherein our business is to consider his qualification, "righteousness," under which notion only he is concerned in the present discourse; and about which, two things are to be inquired: *What it imports, How it qualifies*.

I. What it imports. I take righteousness here to be opposed to "wickedness" in the foregoing verse, as was intimated before; and so understand it in an equal latitude,

not of particular, but of universal righteousness; that is, not that particular virtue which inclines men to give *every one* their right (unless in that every one, you would include also the blessed God himself, the Sovereign common Lord of all) but an universal rectitude of heart and life, comprehending not only equity towards men, but piety towards God also: a conformity to the law in general, in its utmost<sup>1</sup> extent, adequately opposite to *sin*,—which is indeed of larger extent than wickedness, and in what different respects righteousness is commensurate to the one and the other we shall see by and by—as that is generally said to be *ἀνομία*, “a transgression of the law.”<sup>2</sup>

Among<sup>3</sup> moralists, such a comprehensive notion of “righteousness” as is inclusive of all other virtues, is not unknown. But in Scripture it is its much more ordinary acceptation. To give instances were to suppose too much ignorance in the reader, and to enumerate the passages in which this term is taken in that extensive sense, were too great an unnecessary burden to the writer. It were, indeed, to transcribe a great part of the Bible. How familiar is the opposition of “righteous” and “wicked,” and “righteous” and “sinner” in sacred language! And how fully co-extent “righteousness” is, in the Scripture notion of it, to the whole law of God, that one passage sufficiently discovers; where it is said of Zacharias and Elisabeth, that “they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.”

It is true, indeed, that when the words godliness or holiness are in conjunction with this term, its significancy is divided and shared with them, so as that *they* signify, in that case, conformity to the will of God in the duties of the first table, and *this* is confined to those of the second. Otherwise, being put alone, it signifies the whole duty of man, as the other expressions also do in the same case, especially the latter of them.

<sup>1</sup> 1 John i. 9. 1

<sup>3</sup> Ἐν δὲ δικαιοσύνῃ συλλήβδην πᾶσ' ἄρετ' ἔσται.

<sup>2</sup> 1 John iii. 4.

<sup>4</sup> Luke i. 5, 6.

As it seems not to be within the present design of the context to take notice of any imputed wickedness of the opposite sort of persons, other than what was really in them, and whereby they might be fitly characterised : so, I conceive, *that* imputed righteousness is not here meant, that is inherent in the person of the Mediator ; but that which is truly subjected in a child of God, and descriptive of him. Nor must any think it strange that all the requisites to our salvation are not found together in one text of Scripture. The righteousness of Him, whom we are to adore as “made sin for us, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him,” hath a much higher sphere peculiar and appropriate to itself. This of which we now speak, in its own inferior and subordinate place, is necessary also to be both had and understood.

It must be understood by viewing it in its rule, in conformity whereto it stands ; which must needs be some law of God. There hath been a twofold law given by God to mankind, as the measure of an universal righteousness, the one made for innocent, the other for lapsed man ; which are distinguished by the apostle under the names of the “law of works,” and the “law of faith.”<sup>1</sup> It can never be possible that any of the apostate sons of Adam should be denominated righteous by the former of these laws, the righteousness thereof consisting in a perfect and sinless obedience.

The latter, therefore, is the only measure and rule of this righteousness, namely, the “law of faith ;” or that part of the gospel revelation which contains and discovers our duty, what we are to be and do in order to our blessedness ; being, as to the matter of it, the whole moral law, before appertaining to the covenant of works, attempered to the state of fallen sinners by evangelical mitigations and indulgence, by the super-added precepts of repentance and faith in a Mediator, with all the other duty respecting the Mediator as such ; and clothed with a new form as it is now taken into the constitution of the covenant of grace.

<sup>1</sup> Rom. iii. 27.

This rule, though it be in the whole of it capable of coming under one common notion, as being the standing obliging law of Christ's mediatory kingdom, yet according to the different matter of it, its obligations and annexed sanctions are different.

As to its matter, it must be understood to require,—

1. The mere being and sincerity of those gracious principles,—with their essential acts, as there is opportunity, expressed therein,—in opposition to the nullity and insincerity of them.

2. All the possible degrees and improvements of such principles and acts, in opposition to any the least failure or defect.

In the former respect, it measures the very essence of this righteousness, and enjoins what concerns the *being* of the righteous man as such. In the latter, it measures all the super-added degrees of this righteousness which relations,—where they have a mutable foundation,—admit, enjoining what concerns the perfection of the righteous man. In the former respect, *righteousness* is opposed to *wickedness*, as in that of the Psalmist, “I have kept the ways of the Lord, and have not wickedly departed from my God: therefore hath the Lord recompensed me according to my righteousness:”<sup>1</sup> in the latter to *sin*, with which the Apostle makes unrighteousness co-extent, in these words, “If we say we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, etc. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”<sup>2</sup>

Accordingly are its sanctions divers. For wherein it enjoins the former of these, the essence of this righteousness in opposition to a total absence thereof, it is constitutive of the terms of salvation, and obligeth under the penalty of eternal death. So are faith, repentance, love, subjection, etc., required: “If ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.”<sup>3</sup> “He that believeth not is condemned already

<sup>1</sup> Psal. xviii. 21, 24.

<sup>2</sup> 1 John i. 8, 9.

<sup>3</sup> John viii. 24.

—The wrath of God abideth on him.”<sup>1</sup> “If ye repent not, ye shall all likewise perish.”<sup>2</sup> “Repent, that your sins may be blotted out.”<sup>3</sup> “Him hath God exalted to be a Prince and a Saviour, to give repentance and remission of sins.”<sup>4</sup> “If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be Anathema, Maranatha.”<sup>5</sup> “He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me,” etc.<sup>6</sup> “If any man come to me, and hate not his father and mother, and wife and children, and brethren and sisters, yea, and his own life also,” that is, as the former Scripture expounds this, loves them not less than me, “he cannot be my disciple;”<sup>7</sup> that is, while he remains in that temper of mind he now is of, he must needs be wholly unrelated unto me and incapable of benefit by me, as well as he is indocible and not susceptible of my further instructions, neither capable of the precepts or privileges belonging to discipleship: “He is the Author of eternal salvation to all them that obey him, and will come in flaming fire to take vengeance of those that know not God, and obey not his gospel; who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord,”<sup>8</sup> etc. Where it is only the sincerity of those several requisites, that is under so severe penalty exacted and called for; inasmuch as he that is sincerely a believer, a penitent, a lover of God or Christ, an obedient subject, is not capable of the contrary denomination, and therefore not liable, according to the tenor of this law, to be punished as an infidel, an impenitent person, an enemy, a rebel.

When it enjoins the latter, namely, all the subsequent duty, through the whole course whereof the already sincere soul must be tending towards perfection; though it bind not thereto under pain of damnation, further than as such neglects and miscarriages may be so gross and continued as not to consist with sincerity: yet such injunctions are not wholly without penalty; but here it obliges under less

<sup>1</sup> John iii. 18, 36.    <sup>2</sup> Luke xiii. 3, 5.    <sup>3</sup> Acts iii. 19.    <sup>4</sup> Acts v. 31.

<sup>5</sup> 1 Cor. xvi. 22.

<sup>6</sup> Matt. x. 37.

<sup>7</sup> Luke xiv. 26.

<sup>8</sup> Heb. v. 9; 2 Thes. i. 8, 9, etc.



penalties,—the hiding of God's face and other paternal severities and castigations. They that thus only offend, "are chastened of the Lord, that they may not be condemned with the world. Their iniquity is visited with the rod, and their transgression with stripes, though loving-kindness be not taken away."<sup>1</sup> Yea, and while they are short of perfect holiness, their blessedness is imperfect also; which is to be acknowledged a very grievous penalty, but unconceivably short of what befalls them that are simply unrighteous. That it obliges thus diversely, is evident; for it doth not adjudge unto eternal death without remedy for the least defect; for then what other law should relieve against the sentence of this? or wherein were this a relieving law? Yet doth it require perfection; that we "perfect holiness in the fear of God;" that we "be perfect as our Father in heaven is perfect."<sup>2</sup> And otherwise, did it bind to no other duty than what it makes simply necessary to salvation, the defects and miscarriages that consist with sincerity were no sins, not being provided against by any law that is of present obligation—unless we will have the law of nature to stand by itself as a distinct law, both from that of works and of grace: which is not necessary; but as it did at first belong to the former, so it doth now to the latter, as shall further be shown by and by. For to suppose the law of works in its own *proper form and tenor*, to be still obliging, is to suppose all under hopeless condemnation, inasmuch as all have sinned. And besides, it should oblige to cast off all regard to Christ, and to seek blessedness without him; yea, and it should oblige to a natural impossibility, to a contradiction, to make that not to have been, which hath been; a sinner to seek happiness by never having sinned. It cannot therefore entirely, in its own form, as it was at first made and laid upon man, be of present and continuing obligation to him. But in what part and respect it is or is not, comes now more distinctly to be shown. Here know,

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xi. Psal. lxxxix.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. vii. 1; Matt. v.

the law of nature, with fit additional, became one formed constitution; which being violated by the apostasy, became unuseful to the end it was made for, the containing of man within the bounds of such duty as should be conjunct with his blessedness. Therefore was the new constitution of the law of grace made and settled, which alters, adds to, takes from it, relaxes or re-enforces it, according as the matter of it, the exigency of man's case, and God's gracious purpose and design could admit and did require.

For the promise implied in the threatening, it ceased; sin having disobliged the promiser.

For the precept,—the expressed positive part is plainly abrogate;<sup>1</sup> for the natural part,—as it was not necessary, so nor was it possible it should be so; its foundations being more stable than heaven and earth.

For the commination, we must understand two things in it: first, that for every transgression, a proportionable punishment must become due; secondly, that this debt be in event exacted: or, that God do actually inflict the deserved penalty entirely and fully upon the offending person.

The former of these is in the strictest and most proper sense natural, and therefore also unalterable: this dueness arising immediately from the relation of a reasonable creature offending, to his Maker; whence also it is discernible to mere natural light. Pagans are said "to have known the righteous judgment of God, that they who commit such things" (as are there mentioned) "are worthy of death."<sup>2</sup> And hence was the mention and dread of a Nemesis and an *ἐκδικον ὄμμα* (a vindictive deity and "a revengeful eye" over them) so frequent with them. 'If therefore,' as the learned Grotius speaks,<sup>3</sup> 'there had never been a penal law; yet an human act having in itself a pravity, whether intrinsical from the immutable nature of the thing; or even extrinsical from the contrary command of God, had deserved punishment, and that very grievous.' Now what an arbitrary

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. iv. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. i. 32.

<sup>3</sup> De Satisf., cap. 3.

constitution did not create, it could not nullify; but might add strength and give a confirmation to it.

But now for the latter,—*that this debt be entirely and fully exacted of the sinner himself*; though that be also natural, yet not in the strictest and most proper sense; that is, it is convenient and agreeable to the nature of the thing; not what it doth so necessarily require, that it can upon no terms be dispensed with. It is so natural, as that the son<sup>1</sup> inherit from his father, which yet may sometimes for just causes be ordered otherwise. It is what, if it were done, justice could not but approve: not what it doth strictly and indispensably require; or is a debt which it might exact, but which may without injustice, upon valuable considerations, be remitted. The former of these, therefore, the new constitution doth no way infringe or weaken, but confirm and reinforce. The latter it so far dispenses with, as that, for the satisfaction made by the Redeemer, the debt incurred by sin be remitted to the sinner that truly repents and believes, and continues sincerely, though imperfectly, to obey for the future.

So that his after delinquencies, consisting with such sincerity, do not actually or in event, subject him to other penalties than the paternal rebukes and chastenings before mentioned. But this latter part, considerable in the commination—*the determination of the full penalty, to the very person of the transgressor*,—it doth not dispense with to others (that is, of the adult, and of persons in a present natural possibility of understanding the Lawgiver's pleasure herein) than such before described; but says expressly, "He that believeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him:" that "indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish, shall be upon every soul of man that doeth evil."<sup>2</sup>

Therefore the morally preceptive part of the law of works is not in force as man's rule of duty, considered in conjunction with the promise: that is, it doth not now say to any man,

<sup>1</sup> Grot. *ibid.*

<sup>2</sup> John iii. 36; Rom. ii. 8. 9.

“Do this,” that is, perfectly obey without ever having sinned—“that thou mayest live.” Both which he was obliged to eye conjunctly; the former, as containing the rule; the other the end, in part, of his obedience. But it is in force, even by the new constitution itself, as God’s rule of judgment considered in conjunction with the commination, upon all whom the law of grace relieves not, as not coming up to the terms of it; whom also this supervening law brings under a supervening aggravated condemnation. For where the obligation to obedience is violated, the obligation to punishment naturally takes place. We see then how far the law of works is in force, and how far not.

But that so far as it is in force, it is to be looked on as taken into the new constitution of the law of grace, is evident. For it is new modified, and hath received a new mould and stamp by this law: which is now become, so far as it is promulgate, the standing rule of government over the lapsed world. The principal modifying act herein, is *dispensation*. Now this, it is true, may be so understood or may be taken in such a sense, as wherein it will only belong to the executive part of government; that is, when it is not the act of the same power that made the law: as where only the execution of a deserved penalty is dispensed with, which may be done, in some cases, by a judge, that is only a minister of the law, and not the maker of it; being, as may be supposed, enabled thereto by that law itself, or by an authority annexed to his office, or by virtue of instructions, which leave to him some latitude of managing the affairs of his judicature in a discretionary way, as present occasions shall dictate. And yet by none of these would any change be made in the law; but this is dispensation in a less proper sense.

In the proper and more famous sense, dispensation belongs to the legislative part of government, being the act of the same power that made the former law now dispensed with; and an act of the same kind, namely, legislation; the making of a new law that alters the former which it hath relation to: whence it was wont to be reckoned among those things that

make a change in a law.<sup>1</sup> And so the case is here: the former law is dispensed with by the making of a new one; which so alters and changes it in its matter and frame, and more immediate end, as hath been shown: and a changed law is not the same.

Nor is it at all strange that the minatory part of the law of works, related to the preceptive so as with it to constitute the *debt of punishment*, should be now within the compass of the Redeemer's law. For by this applied and urged on the consciences of sinners, he performs a necessary preparatory part of his work for their recovery, namely, the awakening, the humbling them, and reducing them to a just and useful despair of relief and help, otherwise than by his merciful hand and vouchsafement; and the rendering them hereby capable of his following applications. Cutting or lancing, with other such severities, are as proper and useful a part of the surgeon's business as the applying of healing medicines; nor have they the same design and end for which wounds are inflicted by an enemy, the taking away of life, but the saving of it. And the matter is out of doubt, that the most rigorous determination of the penalty that shall be understood duly belonging to the least sin, hath a place and doth stand visibly extant to view in the publicly avowed declaration, and among the *placita* or 'decretals' of the Redeemer. We there read, that "whosoever shall say to his brother, Fool, shall be in danger of hell-fire;"<sup>2</sup> yea, and that lower degrees of the same kind of sin, do expose to lower degrees of the same kind of punishment, as our Saviour's words must be understood, if we attend the plain meaning of his allusive and borrowed phrase of speech. "That the wages of sin is death. That as many as are of the works of the law, are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things written in the book of the law to do them."<sup>3</sup> And we are told that the Scripture (which is the word of Christ, and was written not for innocent, but lapsed man) "hath

<sup>1</sup> Vide Suarez. de Legibus.    <sup>2</sup> Matt. v. 22.    <sup>3</sup> Rom. vi. 23; Gal. iii. 10.

concluded all under sin.”<sup>1</sup> Where also we find what is the true intent and end of this rough and sharp dealing with men,—the shutting them up, like sentenced malefactors, as in order to execution, which seems to be the import of the word here used: namely, “that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe,”<sup>2</sup> or to them believing, as the words may be read. And moreover the Spirit, which breathes not in the law of works as such, but in the law of grace, performs that operation which belongs to it as it hath the name of “the spirit of bondage,” by applying and binding on the sentence of death, as due to the guilty person.

Therefore we must understand the Redeemer’s constitution to have two parts: 1. An assertion and establishment of the ancient determined penalty due for every transgression, and to be certainly inflicted on all such as accept not the following offer of mercy upon the terms prescribed. Whereby the honour and justice of the Creator is salved and vindicated, in reference to that first covenant made with man; and the case of the sinner is plainly stated before him, that he may have a distinct and right apprehension of it. 2. The grant of pardon and eternal life to those that repent unfeignedly of their sins, and turn to God; believing in the Mediator and resigning themselves to his grace and government, to be by him conducted and made acceptable to God in their return; and that continue sincere herein to the end. Whereby the wonderful mercy of God in Christ is demonstrated, and the remedy is provided and ascertained to the otherwise lost and hopeless sinner.

And these two parts therefore are to be looked on in this constitution, though distinctly, yet not separately. The sinner is at once to consider the same penalty as naturally and by divine sanction due to him, but now graciously to be remitted; the same blessedness as justly lost, but mercifully to be restored, with a high improvement; and to own

<sup>1</sup> Gal. iii. 22.

<sup>2</sup> συνέκλεισεν, *ibid.*

both these jointly, as the voice of the Redeemer in his gospel : ‘Death is due to thee ; blessedness forfeited by thy having sinned : but if thou sincerely repent, believe and obey for the future, thou art pardoned, and entitled to everlasting life.’

It therefore now appears that as the law or dictates of pure nature, comprehended together with other fit additional, became at first one entire constitution aptly suited to the government of man, in his innocent state, unto which the title did well agree of the law or covenant of works : so the same natural dictates, transcribed and made *express*,—because now sullied, and not so legible in the corrupted nature of man,—do, with such allays and additions as the case required, compose and make up the constitution which bears the title of the law or covenant of grace, or the law of faith, or the gospel of Christ, and is only suitable to the state of man lapsed and fallen ; as the measure of that righteousness which he is now to aim at, and aspire unto.

The *rule* of this righteousness therefore being evidently the law of faith—the gospel revelation—wherein it is preceptive of duty, this righteousness can be understood to be nothing but the impress of the gospel upon a man’s heart and life ; a conformity in spirit and practice to the revelation of the will of God in Jesus Christ ; a collection of graces exerting themselves in suitable actions and deportments towards God and man ; “Christ formed” in the soul, or “put on ;” the “new creature” in its being and operations ; the truth learned as it is in Jesus, “to the putting off the old man and the putting on the new.”

More distinctly we may yet see wherein it lies, upon a premised view of some few things necessary to be foreknown in order thereunto. As ;—

That this righteousness is a *renewing* righteousness, or the righteousness of one formerly a sinner, a lapsed perishing wretch, who is by it restored into such a state towards God, as he was in before that lapse, in respect of certain great *essentials*, though as yet his state be not so perfectly good while he is in his tendency and motion, and shall by certain

additional be unspeakably better, when he hath attained the end and rest he is tending to :

That a reasonable creature, yet untainted with sin, could not but have a temper of mind suitable to such apprehensions as these, namely, that as it was not the author of being to itself, so it ought not principally to study the pleasing and serving of itself, but Him who gave it being ; that it can no more continue and perfect itself unto blessedness, than it could create itself ; and can therefore have no expectation hereof, but from the same Author of its being ; and hence, that it must respect and eye the great God, its Creator and Maker : as the sovereign authority whom it was to fear and obey ; the sovereign good whom it was to love and enjoy :

But because it can perform no duty to Him without knowing what He will have it to do, nor have any particular expectation of favours from Him without knowing what He will please to bestow ; and is therefore obliged to attend to the revelations of His will concerning both these : it is therefore necessary, that he eye Him under a notion introductive and subservient to all the operations that are to be exerted towards Him, under the two former notions ; that is, as the eternal never-failing Truth, safely to be depended on, as intending nothing of deceit in any the revelations, whether of his *righteous will* concerning matter of duty to be done ; or of his *good-will* concerning matter of benefit to be expected and enjoyed :

That man did apostatise and revolt from God, as considered under these several notions ; and returns to him, when a holy rectitude is recovered and he again becomes righteous, considered under the same :

That it was not agreeable to God's wisdom, truth, and legal justice, to treat with man, a sinner, in order to his recovery, but through a Mediator ; and that therefore he was pleased in wonderful mercy to constitute and appoint his own Son Jesus Christ, God-man, unto that office and undertaking ; that through him, man might return and be reconciled to Himself, whom he causelessly forsook ; designing



that he shall now become so affected towards Himself, through the Mediator; and firstly therefore towards the Mediator's own person, as he was before, and ought to have been, towards Himself immediately:

Therefore, whereas God was considerable in relation to man, both in his innocency and apostasy, under that fore-mentioned twofold notion of the supreme authority and goodness, he hath also set up and exalted our Lord Jesus Christ, and represented him to sinners under an answerable two-fold notion of a Prince and Saviour: that is, a mediating Prince and Saviour to give repentance first: to bow and stoop the hearts of sinners and reduce them to a subject posture again, and then by remission of sins to restore them to favour and "save them from the wrath to come." Him hath the Father clothed with his own authority and filled with his grace; requiring sinners to submit themselves to his ruling power and commit themselves to his saving mercy, now both lodged in this his Son; to pay *him* immediately all homage and obedience, and through him ultimately to Himself; from *him* immediately to expect salvation and blessedness, and through him ultimately from Himself:

That whereas the spirits of men are not to be wrought to this temper but by the intervention of a discovery and revelation of the Divine will to this purpose, our Lord Jesus Christ is further appointed by the Father to reveal all this his counsel to sinners; and is eminently spoken of in Scripture upon this account, under the notion of *The Truth*; in which capacity he more effectually recommends to sinners both his authority and his grace: so that his three-fold so much celebrated office of King, Priest, Prophet, (the distinct parts of his general office as Mediator) which he manages in order to the reducement of lost sinners, exactly correspond, if you consider the more eminent acts and properties of each office, to that three-fold notion under which the spirit of man must always have eyed, and been acted towards, God, had he never fallen: and hence this righteousness, which consists in conformity to the gospel, is the former righteous-

ness, which was lost, with such an accession as is necessary, upon consideration that it *was* lost, and was only to be recovered by a Mediator.

Therefore you may now take this short, and as compendious an account as I can give of it, in what follows.

It includes so firm and understanding an assent to the truth of the whole Gospel revelation as that the soul is thereby brought, through the power of the Holy Ghost, sensibly to apprehend its former disobedience to God and distance from Him, the reasonableness of subjection to Him and desirableness of blessedness in Him; the necessity of a Redeemer to reconcile and recover it to God; the accomplishments and designation of the Lord Jesus Christ to that purpose: and hence, a penitent and complacential return to God as the supreme authority and sovereign good, an humble and joyful acceptance of our Lord Jesus Christ as its Prince and Saviour, with submission to His authority and reliance on His grace,—the exercise of both which are founded in His blood,—looking and pitching upon Him as the only medium through which he and his duties can please God, or God and His mercies approach him; and through which he hath the confidence to venture upon a covenant acceptance of God and surrender of himself to Him, afterward pursued to his uttermost, by a continued course of living in His fear and love, in obedience to Him, and communion with Him through the Mediator, always, while he is passing the time of his pilgrimage in this world, groaning under remaining sin and pressing after perfect holiness; with an earnest expectation—animating him to a persevering patience through all difficulties—of a blessed eternity in the other world.

That such a conformity to the Gospel should be expressed by the name of “righteousness,” cannot seem strange to such as acquaint themselves with the language of the Scripture. That gracious frame which the gospel, made effectual, impresses upon the soul, is the “kingdom of God,” in the passive notion of it; his kingdom received, and now actually come with power upon our spirits. And this kingdom (some-

times also by an apt synecdoche called 'judgment' in the same notion) is said to consist in "righteousness;" whence then result also, "peace and joy in the Holy Ghost."<sup>1</sup> The same holy impressions and consequent operations are mentioned by the Apostle under the name of "fruits of righteousness,"<sup>2</sup> wherewith he prays his Philippians might be filled. It was Elymas's opposition to the gospel, that stigmatized him with that brand, "Thou enemy of all righteousness." "To yield ourselves servants to righteousness," in opposition to a former servitude to sin, is "obeying from the heart the doctrine of the gospel,"<sup>3</sup> into the type or mould whereof we have been cast or delivered. And sure both the seal and the impression, God's revelation and holiness—however now more explicit and distinctly conspicuous in all their parts—are the same with us, *substantially*, and in David's time; whence we need make no difficulty to own this latter, when we meet with it, as here, under the same name.

By what hath hitherto been said, it may be already seen in part how exactly this righteousness corresponds to the blessedness for which it qualifies; whereof we shall have occasion hereafter to take further notice. In the mean time, it will be requisite to show, which was promised to be done in the next place—

II. *How* it qualifies. To which I say, very briefly, that it qualifies for this blessedness two ways:

1. Legally or *in genere morali*, as it describes the persons who by the gospel grant have alone title thereunto.—"The righteous into life eternal."—"The unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God." "Say to the righteous, it shall be well with them." "The righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him. In his righteousness he shall live."<sup>4</sup> In which last words, how this righteousness conduceth to life is expressed by the same preposition as in the text. In this kind it is not at all causal of this blessedness, but it is that which

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xiv. 17.

<sup>2</sup> Phil. i. 11.

<sup>3</sup> Rom. vi. 17.

<sup>4</sup> Matt. xxv. ; 1 Cor. vi. ; Isa. iii. ; Ezek. xviii.

the free, and wise, and holy Lawgiver thought meet, by his settled constitution (besides what necessity there is of it upon another account) to make requisite thereto. The conformity of our Lord Jesus Christ to that severer "law" under which he is said to have been "made," is that which alone causes, merits, purchases this blessedness; which yet is to be enjoyed, not by all *indiscriminatim* or without distinction, but by such alone as come up to the terms of the gospel; as he did fully satisfy the strict exactions of that other rigid law, by doing and suffering for their sakes.

2. Naturally or *in genere physico*. In this kind it may be said to be some way causal; that is, to be a *causa materialis dispositiva*, by a proper positive influence *disposing* the subject unto this blessedness, which that it *shall* yet enjoy, is wholly to be resolved into the Divine good pleasure; but it is put by this holy rectitude in that temper and posture that it *may* enjoy it, through the Lord's gracious vouchsafement; when without it, it were naturally impossible that any should. An unrighteous impure soul is in a natural indisposition to "see God," or "be blessed in him." That depraved temper averts it from him, the steady bent of its will is set another way, and it is a contradiction that any *in sensu composito*, 'in a strict sense,' should be happy against their wills, that is, while that aversion of will yet remains. The unrighteous banish themselves from God, they shun and hate his presence. Light and darkness cannot have communion. The sun doth but shine, continue to be itself, and the darkness vanishes, and is fled away. When God hath so determined, that only "the pure in heart shall see him;" that "without holiness none shall;" he lays no other law upon unholy souls, than what their own impure natures lay upon themselves. If therefore it should be inquired, why may not the unrighteous be subjects of this blessedness, "see God," and "be satisfied with his likeness," as well as the righteous? the question must be so answered as if it were inquired, Why doth the wood admit the fire to pass upon it, suffer its flames to insinuate themselves till they have introduced its proper

form, and turned it into their own likeness ; but we see water doth not so, but violently resists its first approaches and declines all commerce with it? The natures of these agree not. And is not the contrariety here as great? We have then the qualified subject of this blessedness, and are next to consider 'this blessedness itself.'

### CHAPTER III.

THE NATURE OF THIS BLESSEDNESS PROPOUNDED UNTO CONSIDERATION, IN THE THREE INGREDIENTS, HERE MENTIONED, WHEREOF IT CONSISTS : 1. VISION OF GOD'S FACE ; 2. ASSIMILATION TO HIM ; 3. THE SATISFACTION RESULTING THENCE.—THESE PROPOUNDED TO BE CONSIDERED, 1. ABSOLUTELY AND SINGLY EACH BY ITSELF ; 2. RELATIVELY, IN THEIR MUTUAL RESPECTS TO EACH OTHER—THE FIRST OF THESE, VISION OF GOD'S FACE, DISCOURSED OF ; 1. THE OBJECT ; 2. THE ACT.

Now for the nature of this blessedness, or the inquiry wherein it lies, so far as the text gives us any account of it, we are invited to turn our thoughts and discourse to it : and we have it here represented to us in all the particulars that can be supposed to have any nearer interest in the business of blessedness, or to be more intimate and intrinsical thereunto.

For, the beatific object supposed, what more can be necessary to actual, complete, formal blessedness, than the 'sight' of it, an adaptation or 'assimilation' to it (which is nothing else but its being actually communicated and imparted to the soul, its being united and made as it were one with it), and the complacential fruition the soul hath of it so communicated, or having so transformed it into itself?

And these three are manifestly contained in the text, the beatific object being involved with them ; the first in the former clause, "I shall behold thy face ;" the second and third in the latter, "I shall be satisfied with thy likeness ;" where, *being made* 'like to God' hath been discovered to be supposed ; and the satisfaction, the pleasant contentful relishes consequent thereto, plainly expressed.

We shall therefore have stated the entire nature of this

blessedness in the handling of these three things: *Vision of the face of God; participation of his likeness: satisfaction therein.*

And I shall choose to consider them—1. *Absolutely* and singly, each by itself. 2. *Relatively*, in the mutual respects (by way of influence and dependence) they may be found to have towards each other.

Therefore first, in the absolute consideration of them severally, we begin with

First, the vision of God's face, where—The *Object*, the Face of God; and the *Act* of seeing and beholding it, are distinctly to be spoken to.

I. "The Face of God"—the object of this vision,—which is his glory represented, offered to view. And this object or exhibited glory is two-fold.

1. Sensible, such as shall incur and gratify (after the resurrection) the bodily eye.

2. Intellectual, or intelligible: that spiritual glory that only comes under the view and contemplation of the glorified mind.

1. A *sensible* glory—to begin with what is lower—is fitly in our way to be taken notice of, and may well be comprehended, as its less principal intendment, within the significance of the expression; "the face of God." So, indeed, it doth evidently signify, *Exod. xxxiii. 11.* And if we look to the notation of the word and its frequent use as applied to God, it may commodiously enough, and will often be found to signify in a larger and more extended sense any aspect or appearance of God. And though it may be understood in the twenty-third verse of that chapter to signify an overcoming spiritual glory as the principal thing there intended, such as no soul dwelling in flesh could behold, without rending the vail, and breaking all to pieces; yet, even there also, may such a degree of sensible glory be secondarily intended, as it was not consistent with a state of mortality to be able to bear.

And supposing the other expression, "thy likeness," to

signify, in any part, the *objective glory* saints are to behold, it is very capable of being extended so far as to take in a sensible appearance of glory also, which it doth in these words, "The similitude of the Lord shall he behold:"<sup>1</sup> yet even that glory also was transformative and impressive of itself: Moses so long conversed with it till he became uncapable, for the present, of converse with men, as you know the story relates.

Such a glory as this, though it belong not to the *being* of God, yet it may be some umbrage of him, a more shadowy representation, as a man's garments are of the man, which is the allusion in that of the Psalmist, "Thou art clothed with majesty and honour: thou coverest thyself with light as with a garment."<sup>2</sup>

And inasmuch as that spiritual body, "the house not made with hands,"<sup>3</sup> wherewith the blessed are to be clothed upon, must then be understood to have its proper sensitive powers and organs<sup>4</sup> refined to that degree as may be agreeable to a state of glory; so must these have their suitable objects to converse with. A faculty without an object is not possible in nature, and is altogether inconsistent with a state of blessedness. The bodies of saints will be "raised in glory," "fashioned like Christ's glorious body;"<sup>5</sup> must bear the image of the heavenly; and this will connaturalise them to a region of glory, render a surrounding sensible glory necessary and natural to them, their own element: they will, as it were, not be able to live but amidst such a glory. Place is conservative of the body placed in it by its suitability there. Indeed, every created being (inasmuch as it is not self-sufficient, and is obliged to fetch in continual refreshings from without) must always have somewhat suitable to itself to converse with, or it presently languishes. By such a harmony of actives and passives, the world consists and holds

<sup>1</sup> Numb. xii. 8; Ezek. i. 28; Exod. xxxiv. 35, etc.

<sup>2</sup> Psal. civ. 1, 2.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Cor. v. 1.

<sup>4</sup> Cuilibet potentiae activae respondet passiva, sive objectiva.

<sup>5</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 43; Phil. iii. 21.



together. The least defect thereof, then, is least of all supposable in the state of blessedness.

The rays of such a glory have often shone down into this lower world. Such a glory we know showed itself upon the Mount Sinai: afterwards often about the Tabernacle, and in the Temple: such a glory appeared at our Saviour's birth, baptism, and transfiguration; and will do at his expected appearance; which leaves it no unimaginable thing to us, and shows how facile it is to God to do that which will then be, in some sort, necessary;—create a glory meet for the entertainment and gratification of any such faculty as he shall then continue in being. But,—

2. The *intellectual* glory, that which perfected spirits shall eternally please themselves to behold, calls for our more especial consideration. This is the “glory that excelleth,”<sup>1</sup> *hyperbolic* glory, as that expression imports; such, as in comparison whereof, the other is said to be “no glory:” as the Apostle speaks, comparing the glory of the legal with that of the evangelical dispensation; where the former was, we must remember, chiefly a sensible glory, the glory that shone upon Mount Sinai; the latter a purely spiritual glory; and surely, if the mere preludes of this glory, the ‘primordia,’ the beginnings of it, “the glory—yet shining but through a glass,” (as he there also speaks of this glory,) were so hyperbolically glorious, what will it be in its highest exaltation, in its perfected state? The Apostle cannot speak of that but with ‘hyperbole’ upon ‘hyperbole’ in the next chapter,<sup>2</sup> as though he would heap up words as high as heaven to reach it and give a just account of it.

Things are as their next originals. This glory more immediately rays forth from God, and more nearly represents him. It is his more genuine production. He is styled the “Father of glory:”<sup>3</sup> everything that is glorious is some way like him, and bears his image. But he is as well the “Father of spirits”<sup>4</sup> as the Father of glory; and that

<sup>1</sup> ὑπερβαλλούσης δόξης. 2 Cor. iii. 10.

<sup>2</sup> καθ’ ὑπερβολὴν εἰς ὑπερβολήν. 2 Cor. iv. 17.    <sup>3</sup> Eph. i.    <sup>4</sup> Heb. xii.

glory which is purely spiritual, hath most in it of his nature and image,—as beams but in the next descent from the body of the sun. This is his unveiled face, and emphatically, the Divine likeness.

Again: things are as the faculties which they are to exercise and satisfy; this glory must exercise and satisfy the noblest faculty, of the most noble and excellent creature. Intellectual nature, in the highest improvement it is capable of in a creature, must here be gratified to the uttermost; the most enlarged contemplative power of an immortal spirit finds that wherein it terminates here, with a most contentful acquiescence.

It is true it must be understood not totally to exceed the capacity of a creature, but it must fully come up to it. Should it quite transcend the sphere of created nature, and surpass the model of an human understanding (as the Divine glory undoubtedly would, did not God consider us in the manner of exhibiting it to our view), it would confound, not satisfy. A creature even in glory is still a creature, and must be treated as such. After the blessed God hath elevated it to the highest pitch, he must infinitely condescend; it cannot otherwise know or converse with him. He must accommodate this glory to the weaker eye, the fainter and more languid apprehensions of a poor finite thing: I had almost said nothing; for what is any creature, yea, the whole creation in its best state, compared with the I AM, the *Being* (as he justly appropriates to himself that name), the All in all? We must be careful then to settle in our own thoughts such a state of this glory, in forming that indeterminate notion we have now of it, as may render it—though confessedly above the measure of our present understandings as to a distinct knowledge of it—not manifestly incompetent to any created understanding whatsoever; and as may speak us duly shy of ascribing a deity to a worm, of affixing anything to the creature, which shall be found agreeing to the blessed God himself alone. *Their* expressions therefore, who over-magnify, even deify, the creature assumed into glory, must be

heard and read with caution and abhorrency, as the high swelling words of blasphemous vanity.<sup>1</sup> Is it not enough

<sup>1</sup> Not being willing to trouble a discourse wholly of another nature and design with anything of controversy, I have chosen only to annex a marginal digression, wherein somewhat to animadvert upon the over-bold disputes and definitions of the scholastic generation, touching what we have now under consideration: some of whose writings seem the very springs of the putid conceits (there not wanting those that are officious enough to serve the illiterate, in accommodating things of that kind to their genius and language) so greedily imbibed by modern enthusiasts.

It is a question much agitated among the schoolmen, Whether the Divine essence be exhibited to the view of the blessed in heaven, *in itself immediately, or by the intervention of any created likeness or similitude?*

Had it been agreed to forbear looking within this veil (the rude attempt whereof rather rends than draws it aside), and to shut up all discourse of this kind in a modest awful silence; or had the adventures some have made been *foolish* only, not *pernicious*, this present labour had been spared. But when men speak of things above their reach, not to *no* purpose barely, but to very *bad*, what they say ought to be considered. The Divine essence, say the Thomists (and the Scotists here disagree not), is itself immediately united to the intellect of the blessed *in ratione speciei intelligibilis*, so as there is no place for any intervening likeness or representation. *Ipsa Divina essentia est, quæ videtur et quo videtur.* Thom. Sum. primâ parte, q. 12. Art. 2, 3, contr. Gentes, c. 15. Now they assert concerning the 'species intelligibiles,' in general, that they have not 'locum objecti, intellectionem terminantes' (which they make the place and office of the 'verbum mentis per intellectionem productum'), but 'formæ tantum et actus primi,' and that the understanding so acts by them, as fire by its proper form (Thom. Sum. primâ parte, q. 85. Art. 2); the contrary whereto is asserted by Scotus in 1 Sentent. distinct. 3. q. 6. Yea, and Cajet affirms, 1 p. q. 76. Art. 2, that the intellect and the intelligible species are more one than the matter and form in the *compositum*. For, saith he (or to that purpose, not having him now at hand), the matter is not turned into the form, nor *è contrâ*; but the intellect, which is in itself *mere power*, doth, 'in genere intelligibili,' turn into its very intelligible object; and the intelligible object itself is after a certain manner imbibed in the intellect. So Ledesma, de Divin. Perfect. q. 3. Art. 5, 'unum transit in aliud, ex quo sequitur, quod unum sit aliud.' And hence, say they, applying this doctrine to the present purpose, 'et secundum istum modum, in conjunctione illâ ineffabili Divinæ essentiæ cum intellectu creato, fit unum agens integrum, scil. intellectus creatus factus Deus mirabili modo. Intellectus in visione beatificâ, est potentia jam deificata, per lumen gloriæ.' Cajet. primâ parte, q. 12. Art. 2. ex Ledes. q. 8. Art. 8. For besides this immediate union of the Divine essence itself with the intellect, they assert a 'lumen gloriæ,' an accident superadded, without which the vision cannot be performed; which

that perishing wretches, that were within one hand's breadth of hell, are saved, except they be also deified too? That

additional the Scotists reject. Some, though they admit it, think the vision may be without it, and that it doth not 'implicare contradictionem, visionem beatificam fieri sine lumine gloriæ, cum solo speciali Dei auxilio, quod item asserunt multi ex scholasticis,' Palud. in 4. dist. 49. q. 1. Art. 3. concl. 2. Thom. de Argent. q. 2. Art. 1. Major. q. 4. Henr. quolibet. 7. Zumel. 1. p. q. 12. Art. 5. disp. 2. concl. 3. Ita Onuphr. de virtute pœnitentiæ. Whether there be any 'verbum creatum,' the product of intellection, the Thomists are themselves divided. Their more common opinion is, that there is none, as Ledesma assures us; telling us also his reason, why he conceives there can be none. 'Beati non formant verbum in videndo Deo, sed plus vident quam verbo creato dicere possunt . . . nam beatus per visionem beatam quamvis non videat [infinite] videt tamen infinitum' . . . which is their great argument against any intelligible species; and he further adds, 'Sicut visio Dei, quæ est in ipso Deo, habet pro principio et specie intelligibili ipsam Divinam essentiam, et pro termino ipsam Divinam essentiam: sic visio beatorum est ita supernaturalis, et divini ordinis, et participatio Divinæ visionis ita perfecta, ut ipsa etiam habeat pro principio et specie intelligibili, Divinam essentiam, et pro termino sive verbo producto, ipsamet Divinam essentiam.' So that the principle and term of this vision are owned to be nothing else, but the simple Divine essence. Concerning the formal act itself, it is much disputed, whether the creatures' intellect do at all effectually concur to it, or whether God himself be not the only efficient or agent in this vision. Some stick not to affirm the latter, Marsil. in 3. q. 1. Palud. in 4 dist. 49 q. 1, Art. 2 (referente Ledesma), and say plainly, that the action of the inferior agent wholly ceases, and the superior only acts; the same thing that D. M. Casaubon in his 'Enthusiasm' charges one Maximus with, who in a book intituled κεφάλαια θεολογικά writes thus; τὴν ἄμεσον λαβὼν ἔνωσιν πρὸς τὸν θεὸν ὁ νοῦς τὴν τοῦ νοεῖν καὶ νοεῖσθαι παντελῶς δύναμιν ἔχει σχολάζουσιν. 'That the soul, taken into immediate union with God, loses all its knowing power,' though this be not distinctively spoken of the state of glory. And what doth this amount to: but that while they are eagerly contending about the saints' blessedness, and too curiously labouring to explicate the manner of their seeing God, they unawares destroy the subject of the question, and deny that they see him at all; and so upon the whole, dispute themselves into a worse than Paganish infidelity? And even the rest, that agree in the sense of the passages above-recited, will not be easily able to avoid the charge of as intolerable consequences; which it is my business here only to discover, and not to determine anything in this controversy, whiles I tax the too much boldness of others, who adventure it. And here not to insist on the absurdity of what they say concerning the intelligible species in general, let it be considered, 1. That the Divine essence is said to be united to the intellect of the blessed, as an *intelligible species*. 2. That the *intelligible*

they become happy, unless they also become gods? The distance even of a glorified creature from the glorious God,

*species* in the business of intellection, and the intellect, become one another; do not remain distinct things united, but are identified. 3. That hence in understanding God, the intellect is deified and becomes God, which naturally follows from the two former, and is moreover expressly asserted in plain words. What need is there to press this doctrine with hard consequences? or how can it look worse than it doth already with its own natural face? Nor can I apprehend which way it should be made look better. For should it lay claim to that favour, to be understood according to the usual sense of the Peripatetic maxim, 'Intellectus, intelligendo, sit omnia;' it will be found manifestly to have precluded itself. That maxim is wont to be understood thus: that the intellect becomes that which it understands *representativè* by putting on the *species* or *likeness* of its object, the representation of it. For instance, when I form in my mind the notion of a mountain, my understanding becomes an ideal or spiritual mountain: it becomes that species (which is liable to more exception too than I shall now insist on, and looks more like the language of a poet than a philosopher) that is now formed there; and not the material mountain itself. But how shall this assertion, 'The understanding, by its act of understanding God, becomes God,' be capable of that interpretation,—that is, it becomes his *likeness*, his *idea*, his representation now formed in it,—when any such intervening likeness or representation is utterly denied, and that supposed species is said to be the simple Divine essence itself? And if the Divine essence itself be that species by which it is understood, will it not follow from that other Aristotelian axiom (which with them must signify as much as a text from Saint Paul), 'scibile et scientia sunt idem:' that our very knowledge of God must be God too. Or, would they disown that maxim, sure, when once the *faculty* is supposed deified, the *act* immanent in it, cannot be a created accident; nor can that maxim (understood of the 'scibile representativum,' or the 'species scibilis') be denied by them: and sure, if the saints' *knowledge* of God, the likeness of him in their *minds*, be God, their *holiness*, the likeness of him in their *hearts*, must be so too. How absurd then would it be to use that Scripture language, and speak of these under the names of God's image or likeness, when *similitude* and *identity* are notions so vastly disagreeing; and since a saint's knowledge and holiness here and in heaven differ but in degree, they can be here on earth, nothing but God dwelling in them. And supposing that Scotus have better defended, than his adversaries impugned, the real identity of the soul and its faculties, *that* must be deified too. However, what could be imagined more absurd than that the substance of the soul should be a creature, and its faculty God? Whence then do we think that modern Familists have fetched their admired nonsense? Whom have they had their original instructors? or who have taught them that brave magnificent language of being 'Godded with God,' and 'Christed with Christ,' but these? Nor sure need they blush to be found

is still infinitely greater, than between it and the silliest worm, the minutest atom of dust.

guilty of so profoundly learned inconsistencies, or to speak absurdly after such patrons! And what should occasion these men so to involve themselves, I cannot find or divine, more than this, that they were not able to fasten upon any more tolerable sense of the word *καθῶς*, 1 Cor. xiii. 12; 1 John iii. 2, but taking that in its highest pitch of significancy: all their arguments are generally levelled at this mark, to prove that no created species can possibly represent God 'sicuti est,' and thence infer that he cannot be seen by any created species in the glorified state, where he is to be seen 'sicuti est.' But could we content ourselves with a modest interpretation of these words, and understand them to speak not of a *parity*, but of a *similitude* only, between God's knowledge and ours, nor of an absolute omnimodous similitude, but comparative only; that is, that comparing our *future* with our *present* state, the former shall so far excel this, that in comparison thereof it may be said to be a knowing of God, *as we are known*, and *as he is*; inasmuch as our future knowledge of him shall approach so unspeakably nearer to his most perfect knowledge of us, and the truth of the thing, than our present knowledge doth or can; by such an interpretation we are cast upon no such difficulties. For admit that no species can represent God *as he is*, in the highest sense of these words; yet sure, in the same sense wherein he can be *seen* by us *as he is*, he may be *represented* to us *as he is*. And what can be more frivolous than that fore-recited reasoning to the contrary? 'There can be no created representation of God *sicuti est* adequate to the vision the blessed have of him; but they see more than any created representation can contain; for they see *infinitum*, though not *infinité*.' For how must we understand the *infinitum* they are said to see? Materially or formally? Must we understand by it him that is infinite only, or as he is infinite? If it be said the latter, that is to say, they see *infinité* too. If the former only, do not saints on earth see (namely, mentally, which is the vision we are speaking of) Him who is infinite in their present state, where it is acknowledged the knowledge is by *species*.

Yet would I not hence conclude, that the knowledge saints shall have of God hereafter, shall be by *species*; for my design in all this is but to discover the vanity of too positive and definitive conceptions concerning it, beyond the measure of God's revelation, and the ducture of clear and unentangled reason. All knowledge hath been thought to be by assimilation, that is, by receiving the *species* or images of the things known: so the intellect is not really turned into the things which it understands, but only receives their *species*, wherewith it is united so closely, that it is therefore said to be *like* to them. *Virtuosi of France*, Confer. 65.

One way or other it hath been judged necessary the mind should be furnished with such images of the thing it is said to understand; which therefore some have thought *connate*; others supplied by sense totally; others by a separate *intellectus agens*; which some have thought to be God

And by how much more we shall then know of his glory, so much more shall we understand that distance. Yet as he shall then enlarge the capacity of the soul he glorifies, to a very vast comprehension, so shall the exhibition of his glory to it be fully adequate to its most enlarged capacity. They are as yet but obscure glimmerings we can have of this glory; but so far as, without too bold curiosity, we may, and wherein Scripture light will give us any pre-apprehension of it, let us consider a while,—the *nature* of it and the *excellency* of it.

We cannot indeed consider these separately; for we can no sooner understand it to be glory, than we conceive it excellent: ‘glory,’ in the proper notion of it, being nothing else but resplendent excellency, the lustre of excellency; or real worth made conspicuous. Yet as there is an excellency conceivable in the nature of it, that excellency whereof it is the splendour and brightness; so we must conceive a peculiar excellency of that very radiation, that splendour itself, wherewith it shines unto blessed souls. In its very nature it is the brightness of Divine excellencies; in its present appearance, it shines in the highest excellency of that brightness: in its nature it excelleth all things else; in its present exhibition, compared with all its former radiations, it excelleth itself.

As to the nature of this glory, it is nothing else but the conspicuous lustre of Divine perfections. We can only guide

himself: others, one common intelligence: others, a particular genius: so indispensably necessary it hath been reckoned unto intellection, that the office of furnishing the mind with the images of the things to be understood should be performed by one or other. If any clearer explication can be given, or better way assigned of the soul’s knowing things, it cannot but be welcome to rational men. But I see no necessity or reason it should have a specifically distinct way of knowing here and in heaven; much less that we should imagine to ourselves such a one as to that other state, as is altogether unaccountable and capable of no rational explication; and reckon it much more becoming to be silent, than on pretence of any mysteriousness in the things we discourse of, to talk absurdly and unintelligibly about them. A confessed ignorance in this case is *becoming*; to say with that great Apostle, “It doth not appear what we shall be:” but to conclude and define such matters, is surely *φρονεῖν παρ’ ὃ δεῖ φρονεῖν*.

our present conceptions of it by the discovery God hath already given us of himself, in those several excellencies of his being,—the great attributes that are convertible and one with him. When Moses besought him for a sight of his glory, he answers him with this, “I will proclaim my name before thee.” His name, we know, is the collection of his attributes.

The notion therefore we can hence form of this glory, is only such as we may have of a large volume by a brief synopsis or table; of a magnificent fabric by a small model or platform; a spacious country by a little landscape. He hath here given us a true representation of himself, not a full: such as will secure our apprehensions,—being guided thereby,—from error, not from ignorance; so as they swerve not in apprehending this glory, though they still fall short. We can now apply our minds to contemplate the several perfections which the blessed God assumes to himself, and whereby he describes to us his own being; and can in our thoughts attribute them all to him, though we have still but low defective conceptions of each one: as if we could at a distance distinguish the streets and houses of a great city, but every one appears to us much less than it is. We can apprehend somewhat of whatsoever he reveals to be in himself; yet when all is done, “how little a portion” do we take up of him! Our thoughts are empty and languid, strait and narrow, such as diminish and limit the Holy One. Yet so far as our apprehensions can correspond to the discovery he affords us of his several excellencies, we have a present view of the Divine glory. Do but strictly and distinctly survey the many perfections comprehended in his name, then gather them up, and consider how glorious he is! Conceive one glory resulting from substantial wisdom, goodness, power, truth, justice, holiness,—that is, beaming forth from him who is all these by his very essence, necessarily, originally, infinitely, eternally, with whatsoever else is truly a perfection. This is the glory blessed souls shall behold for ever.

For the excellency of it, it is called by way of discrimination,



“the excellent glory.”<sup>1</sup> There was glory put upon Christ in the transfiguration; of which when the Apostle speaks, having occasion to mention withal the glory of heaven itself, from whence the voice came, he adds to this latter, the distinguishing note of “the excellent:” he himself was eye-witness of the honour, and majesty, and glory, which the Lord Jesus then received; but beyond all this, the glory from whence the voice came, was the excellent<sup>2</sup> or stately glory, as the word imports.

It is a great intimation how excellent a glory this is, that it is said to be a glory “yet to be revealed;”<sup>3</sup> as if it had been said, ‘Whatever appearances of the Divine glories are now offered to your view, there is still somewhat undiscovered, somewhat behind the curtain that will outshine all. You have not seen so much, but you are still to expect unspeakably more.’

Glory is then to shine in its noonday strength and vigour: it is then in its meridian. Here the “riches of glory” are to be displayed, certain treasures of glory, the plenitude and magnificence of glory. We are here “to see him as he is;” “to know him as we are known of him.” Certainly, the display of himself, the rays of his discovered excellency, must hold proportion with that vision, and be therefore exceeding glorious. It is “the glory Christ had with the Father before the foundations of the world were laid;”<sup>4</sup> into the vision and communion whereof holy souls shall now be taken, according as their capacities can admit; that, wherewithal his great achievements and high merits shall be rewarded eternally; that, wherewith he is to be glorified in heaven, in compensation of having glorified his Father on earth and finished the work whereto he was appointed. This cannot but be a most transcendent glory. It is in sum, and in the language of the text, the glory of “God’s own face,” his most aspectable, conspicuous glory: whose transforming beams are productive of the glory impressed; the next

<sup>1</sup> 2 Pet. i. 17.<sup>2</sup> Μεγαλοπρεπής.<sup>3</sup> 1 Pet. iv. 13.<sup>4</sup> John xvii.

ingredient into this blessedness, which will presently come to be spoken of, after we have given you some short account of,—

2. The act of beholding: the vision or intuition itself, by which, intervening, the impression is made.

Glory seems to carry in it a peculiar respect to the visive power, whether corporal or mental, as it is itself of the one kind or the other; it is something to be contemplated, to be looked upon: and being to transmit an impression, and consequent pleasure to another subject, it must necessarily be so; it can neither transform nor satisfy but as it is beheld.

And here the *sensitive* intuition I shall not insist on, as being less intended in the text, and the discourse of it less suitable to such as with a spiritual mind and design set themselves to inquire into the nature of the saints' blessedness. Yet as this is the most noble, comprehensive, quick, and sprightly sense, so is the act of it more considerable in the matter of blessedness, than any other of the outward man, and the most perfect imitation of the act of the mind; whence also this so often borrows the name of the other, and is called *seeing*. It is an act indeed very proper and pertinent to a state of glory. By how much more any sensible object is glorious (supposing the *sensorium* to be duly disposed and fortified, as must be here supposed), so much is it the fitter object of sight; hence when we would express a glorious object we call it conspicuous; and the less glorious or more obscure anything is, the less visible it is, and the nearer it approaches to invisibility; whence that saying in the common philosophy, "To see blackness is to see nothing."<sup>1</sup>

Whatsoever a glorified eye, replenished with a heavenly vitality and vigour, can fetch in from the many glorified objects that encompass it, we must suppose to concur to this blessedness. Now is the "eye satisfied with seeing," which before never could.

But it is intellectual sight we are chiefly to consider here;

<sup>1</sup> Arist. in 3. Meteorolog. Cap. de Iride.

that whereby we “see him that is invisible,” and approach the “inaccessible light.” The word<sup>1</sup> here used, some critics tell us, more usually signifies the sight of the mind. And then not a casual, superficial glancing at a thing, but contemplation; a studious, designed viewing of a thing, when we solemnly compose and apply ourselves thereto; or the vision of prophets, or such as have things discovered to them by Divine revelation, thence called *Chozim*, seers; which imports, though not a previous design, yet no less intention of mind in the act itself.

And so it more fitly expresses that knowledge which we have, not by discourse and reasoning out of one thing from another, but by immediate intuition of what is nakedly and at once offered to our view, which is the more proper knowledge of the blessed in heaven. They shall have the glory of God so presented and their minds so enlarged, as to comprehend much at one view; in which respect they may be said, in a great degree, “to know as they are known,” inasmuch as the blessed God comprehends all things at once, in one simple act of knowing. Yet that is not to be understood as if the state of glory should exclude all ratiocination, more than our present state doth all intuition, (for first and indemonstrable principles we see by their own light, without illation or argument;) nor can it be inconvenient to admit, that while the knowledge the blessed have of God is not infinite, there may be use of their discursive faculty with great fruit and pleasure. Pure intuition of God, without any mixture of reasoning, is acknowledged by such as are apt enough to be over-ascribing to the creature, peculiar to God alone.<sup>2</sup> But as the blessed God shall continually afford (if we may speak of continuity in eternity which yet we cannot otherwise apprehend) a clear discovery of himself, so shall the principal exercise and felicity of the blessed soul

<sup>1</sup> הוה.

<sup>2</sup> Cognoscere Deum clarè et intuitivè est proprium et naturale soli Deo, sicut est proprium igni calefacere et soli illuminare.—Ledesm. *de Divin. Perfect.* q. 8, Art. 7.

consist in that less laborious and more pleasant way of knowing, a mere admitting or entertaining of those free beams of voluntary light by a grateful intuition; which way of knowing, the expression of sight or beholding doth most incline to, and that is, we are sure, the ordinary language of Scripture<sup>1</sup> about this matter.

<sup>1</sup> Matt. v. 8. Heb. xii. 14.

## CHAPTER IV.

THE SECOND INGREDIENT INTO THIS BLESSEDNESS CONSIDERED, ASSIMILATION TO GOD, OR HIS GLORY IMPRESSED—WHEREIN IT CONSISTS, DISCOVERED IN SUNDRY PROPOSITIONS—THE THIRD INGREDIENT, THE SATISFACTION AND PLEASURE WHICH RESULTS, STATED AND OPENED.

AND now upon this vision of the blessed face of God, next follows in the order of discourse, the soul's perfect *assimilation* unto that revealed glory or its participation thereof, (touching the order the things themselves have to one another, there will be consideration had in its proper place;) and this also must be considered as a distinct and necessary ingredient into the state of blessedness we are treating of.

Distinct it is, for though the vision now spoken of doth include a certain kind of assimilation in it, as all vision doth, being only a reception of the species or likeness of the object seen,—this assimilation we are to speak of, is of a very different kind. *That* is such as affects only the visive or cognitive power, and that not with a real change, but intentional only, not for longer continuance than the act of seeing lasts; but *this* is total, real, and permanent.

And surely it is of equal necessity to the soul's blessedness, to partake the glory of God, as to behold it; as well to have the Divine likeness impressed upon it, as represented to it. After so contagious and over-spreading a depravation as sin hath diffused through all its powers, it can never be happy without a change of its very *crasis* and temper throughout. A diseased ulcerous body would take little felicity in gay

and glorious sights: no more would all the glory of heaven signify to a sick, deformed, self-loathing soul.

It must therefore be "all glorious within," have the Divine nature more perfectly communicated, the likeness of God transfused and wrought into it. This is the blessed work begun in regeneration; but how far it is from being perfected, we may soon find by considering, how far short we are of being satisfied in our present state, even in the contemplation of the highest and most excellent objects. How tasteless to our souls are the thoughts of God! How little pleasure do we take in viewing over his glorious attributes, the most acknowledged and adorable excellencies of his being! And whereunto can we impute it but to this, that our spirits are not yet sufficiently connaturalised to them? Their likeness is not enough deeply enstamped on our souls. Nor will this be, "till we awake;" when we see better, we shall become better: "when he appears, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is."

But do we indeed pretend to such an expectation? Can we think what God is and what we are in our present state, and not confess these words to carry with them an amazing sound, "we shall be like him!" How great a hope is this! How strange an errand hath the gospel into the world! How admirable a design—to transform men and make them like God! Were the dust of the earth turned into stars in the firmament, were the most stupendous poetical transformations assured realities, what could equal the greatness and the wonder of this mighty change? Yea, and doth not the expectation of it seem as presumptuous as the issue itself would be strange? Is it not an over-bold desire? too daring a thought? a thing unlawful to be affected, as it seems impossible to be attained?

It must be acknowledged there is an appearance of high arrogance in aspiring to this, "to be like God." And the very wish or thought of being so, in *all* respects, were not to be entertained without horror: it is a matter therefore that requires some disquisition and explication, wherein that

impressed likeness of God consists which must concur to the saints' blessedness. In order hereunto then take the following propositions.

PROP. I. There is a sense wherein to be like God is altogether *impossible*, and the very desire of it the most horrid wickedness. The prophet in the name of God charges the proud Prince of Tyre with this, as an inexpiable arrogance, that he did "set his heart as the heart of God," and upon this score challenges and enters the lists with him: "Come, you that would fain be taken for a God, I will make a sorry God of thee ere I have done; "Because thou hast set thy heart as the heart of God," I will set those upon thee, that shall draw their swords against the "beauty of thy wisdom, and that shall defile thy brightness:" and what? "Wilt thou yet say in the hand of him that slayeth thee, I am a God? Thou shalt be a man, and no God, in the hand of him that slayeth thee; . . . I have spoken it, saith the Lord God." <sup>1</sup> He will endure no such imitation of him as to be rivalled in the point of his Godhead. This is the matter of his jealousy: "They have moved me to jealousy with not-God;" <sup>2</sup> so it is shortly and more smartly spoken in the original text. And see how he displays his threats and terrors hereupon in the following verses. This was the design and inducement of the first transgression, "to be as gods." And indeed all sin may be reduced hither: what else is sin, in the most comprehensive notion, but an undue imitation of God? An exalting of the creature's will into a supremacy, and opposing it as such to the Divine? To sin, is to take upon us as if we were supreme, and that there were "no Lord over us;" it is to assume to ourselves a deity, as if we were under no law or rule; as he is not under any but what he is to himself. Herein, to be like God, is the very core and malignity of sin.

II. There is a *just and laudable imitation* of God, a likeness to him, that is matter of command, praise, and promise, as

<sup>1</sup> Ezek. xxviii. 6—10.

<sup>2</sup> Deut. xxxii. 21.

wherein both the duty, excellency, and blessedness of the reasonable creature doth consist; and which is in some respect inseparable from the nature of man. We are required to "be followers of God, as dear children;"<sup>1</sup> *imitators* the word is. David is commended "as a man after God's own heart;" though but now we saw, in another, with what disdain and indignation it was resented, that he did "set his heart, as the heart of God." The "new creature," the "new man,"<sup>2</sup> the first-fruits (as he is called), the flower of the creation, is made after God. Saints expect, upon the assurance of his word, to be more fully like him, as we see in the text and parallel places. Yea, man was made at first with a concrete similitude to God, which we know was the counsel of Heaven and the result and issue of that counsel.<sup>3</sup> This is evident enough in itself, and needs no more words. But to make a further step in this business, observe next,—

III. There can be *no allowable imitation* of any one, but with an exception as to some peculiarities that may belong to his special station, relation, and other circumstances of the condition in which he is; or with limitation to such things as are of common concernment unto both. It is commonly observed, how naturally a people form their manners and fashions to the example of the prince;<sup>4</sup> and there is no well-disposed ruler but would take it well to be imitated in things that are of common concernment to him and his subjects, that is, that concern him, not as he is a king, but as he is a man or a Christian. To behold the transforming power of his own example, where it is such as begets a fair and unapproachable impress;<sup>5</sup> how his virtues circulate (his justice, temperance, love of religion), and produce their likeness among his people; it will be a glory, and cannot but be resented with some delight. We cast an honour upon them whom we imitate: for we acknowledge an excellency in them

<sup>1</sup> Eph. v. 1; *μιμηται*.

<sup>2</sup> Jam. i. 18; Eph. iv. 24.

<sup>3</sup> Gen. i. 26, 27.

<sup>4</sup> Regis ad exemplum totus componitur orbis.

<sup>5</sup> Nam facere rectè bonus princeps faciendo docet. Cumque sic imperio maximus, exemplo major est.—Velleius Paterculus, *Rom. Hist.* l. 2.



(which is all that honouring imports in the first notion of it), and that naturally is received with pleasure. But now, should subjects aspire to a likeness to their prince in the proper appendages and acts of sovereignty; and because he is a glorious king, they will be such too, and assume the peculiar cognizances of regality; ascend the throne, sway the sceptre, wear the crown, enact laws, etc.:—there cannot be more of dutifulness and observance in the former imitation, than there is of disloyalty and treason in this. A father is pleased to have his son imitate him, within such limits before-mentioned; but, if he will govern the family and fill up his room in all relations, this will never be endured.

IV. There are some things to be found in the blessed God, not so incommunicable and appropriate, but that his creatures may be said to have some participation thereof with him, and so far, to be truly like him. This participation cannot be *univocal*; as the nature of a living creature in general, is equal in men and brutes: so, it is a self-evident principle, that nothing can be common to God and an inferior being.<sup>1</sup> Nor is it only an *equivocal*,—a participation of the same name, when the natures signified thereby are altogether diverse: but *analogical*, inasmuch as the things spoken, under the same names, of God and the creature, have a real likeness and conveniency in nature with one another: and they are in God, primarily; in the creature, by dependence and derivation: in him, essentially, as being his very essence; in them, but as accidents (many of them) adventitious to their beings; and so, while they cannot be said to be the same things in them as in him, are fitly said to be his likeness.

V. This likeness, as it is principally found in man among all the terrestrial creatures, so hath it in man for its seat and subject, his soul or spiritual part. The effects of Divine wisdom, power, goodness, are everywhere visible throughout the whole creation; and as there is no effect but hath something in it corresponding to its cause (wherein it was its

<sup>1</sup> Inter Deum et creaturam nihil est commune.

cause), so every creature doth some way or other represent God: some in virtues, some in life, some in being only.<sup>1</sup> The material world represents him, as a house the builder; but spiritual beings, as a child the father.<sup>2</sup> Other creatures (as one<sup>3</sup> fitly expresses it) carry his footsteps; these, his image; and that, not as drawn with a pencil, which can only express figure and colour; but as represented in a glass, which imitates action and motion. To give the pre-eminence, therefore,<sup>4</sup> in this point to the body of man, was a conceit so gross, that one would wonder how it should obtain, at least in the Christian world.

Yet we find it expressly charged by Saint Augustine<sup>5</sup> upon the Anthropomorphites of old—or Melitonians, as he calls them, from one Melito the father of them—not only, that they imagined God in a human shape, which was their known

<sup>1</sup> Multis enim modis dici res possunt similes Deo: alie secundum virtutem et sapientiam, factæ; quia in ipso est virtus et sapientia non facta; alie in quantum solùm vivunt, quia ille summè et primò vivit; alie in quantum sunt, quia ille summè et primitus est.—Aug. 80 quest. p. (mihi) 211.

<sup>2</sup> τοῦ γὰρ γένος ἐσμὲν.

<sup>3</sup> P. Molinens de Cognitione Dei.

<sup>4</sup> Heathens have disdained and declaimed against so unworthy thoughts of God. τὸ δὲ θεῖον αὐτὸ ἀόρατον ὀφθαλμοῖς, ἀρρήτων φωνῆ, ἀναφὲς σαρκί, etc. —Maximus Tyr. *Dissert.* I.

The same author warns us to take heed, that we ascribe to God, μήτε μέγεθος, μήτε χρώμα, μήτε σχῆμα, μήτε ἄλλο τι ὕλης πάθος.—*Ibid.*

Unto which purpose is that decantate distich of Homer, Οὐ γὰρ σῖτον, etc. And that saying of Pliny, 'Quapropter effigiem Dei formamque quærere, imbecillitatis humanæ reor,' applied by Zanch. *de operibus Dei.* And we may see much of like import alleged by Natal. *Com.*, lib. i., p. 13; which, by the way, discovers how flatly opposite the idolatry, forbidden in the second commandment, is to the light of nature itself, which hath been also the just apology of the ancient patrons of the Christian cause, for the simplicity of their worship in this respect, and their not imitating the pompous vanity of pagan image-worship. Οὐδὲ θείας εἰκόνας ὑπολαμβάνομεν εἶναι τὰ ἀγάλματα, ἅτε μορφήν ἀοράτου θεοῦ καὶ ἀσωμάτου μὴ διαγράφοντες, etc. Origen *contr. Celsum*, lib. vii. To which purpose see at large Min. Felix, 'Quod simulacrum Deo fingam?' etc. And surely it is as improvable against the same piece of Christian paganism. The usually assigned differences would easily be shown to be trifling impertinences.

<sup>5</sup> Corpus hominis, non animum, esse imaginem Dei. Aug. (if it be Augustine's) *Lib. de Hæresibus.* See Dr. Charleton, of his Image of God in Man.

conceit, but that they stated God's image in man in his body, not his soul. Nor are Van Helmont's fancies about corporal likeness capable of excuse by anything, but that they were a 'dream,' as they are fitly styled, and not likely to impose upon the waking reason of any man.

VI. This image or likeness of God in the spirit of man, representing what is communicable in him, is either natural or moral. There is first, a *natural* image of God in the soul of man, which is inseparable from it, and which it can never divest itself of.<sup>1</sup> Its very spiritual immortal nature itself, is a representation of his. Its intellective and elective powers are the image of what we are constrained to conceive under the notion of the same powers in him: yea, the same understanding, with the memory and will in one soul, are thought a lively resemblance of the Triune Deity.<sup>2</sup> But there is further a similitude of him in respect of *moral*<sup>3</sup> virtues or perfections, answering to what we conceive in him under that notion: his wisdom, so far as it hath the nature of a moral virtue, his mercy, truth, righteousness, holiness, etc. These two kinds or parts, as they may be called, of the Divine impress upon the spirits of men, are distinguished by some (I see not how properly) by the distinct names of *image* denoting the former, and *similitude* the latter: answering, as is thought, to two Hebrew words of the like import:<sup>4</sup> but the things themselves are evidently enough distinct, namely, what perfects the nature of man *in genere physico*, as he is such a particular being in the universe: and what perfects him, *in genere morali*, as he is considerable in reference to a law or rule guiding him to blessedness, as his end.

VII. It is a likeness to God, in respect of those *moral* excellencies or perfections, that is especially considerable by

<sup>1</sup> Est Dei similitudo quædam, quam nemo vivens, nisi cum vitâ exuit; quam habet homo et volens, et nolens, etc.—Bernard. *de Vitâ Solitar.*

<sup>2</sup> D. Aug. (fusè) lib. 10 *De Trinitat.*

<sup>3</sup> Sed est alia, magis Deo propinqua, similitudo, quæ in virtutibus consistit.—Bernard.

<sup>4</sup> צלם רמיה Zanch.

us, in reference to our present purpose ; as more immediately relating to the soul's blessedness in God. By the former it hath a potentiality, by the latter a habitude in reference thereunto : or, to use terms, more liable to common apprehension, by the former it hath a remoter capacity, by the latter a present fitness ; or, as the Apostle expresses it, is "*made meet* to be partaker of the inheritance of the saints in light," that is, considering this likeness, as begun in the soul.

VIII. Besides what is thus, in the sense before expressed, communicable between God and man, there are some things so peculiarly appropriate to God, as that, in respect of them, there can be no formal likeness in the creature : and it would be impious boldness to aspire thereto. Many things of this kind might be mentioned ; I shall only instance in two, wherein there is a manifest competition of the apostate world with him, and which are therefore more relative to practice ; his sovereign authority, and his independency. In these, while men affect to imitate, they wickedly affront him. And here is the great controversy between the glorious God, and the degenerate children of men. Every man would catch at a godhead, and either assume it to himself, or cast it many times upon other creatures viler and more ignoble than himself : snatch the reins of government out of God's hand ; and exalt their own wills into an absoluteness, as liable to control from none ; place and settle their dependence on their own wit, power, fortitude, industry ; or, if that be a more hopeless course (for they often find an entire Godhead too much for one creature, and are therefore constrained to parcel it out among many), place their confidences and expectations in something else without them ; do often that ridiculous thing—so worthy to be hooted at—make the congested dirt of the earth their trust ("the righteous shall laugh at him, and say, Lo ! this is the man that trusted in riches"<sup>1</sup>), their wealth, their strong tower ; which only the "name of the Lord" is, to his "righteous" ones. Yet, all the while, *self*

<sup>1</sup> Psal. lii. 6, 7.

is the centre and end in which all must meet and terminate. This at last carries away the assumed fictitious deity. And this thing, that is thus now made like God, is an idol—which indeed signifies so much—and this imitation of him, wicked idolatry; than which nothing more debases a reasonable soul, or divests man of himself: that till they redress this, they give no proof of their being men.<sup>1</sup>

*This* assimilation of ourselves to God is very remote then from being a perfection; it is a most reproachful deformity: as we know imitations, if they be visibly affected, and strained too far, are always thought ridiculous by wise men.

IX. Though, in respect of these incommunicable things, there cannot be a proper, formal, immediate similitude to God; yet there ought to be a correspondency, which must be measured and estimated by the consideration of his state and ours; whence it will appear, that what so properly appertains to him, and what ought to correspond thereto in us, do agree to each, upon one and the same intervening reason.

For instance, Is he absolutely supreme, inasmuch as he is the first being? the correspondent impression with us, and upon the same reason, must be a most profound, humble self-subjection, disposing our souls to constant obedience to him. Again, Is he simply independent as being self-sufficient and all in all? the impression with us must be a nothingness and self-emptiness, engaging us to quit ourselves and live in him.

This is the only conformity to God which, with respect to his incommunicable excellencies, our creature-state can admit. It may be also styled a *likeness* to him, being a real conformity to his will concerning us, and his very nature as it respects us. We may conceive of it as of the likeness between a seal and the stamp made by it; especially, supposing the inequality of parts in the seal to be by the protuberancy of what must form the signature. In that case there would be a likeness, *aliquatenus*, that is, an exact correspondency; but what would then be convex or bulging out in the seal would

<sup>1</sup> Isa. xlv. 8.

be, as we know, concave or hollow in the impression. Such is the proportion between sovereignty and subjection, between self-fulness and self-emptiness. Whereas a similitude to God, in respect of his *communicable* perfections, is as that between the face and its picture, where no such difference is wont to appear.

X. Assimilation or conformity to God, in both these respects, composes that excellent frame of moral perfections which the Divine glory, *beheld*, impresses upon the soul; and which immediately conduces to its satisfaction and blessedness. I say, *moral* perfection, because that only is capable of being impressed by the intervening ministry of our own understanding, namely, by its vision, intimated, as was formerly observed in that of the Apostle, "We shall be like . . . for we shall see him," etc. Its *natural* perfections are antecedent and presupposed, therefore not so fitly to be understood here. And I say, *both* these ways; for, as we cannot form an entire idea of God without taking in, together, his perfections of both sorts, communicable and incommunicable,—the former whereof must serve instead of a *genus*, the latter of a *differentia*, in composing the notion of God,<sup>1</sup>—so nor will his impress on us be entire, without something in it respecting both, in the senses already given.

What it will contribute to future blessedness, we shall shortly see in its place, when we have made a brief inquiry—which is the next thing according to our order proposed—concerning

Thirdly, the *satisfaction* that shall hence accrue; where it will not be beside our purpose, to take some notice of the significancy of the word. And not to insist on its affinity to the word used for 'swearing,' or rather being 'sworn'<sup>2</sup>—which, an oath being the end of controversies, and beyond which we go no further nor expect more in way of testifying, would the more fitly here represent to us the

<sup>1</sup> Thes. Salmu. *de Deo immenso*.

<sup>2</sup> שׁוּרַר, which some think to be the Niphal of the same word, notwithstanding the different punctuation of the ו.

soul in its *non-ultra*, having attained the end of all its motions and contentions,—its equal nearness to the word signifying the number of “seven,” is not altogether unworthy observation. That number is, we know, often used in Scripture, as denoting plenitude and perfection; and God hath, as it were, signalised it, by his rest on the seventh day:<sup>1</sup> and if this were not designedly pointed at here in the present use of this word, (as it must be acknowledged to be frequently used, where we have no reason to think it is with such an intendment,) it may yet occasion us to look upon the holy soul now entered into the eternal sabbath, ‘the rest of God:’<sup>2</sup> which, secluding all respect to that circumstance, is yet the very substance and true notion of the thing itself, to the consideration whereof I now pass, under the word held forth to us.

For this satisfaction is the soul’s rest in God; its perfect enjoyment of the most perfect good: the expletion of the whole capacity of its will; the total filling up of that vast enlarged appetite; the perfecting of all its desires in delight and joy. Now delight or joy (for they differ not, save that the latter word is thought something more appropriate to reasonable nature) is fitly defined,—the rest of the desiring faculty in the thing desired.<sup>3</sup> Desire and delight are but two acts of love, diversified only by the distance or presence of the same object; which, when it is distant, the soul, acted and prompted by love, desires, moves towards it, pursues it; when present and attained, delights in it, enjoys it, stays upon it, satisfies itself in it, according to the measure of goodness it finds there. Desire is, therefore, love in *motion*; delight

<sup>1</sup> How fit a symbol it is of God’s sabbatic rest, see Dr. More’s Defence of his Philosophical Cabbala, from Philo-Judæus.

<sup>2</sup> Erit ibi verè maximum sabbatum, non habens vesperam, quod commendavit Dominus in primis operibus mundi; ut legitur, et requievit die septimo . . . Dies enim septimus etiam nos ipsi erimus, quando ipsi fuerimus benedictionum et sanctificationum pleni atque referti . . . ibi vacabimus et videbimus, videbimus et amabimus, amabimus et laudabimus, etc.—Aug. *de Civit. Dei*, l. 22, c. 30. Vid. eund. *de Civit. Dei*, l. 17, c. 4.

<sup>3</sup> Quies appetitûs in appetibili.—Aquin. *Sum.*

is love in *rest*: and of this latter—delight or joy—Scripture evidently gives us this notion; “He will rejoice over thee with joy,”<sup>1</sup> (unto which is presently added as exegetical,) “he will rest in his love:” which ‘resting’ can be but the same thing with ‘being satisfied.’

This satisfaction then is nothing else but the repose and rest of the soul amidst infinite delights: its peaceful acquiescence, having attained the ultimate term of all its motions, beyond which it cares to go no further: the solace it finds in an adequate full good; which it accounts enough for it, and beyond which it desires no more; reckons its state as good as it can be, and is void of all hovering thoughts—which perfect rest must needs exclude—or inclination to change.

And so doth this “being satisfied” not only generally signify the soul to be at rest, but it specifies that rest; and gives us a distinct account of the nature of it: as, that it is not a forced violent rest; such as proceeds from a beguiled ignorance, a drowsy sloth, a languishing weakness, or a desire and hope of happiness, by often frustrations, baffled into despair,—to all which, the native import and propriety of that word ‘satisfaction’ doth strongly repugn. But it discovers it to be a *natural* rest; I mean, from an *internal* principle. The soul is not held in its present state of enjoyment by a strong and violent hand: but rests in it by a connaturalness thereunto: is attempered to it by its own inward constitution and frame. It rests not as a descending stone, intercepted by something by the way that holds and stops it, else it would fall further; but as a thing would rest in its own centre; with such a rest as the earth is supposed to have in its proper place; that, “being hung upon nothing,” is yet unmoved,—*ponderibus librata suis*,—equally balanced by its own weight every way.

It is a *rational* judicious rest; upon certain knowledge, that its present state is simply *best*, and not capable of being changed for a *better*. The soul cannot be held under a perpetual cheat, so as always to be satisfied with a shadow:

<sup>1</sup> Zeph. iii. 17.



it may be so befooled for a while, but if it remain satisfied in a state that never admits of change, that state must be such as commends itself to the most thoroughly informed reason and judgment.

It is hence a free, *voluntary*, chosen rest: such as God professes his own to be in Zion; "This is my rest: here will I dwell; for I have desired it."<sup>1</sup>

It is a *complacential* rest, wherein the soul abides steady, "bound only by the cords of love;" a rest in the midst of pleasantness; "The Lord is my portion: the lots are fallen to me"<sup>2</sup>—*in amœnitatibus*;—it cannot be more fitly expressed than "amidst pleasantnesses:" and this speaks, not only what the Psalmist's condition was, but the sense and account he had of it. That temper of mind gives us some idea of that contentful, satisfied abode with God, which the blessed shall have. He intimates, how undesirous he was of any change. "Their sorrows," he told us above, "should be multiplied that hasten after another God."<sup>3</sup> Hereafter there will be infinitely less appearance of reason for any such thought. Now, it is the sense of a holy soul, "Whom have I in heaven but thee? and there is none I desire on earth besides thee;" as much as to say, heaven and earth yield not a tempting object, to divert me from thee: it is *now* so, at some times, when faith and love are in their triumph and exaltation—but the Lord knows how seldom!—but much more, "when we see him as he is," and are "satisfied with his likeness!"

It is an *active*, vigorous rest. Action *about* the end shall be perpetuated here, though action *towards* it ceases. It is the rest of an awakened, not of a drowsy, sluggish soul; of a soul satisfied, by heavenly sensations and fruitions: not incapable of them, or that hath its powers bound up by a stupifying sleep.

It is the rest of hope perfected in fruition, not lost in despair; of satisfied, not defeated expectation. Despair may

<sup>1</sup> Psal. cxxxii. 14.<sup>2</sup> Psal. xvi. 6, בְּיַעֲרֵם.<sup>3</sup> Verse 4.

occasion rest to a man's body, but not to his mind; or a cessation from further endeavours, when they are constantly found vain, but not from trouble and disquiet: it may suspend from action, but never satisfy.<sup>1</sup>

This satisfaction therefore speaks both the reality and nature of the soul's rest in glory: that it rests, and with what kind of rest.

<sup>1</sup> I think it not worth the while to engage in the dispute, so much agitated between the *Thomists* and *Scotists*, whether blessedness do formally consist in this satisfying fruition, or in the antecedent vision: this satisfaction is certainly inseparable from it, and I see not how to be excluded out of its formal notion. It is not *vision*, as *vision*, but as *satisfying*, that makes us happy; and to talk of the satisfaction or pleasure which the understanding hath in *knowing*, is insipid; while the *soul understanding*, that is, the *mind*, *knows* it is the soul enjoying, that is, the *will* is pleased and finds content: and till the soul be fully *contented*, it is not blessed; and it is, by being so; when it saith, 'Now am I fully satisfied; I have enough, I desire no more.'

## CHAPTER V.

THE RELATIVE CONSIDERATION OF THESE THREE INGREDIENTS OF THE SAINT'S BLESSEDNESS: WHERE IT IS PROPOUNDED, TO SHOW PARTICULARLY: 1. WHAT RELATION VISION HATH TO ASSIMILATION; 2. WHAT BOTH THESE HAVE TO SATISFACTION—THE RELATION BETWEEN THE TWO FORMER INQUIRED INTO. AN ENTRANCE UPON THE MUCH LARGER DISCOURSE, WHAT RELATION AND INFLUENCE THE TWO FORMER HAVE TOWARDS THE THIRD: WHAT VISION OF GOD'S FACE OR GLORY CONTRIBUTES TOWARDS SATISFACTION, ESTIMATED FROM THE CONSIDERATION, 1. OF THE OBJECT, THE GLORY TO BE BEHELD; AS IT IS DIVINE, ENTIRE, PERMANENT, APPROPRIATE.

THUS far have we viewed the parts or necessary concurrents, of which the blessedness of the saints must be composed, absolutely and severally each from other. We proceed,—

Secondly, To consider them *relatively*, namely, in the mutual respects they bear one to another, as they actually compose this blessed state: wherein we shall show particularly:—

1. The relation by way of influence and dependence between *vision* and *assimilation*.

2. Between both these and the *satisfaction* that ensues: which latter I intend more to dwell upon, and only to touch the former, as a more speculative and less improvable subject of discourse, in my way to this.

First, It may be considered, what relation there may be between vision of God and assimilation, or “being made like to him;” and it must be acknowledged—according to what is commonly observed of the mutual action of the under-

standing and will—that the “sight of God” and “likeness to him” do *mutually* contribute each towards other. The sight of God assimilates, makes the soul like unto him: that likeness more disposes it for a continued renewed vision. It could never have attained the beatifical vision of God, had it not been prepared thereto by a gradual previous likeness to him.<sup>1</sup> For righteousness, which we have shown qualifies for this blessedness, consists in a likeness to God; and it could never have been so prepared, had not some knowledge of God introduced that conformity and yielding bent of heart towards him. For the entire frame of the “new man made after the image of God, is renewed in knowledge.”<sup>2</sup>

But as, notwithstanding the circular action of the understanding and will upon one another, there must be a beginning of this course somewhere, and the understanding is usually reckoned the *ἡγεμονικόν*, the first mover, the leading faculty: so, notwithstanding the mutual influence of these two upon each other, “seeing” hath a natural precedency, and must lead the way unto “being like;” which is sufficiently intimated in the text, “I shall behold thy face,” and then “I shall be satisfied with thy likeness;” and more fully in that parallel Scripture: “We shall be like him, for we shall see him,” etc.

From whence also and from the very nature of the thing, we may fitly state the relation of the first of these to the second, to be that of a cause to its effect: sight begets likeness, is antecedent to it and productive of it.

That is, the face or glory of God *seen*; that glory in conjunction with our vision of it. For the vision operates not but according to the efficaciousness of the thing seen; nor

<sup>1</sup> Which necessity of a likeness to God to dispose for the vision of him, is excellently expressed by a Platonic philosopher.

The Divine nature, the *τὸ θεῖον*, which, he saith, is liable to no sense, (*μόνῃ δε τῇ τῆς ψυχῆς καλλίστῃ καὶ καθαρωτάτῃ, καὶ νοερωτάτῃ, καὶ κουφοτάτῃ, καὶ πρεσβυτάτῃ, ὁρατὸν δι’ ὁμοίωτητα*, etc.) is yet visible to that in the soul, which is most beautiful, most pure, most perspicacious, most sublime, most noble, in respect of a certain similitude and cognation that is between them.

—Max. Tyr.

<sup>2</sup> Col. iii. 10.

can that glory have any such operation, but by the intervention of vision.

It is therefore the glory of God seen,—as seen,—that assimilates and impresses its likeness upon the beholding soul: and so its causality is that of an objective cause (which whether it belong to the efficient or final, I shall not here dispute) that operates only as it is apprehended: so introducing its own form and similitude into the subject it works upon. Such a kind of cause were Jacob's streaked rods of the production that ensued; and such a cause is anything whatever that begets an impression upon an apprehensive subject, by the mediation and ministry whether of the fancy or understanding. This kind of causality the Word hath in its renewing, transforming work; and the sacraments, wherein they are causal of real physical mutations on the subjects of them. So much of the image of God as is here impressed upon souls by gospel dispensations, so much is impressed of his glory. The work of grace is glory begun.

And now, as glory initial and progressive in this life enters at the eye—"beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, we are changed"<sup>1</sup>—so doth perfect and consummate glory in the other life. For we have no reason to imagine to ourselves any alteration in the natural order the powers of the soul have towards each other, by its passing into a state of glory.

The object seen is unspeakably efficacious; the act of intuition is full of lively vigour; the subject was prepared and in a disposition before; and what should hinder, but this glorious effect should immediately ensue? As the sun no sooner puts up his head above the hemisphere, but all the vast space, whither it can diffuse its beams, is presently transformed into its likeness, and turned into a region of light.

What more can be wanting to cause all the darkness of atheism, carnality, and everything of sin, for ever to vanish

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iii. 18.

out of the awaking soul, and an entire frame of holiness to succeed, but one such transforming sight of the face of God? One sight of his glorious majesty presently subdues, and works it to a full subjection; one sight of his purity makes it pure; one sight of his loveliness turns it into love: and such a sight always remaining, the impress remains always actually,—besides that it is in itself most habitual and permanent in the soul's now confirmed state,—fresh and lively.

The object hath quite another aspect upon a wicked soul, when it awakes; and the act of seeing is of another kind: therefore no such effect follows. Besides, the subject is otherwise disposed; and therefore as the sun enlightens not the inward parts of an impervious dunghill, but it enlightens air; so the sight of God transforms and assimilates at last, not a wicked, but it doth a godly soul. That which here makes the greatest difference in the temper of the subject is love. I look upon the face of a stranger, and it moves me not; but upon a friend, and his face presently transforms mine into a lively, cheerful aspect. “As iron sharpens iron, so doth the face of a man his friend;”<sup>1</sup> puts a sharpness and a quickness into his looks. The soul that loves God opens itself to him, admits his influences and impressions, is easily moulded and wrought to his will, yields to the transforming power of his appearing glory. There is no resistant principle remaining, when the love of God is perfected in it; and so overcoming is the first sight of his glory upon the awaking soul, that it perfects *it*, and so his likeness, both at once.

But enmity fortifies the soul against him as with bars and doors; averts it from him; carries with it a horrid guilty consciousness, which fills it with eternal despair and rage, and enwraps it “in the blackness of darkness for ever.”

2. Both the vision of God and likeness to him must be considered in their relation to the consequent satisfaction, and the influence they have in order thereto. I say both; for though this satisfaction be not expressly and directly

<sup>1</sup> Prov. xxvii. 17.

referred, by the letter of the text, to the sight of God's face, yet its relation thereto in the nature of the thing is sufficiently apprehensible and obvious: both *mediate*, in respect of the influence it hath towards the 'satisfying assimilation; and *immediate*; which we are now to consider—as it is so highly pleasurable in itself; and is plainly enough intimated in the text, being applied in the same breath to a thing so immediately and intimately conjunct with this vision as we find it is. Moreover, supposing that "likeness" here do (as it hath been granted it may) signify objective glory also as well as subjective, and repeat what is contained in the former expression, "the face of God," the reference 'satisfaction' hath to this vision—which the re-mention of its object, though under a varied form of expression, supposes—will be more express: therefore we shall show,—

What the vision of the Divine glory contributes to the satisfaction of the blessed soul, and what felicity it must needs take herein: which cannot but be very great, whether we respect the glory seen, the object of this vision; or, the act of vision or intuition itself.

I. The *Object*, the glory beheld: What a spring of pleasure is here! What rivers of pleasures flow hence! "In thy presence," saith the Psalmist, "is fulness of joy; at thy right hand are pleasures for evermore."<sup>1</sup> The awaking soul, having now passed the path of life—drawn through *sheol* itself, the state of deadlyhed—appears immediately in this presence; and, what makes this presence so joyous but the pleasant brightness of this face? To be in the presence of any one, and before his face (*in conspectu*), are equivalent expressions: therefore the Apostle quoting this passage, renders it thus, "Thou hast filled me with gladness by thy countenance:"<sup>2</sup> now in this glorious presence, or within view of the face of God, is "fulness of joy," that is, joy unto satisfaction. And the apostle Jude, speaking of this presence

<sup>1</sup> Psal. xvi. 11.

<sup>2</sup> Acts ii. 28, which indeed is the Seventy's reading of the Psalmist's words.

under this name, a presence of glory, tells us of an "exceeding joy,"<sup>1</sup> a jubilation (an ἀγαλλίασις) that shall attend the presentment of saints there. The holy soul now enters the divine Shechinah,<sup>2</sup> the chamber of presence of the great King, "the habitation of his holiness and glory, the place where his honour dwelleth." Here his glory surrounds it with encircling beams; it is beset with glory, therefore surely also filled with joy. When the veil is drawn aside, or we are within the veil, in that very "presence whither Jesus the forerunner is for us entered"—through that path of life, O the satisfying, overcoming pleasure of this sight! Now that is to us revealed or unveiled glory, which was hidden before. Here the "glory set in majesty"<sup>3</sup> (as the expression is, concerning the glory of the Temple) is presented to view openly and without umbrage. God is now no longer seen through an obscuring medium. They are not now shadowed glimmerings, transient, oblique glances, but the direct beams of full-eyed glory that shine upon us. The discovery of this glory is the ultimate product of that infinite wisdom and love, that have been working from eternity, and for so many thousand years through all the successions of time, towards the heirs of salvation; the last and complete issue of the great achievements, sharp conflicts, glorious victories, high merits of our mighty Redeemer. All these end in the opening of heaven,—the laying of this glory as it were common,—to all believers. This is the upshot and close of that great design. Will it not, think ye, be a satisfying glory? The full blessedness of the redeemed is the Redeemer's reward. He cannot be "satisfied in seeing his seed," if they should be unsatisfied. He cannot behold them with content, if his heart tell him not that he hath done well enough for them. God<sup>4</sup> would even be "ashamed to be called their God," had he not made provision for their entertainment worthy of a God. It is the season of Christ's triumphs, and saints are to enter into *His* joy. It is the appointed jubilee at the finishing of all

<sup>1</sup> Κατενώπιον τῆς δόξης.    <sup>2</sup> Jude 24.    <sup>3</sup> Ezek. vii. 20.    <sup>4</sup> Heb. xi. 16.



God's works from the creation of the world, when he shall purposely show himself in his most adorable majesty, and when Christ shall appear in his own likeness—he appeared in another likeness before—surely glory must be in its exaltation in that day. But take a more distinct account, how grateful a sight this glory will be, in these following particulars :—

1. It is the Divine glory. Let your hearts dwell a little upon this consideration. It is the glory of God, that is, the glory which the blessed God both enjoys and affords, which he contemplates in himself and which rays from him to his saints ; it is the felicity of the Divine Being. It satisfies a deity ; will it not a worm ? It is a glory that results and shines from him, and in that sense also Divine, which here I mainly intend ; the beauty of his own face, the lustre of Divine perfections ; every attribute bears a part, all concur to make up this glory.

And here premitting those which are less liable to our apprehension ; his eternity, immensity, simplicity, etc. (of which, not having their like in us we are the more uncapable to form distinct conceptions, and consequently of perceiving the pleasure, that we may hereafter upon the removal of other impediments find in the contemplation of them), let us bethink ourselves, how admirable and ravishing the glory will be,—

i. Of his unsearchable *wisdom*, which hath glory peculiarly annexed and properly belonging to it. Glory is as it were, by inheritance, due to wisdom. “The wise shall inherit glory.”<sup>1</sup> And here now the blessed souls behold it in its first seat, and therefore in its prime glory : wisdom, counsel, understanding, are said to be with him, as if nowhere else. Twice we have the Apostle ascribing glory to God, under the notion of “only wise ;”<sup>2</sup> which is but an acknowledging him glorious in this respect. Wisdom, we know, is the proper and most connatural glory of intellectual nature :

<sup>1</sup> Prov. iii. 35 ; Job xii.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. xvi. 27 ; 1 Tim. i. 17.

whether as it relates to speculation, when we call it knowledge ; or action, when it is prudence.

How pleasant will the contemplation be of the Divine wisdom, in that former notion ! When in that glass, that *speculum eternitatis*, we shall have the lively view of all that truth, the knowledge whereof can be any way possible and grateful to our natures ; and “in his light, see light !” When all those vast treasures of wisdom and knowledge (which already by their alliance to Christ,<sup>1</sup> saints are interested in), shall lie open to us ! When the tree of knowledge shall be without enclosure, and the most voluptuous epicurism, in reference to it, be innocent ! Where there shall neither be “lust” nor “forbidden fruit ;” no withholding of desirable knowledge, nor affectation of undesirable ! When the pleasure of speculation shall be without the toil ; and that maxim be eternally antiquated, that “increase of knowledge is increase of sorrow.”

As to the other notion of it ; how can it be less grateful to behold the wisdom that made and governed the world ? that compassed so great designs ? and this, no longer in its effects, but in itself ? Those “works were honourable and glorious, sought out of all them that have pleasure in them :” what will be the glory of their cause ? It would gratify some men’s curiosity to behold the unusual motion of some rare automaton ; but an ingenious person would, with much more pleasure, pry into the secret springs of that motion, and observe its inward frame and parts, and their dependence and order to each other. It is comely to behold the exterior economy of a well-governed people, when great affairs are, by orderly conduct, brought to happy issues ; but to have been at the helm ; to have seen the pertinent, proper application of such and such maxims to the incident cases ; to have known all the reasons of state ; heard debates ; observed with what great sagacity inconveniencies have been foreseen and with what diligence prevented : would much more gratify an inquiring genius.

<sup>1</sup> Col. ii. 3.

When the records of eternity shall be exposed to view, all the counsels and results of that profound wisdom looked into, how will it transport! When it shall be discerned, lo! thus were the designs laid; here were the apt junctures and admirable dependencies of things; which, when acted upon the stage of the world, seemed so perplexed and cross, so full of mysterious intricacy!

If Saint Paul were so ravished at those more obscure appearances of Divine wisdom, which we find him admiring, Rom. xi. 33, "O the depths!" etc., what satisfaction will it yield, to have a perfect model of the deep thoughts and counsels of God, presented to open view! How is the happiness of Solomon's servants magnified, that had the privilege continually to "stand before him, and hear his wisdom!" But this happiness will be proportionably greater, as Solomon's God is greater than he.

ii. The glory of his *power* will add comeliness to the object of this vision. Power duly placed and allayed is lovely. Beauty consists much in a symmetry or proportion of parts. So must there be a concurrence of Divine perfections, to compose and make up the beautiful complexion of his face; to give us a right aspect, the true idea of God. And here his power hath a necessary ingrediency. How incoherent and disagreeing with itself, were the notion of an impotent God! His power gives lively strokes to his glory. It is called "glorious power,"<sup>1</sup> or the power of glory: yea, it is simply called glory itself: the Apostle tells us "Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father,"<sup>2</sup> when it is plain he means *power*; and the same Apostle prays on the behalf of the Ephesians,<sup>3</sup> that God would grant them according to the "riches of his glory to be strengthened with might," etc. How frequently are power and glory ascribed to him in conjunction, intimating that as he is powerful he is glorious. And certainly even this glory cannot but cast a grateful aspect upon the blessed soul, and be infinitely

<sup>1</sup> Κράτος τῆς δόξης. Col. i. 11.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. vi. 4.

<sup>3</sup> Eph. iii. 16.

pleasant to behold. What triumphs doth it now raise in gracious spirits, to behold the exertions of it in his works; to read its descriptions in his word; while as yet he "holds back the face of his throne;"<sup>1</sup> while the countenance of enthroned majesty cannot be seen; when "so little a portion is heard of him, and the thunder of his power"<sup>2</sup> so little understood! The infinitely fainter rays of this power in a creature,—power in that unspeakable diminution and abatement,—that derived precarious power when it is innocently used, is observed with pleasure. Here is power in the throne, power in its chief and highest seat; essential and self-originated power; the root and fountain, the very element of power; power in its proper situation, in its native place, to which it belongs. "God hath spoken once; twice have I heard this; that power belongeth unto God."<sup>3</sup> It languishes in a creature as in an alien subject. "If I speak of strength, lo, he is strong,"<sup>4</sup> saith Job, as much as to say, 'Created power is not worth the speaking of; here is the power that deserves the name, that is so indeed.' How satisfying a pleasure will this afford, to contemplate this radical power, this all-creating, all-ruling power! the principle of all action, motion, and life, throughout the whole creation! This will be as natural a pleasure as the child takes in the mother's bosom, and in embracing the womb that bare it. How grateful to behold whence the vast frame of nature sprang! what stretched out the heavens, established the earth, sustained all things! what turned the mighty wheels of providence throughout all the successions of time! what ordered and changed times and seasons; chained up devils, restrained the outrages of a tumultuous world, preserved God's little flock! especially, what gave being to the new creation ("the exceeding greatness of power that wrought in them that believed,"<sup>5</sup> etc.); what made hearts love God, embrace a Saviour; what it was that overcame their own,<sup>6</sup> and made them "a willing people" in that memorable day!

<sup>1</sup> Job xxvi. 9.      <sup>2</sup> Ver. 14.      <sup>3</sup> Ps. lxii. 11.      Power to God, Hebr.

<sup>4</sup> Job ix. 19; xxvi.

<sup>5</sup> Eph. i. 19, 20.

<sup>6</sup> Ps. cx. 3.

How delightful a contemplation to think, with so enlarged an understanding, of the *possible* effects of this power; and so far as a creature can range into infinity, to view innumerable creations, in the creative power of God!

And yet how pleasant to think, not only of the extent, but of the restraints of this power; and how, when none could limit, it became ordinate and did limit itself; that, since it could do so much, it did no more; turned not sooner a degenerate world into flames;<sup>1</sup> withheld itself from premature revenge that had abortived the womb of love, and cut off all the hopes of this blessed eternity that is now attained! This also speaks the greatness of power. "Let the power of my Lord be great, according as thou hast spoken; the Lord is gracious, longsuffering,"<sup>2</sup> etc. This was his mightiest power, whereby he overcame himself: *fortior est qui se*, etc.

iii. And what do we think of the ravishing aspects of his *love*, when it shall now be open-faced, and have laid aside its veil; when his amiable smiles shall be checkered with no intermingled frowns; the light of that pleasing countenance be obscured by no intervening cloud! when goodness, which is love issuing into benefaction, or doing good—grace, which adds freeness unto goodness—mercy, which is grace towards the miserable—shall conspire in their distinct and variegated appearances to set off each other, and enhance the pleasure of the admiring soul! when the wonted doubts shall all cease, and the difficulty vanish, of reconciling once necessary fatherly severity with love! when the *full sense* shall be unfolded to the life of that description of the Divine nature, "God is love:" and the soul be no longer put to read the love of God in his *name*, as Moses was when the sight of his face could not yet be obtained; shall not need to spell it by letters and syllables; but behold it in his very nature itself, and see how intimately essential it is to the Divine Being,—how glorious will this appearance of God be!

<sup>1</sup> Posse et nolle nobile.

<sup>2</sup> Numb. xiv. 17, 18.

We now hear something of the "glory of his grace,"<sup>1</sup> and how satisfying the fruition of that glory! Now is the proper season for the full exercise and discovery of love. This day hath been long expected, and lo, now it is dawned upon the awakening soul. It is now called forth; its senses unbound; all its powers inspirited, on purpose, for love-visions and enjoyments; it is now to "take its fill of loves." The Apostle's ecstasical prayer is now answered to the highest degree possible with respect to such an one. He is now, "according to the riches of divine glory, strengthened with might, by the Spirit, in the inner man . . . to comprehend with all saints, what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; to know that love that passeth knowledge,"<sup>2</sup> etc. He shall now no longer stand amazed, spending his guesses, "what manner of love this should be;" and expecting fuller discoveries, further effects of it, "that did not yet appear," but sees the utmost, all that his soul can bear or wish to see. He hath now traced home the rivulets to their fountain, the beams to the very sun of love. He hath got the prospect, at last, into that heart, where the great thoughts of love were lodged from everlasting; where all its counsels and designs were formed. He sees what made God become a man; what clothed a Deity with human flesh; what made eternity become the birth of time (when come to its parturient 'fulness'<sup>3</sup>); what moved the heart of the Son of God to pitch his tabernacle among men; what engaged him to the enterprise of redeeming sinners; what moved him so earnestly to contest with a perishing world, led him at last to the cross, made him content to become a sacrifice to God, a spectacle to angels and men, in a bitter reproachful death, inflicted by the sacrilegious hands of those whom he was all this while designing to save. The amazed soul now sees into the bottom of this design; understands why itself was not made a prey to Divine revenge: whence it was, that it perished not in its enmity against God; that he was not pro-

<sup>1</sup> Eph. i. 6.

<sup>2</sup> Eph. iii. 16—19.

<sup>3</sup> Gal. iv. 4.

voked by the obstinacy of its disobedience and malice of its unbelief, beyond the possibility of an atonement; why he so long suffered its injurious neglects of him, and unkind repulses of a merciful Saviour, and persuaded, till at last he overcame, made the averse heart yield, the careless disaffected soul cry out, Where is my God? Now a Christ, or I perish? All this is now resolved into *love*; and the adoring soul sees how well the effects agree to their cause, and are owned by it. Nothing but heaven itself that gives the sense, can give the notion of this pleasure.

iv. Nor will the glory of *holiness* be less resplendent; that great attribute which even in a remote descent from its original, is frequently mentioned with the adjunct of "beauties."<sup>1</sup> What loveliness will those beauties add to this blessed face!

Not here to insist (which is besides my purpose) upon the various notions of holiness,—“real holiness”<sup>2</sup> Scripture states in purity, an alienation from sin; it is set in opposition to all filthiness, to all moral impurity, and in that notion it best agrees to God; and comprehends his righteousness, and veracity, and indeed, whatever we can conceive in him under the notion of a moral excellency.

This may therefore be styled a transcendental attribute, that, as it were, runs through the rest, and casts a glory upon every one. It is an attribute of attributes: those are fit predications, *holy* power, *holy* truth, *holy* love, etc. And so it is the very lustre and glory of his other perfections; he “is glorious in holiness.”<sup>3</sup> Hence, in matters of greatest moment, he is sometimes brought in “swearing by his holiness,”<sup>4</sup> which he is not wont to do by any one single attribute; as though it were a fuller expression of himself, an *adæquior conceptus*, than any of the rest.

What is of so great an account with him, will not be of least account with his holy ones, when they appear in his glorious presence. Their own holiness is a conformity to

<sup>1</sup> Ps. cx. 3, etc.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. vii. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Exod. xv. 11.

<sup>4</sup> Ps. lxxxix. 35; Amos iv. 2.

his; the likeness of it. And as their beholding it forms them into that likeness, so that likeness makes them capable of beholding it with pleasure. Divine holiness doth now more ravish than affright. This hath been the language of sinful dust, "Who can stand before this holy God?"<sup>1</sup> when holiness hath appeared armed with terrors, guarded with flames, and the Divine Majesty been represented as a consuming fire. Such apprehensions sin and guilt naturally beget: "The sinners of Zion were afraid." But so far as "the new man is put on, created after God;" and they, who "were darkness, are made light in the Lord," he is not under any notion more acceptable to them than as he is the Holy One. They love his law, because holy; and love each other, because holy; and hate themselves, because they are no more so. Holiness hath still a pleasing aspect when they find it in an ordinance, meet it in a sabbath; every glimpse of it is lovely. But with what triumphs hath the holiness of God himself been celebrated even by saints on earth! "Who is a God like unto thee, glorious in holiness!" "There is none holy as the Lord, for there is none besides thee." "Sing unto the Lord, all ye saints of his, and give thanks at the remembrance of his holiness."<sup>2</sup> What thoughts will they have of it, when their eyes can behold that glory; when they immediately look on the archetypal holiness, of which their own is but the image; and can view that glorious pattern they were so long in framing to?<sup>3</sup> How joyfully will they then fall in with the rest of the heavenly host; and join in the same adoration and praise, in the same acclamation, and triumphant song, "Holy, holy, holy, Lord God of Sabaoth!" How unconceivable is the pleasure of this sight; when the *αὐτὸ καλὸν*, the first pulchritude, the original beauty, offers

<sup>1</sup> 1 Sam. vi. 20.      <sup>2</sup> Exod. xv. 11; 1 Sam. ii. 2; Ps. xxx. 4; xcvi. 12.

<sup>3</sup> Si ergo pulchritudo divina nondum visa, sed solum credita et sperata, tantum ignem desiderii excitat: quid faciet cum, remoto velo, ut est in se conspicitur? Omnino id faciet ut torrente voluptatis illius inebriati, neque velimus, neque possimus, vel ad punctum temporis, oculos ab ea divertere. —Bellarm. *de Ascens. Mentis ad Deum*, grad. 2.



itself to view! Holiness is intellectual beauty; Divine holiness is the most perfect, and the measure of all other. And what is the pleasure and satisfaction, of which we speak, but the perfection and rest of love? Now love, as love, respects and connotes a pulchritude in its object.<sup>1</sup> And then the most perfect pulchritude, “the ineffable and immortal pulchritude, that cannot be declared by words, or seen with eyes,”—they are a heathen’s expressions concerning it,<sup>2</sup>—how can it but perfectly and eternally please and satisfy?

And we are told by the great Pagan theologue,<sup>3</sup> in what state we can have the felicity of that spectacle: ‘not in our present state, when we have, indeed, but obscure representations of such things as are with souls of highest excellency: but when we are associated to the blessed choir:<sup>4</sup> when we are delivered from the body, which we now carry about, as the oyster doth its shell;<sup>5</sup> when we are no longer sensible of the evils of time: when we wholly apply ourselves to that blessed vision; are admitted to the beholding of the simple permanent sights; and behold them, being ourselves pure, in the pure light: then have we the view of the bright shining pulchritude, etc.’<sup>6</sup>

2. It is an entire or united glory. We have something of the Divine glory shining now upon us, but the many interpositions cause a various refraction of its light. We have but its dispersed rays, its scattered, dishevelled beams: we shall then have it perfect and full. It is the eternal glory we are hereafter to behold.

Eternity (as the notion of it is wont to be stated) is a duration that excludes both *succession* and *end*.

And if it be an unsuccessive duration, (though it is more difficult to apprehend how the being or enjoyments of a creature can come under that mensuration, or how there can

<sup>1</sup> Max. Tyr. dissert. II.

<sup>2</sup> Id. *ibid*.

<sup>3</sup> Plato in *Phædro*, *passim*: though he there speak these things as the memoirs of his supposed pre-existent soul.

<sup>4</sup> εὐδαίμονι χορῶ.

<sup>5</sup> ὀστρέου τρόπον.

<sup>6</sup> ἐν αὐτῇ καθαρᾷ, καθαροὶ ὄντες, κάλλος λαμπρόν.

be any such,) the glory presented to the view of a blessed soul cannot be presented by parcels, but at once. In our temporary state, while we are under the measure of time, we are not capable of the fulness of blessedness or misery; for time exists not all together, but by parts.<sup>1</sup> And indeed we can neither enjoy nor suffer more, at once, than can be compassed within one moment; for no more exists together. But our relation to eternity, according to this notion of it, will render the same invariable appearance of glory, always presentaneous to us, in the entire fulness of it. We read indeed<sup>2</sup> of certain *ὑστερήματα πίστεως*, afterings of faith (as it may be significantly enough rendered, let but the novelty of the expression be pardoned), ‘things lacking;’ we read it; but there will be here no *ὑστερήματα δόξης*, afterings of glory. What is perfect admits no increase; it is already full: and why should not a full glory satisfy? There is here no expectation of greater future, to abate the pleasure of present discoveries: why therefore shall not this satisfaction be conceived full and perfect? It must be the “fulness of joy.”

3. It is permanent glory; a never-fading, unwithering glory, (*ἄφθαρτος, ἀμάραντος*), glory<sup>3</sup> that will never be sullied or obscured, never be in a declination. This blessed face never grows old; never any wrinkle hath place in it. It is the eternal glory, (in the other part of the notion of eternity,) as it imports an endless duration, neither subject to decay in itself, nor to injury or impairment from without: as stable as the Divine Being; “Thy God thy glory; the Lord thy everlasting light.”<sup>4</sup> If that have a true sense with respect to any state of the church militant on earth, it must needs have a more full sense, in reference to it triumphing in heaven. As, therefore, full entire glory affords “fulness of joy;” permanent, everlasting glory affords “pleasures for evermore.”<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Æternitas est interminabilis vitæ tota simul et perfecta possessio.*—Boeth.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Thess. iii. 10.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Pet. i. 3; 2 Cor. iv. 17; 2 Tim. ii. 10; 1 Pet. v. 10.

<sup>4</sup> Isa. lx. 19.

<sup>5</sup> Ps. xvi. 11.

4. An appropriate glory even to them it is so; a glory wherein they are really interested. It is the glory of *their* God, and their happiness is designed to them from it.

They are not unconcerned in it, as it is the glory of God. It cannot but be grateful to them, to behold the shining glory of their God, whom they feared and served before, while they could have no such sight of him. That glory of his was once under a cloud, concealed from the world, wrapt up in obscurity. It now breaks the cloud, and justifies the fear and reverence of his faithful and loyal servants, against atheistical rebels that feared him not. It is infinitely pleasing to see Him now so glorious, whom they thought to have a glory beyond all their conceptions before; while others would not think so of him, but judged it safe to slight and set him at nought. Subjects share in their prince's glory, children in their father's. But besides that collateral interest, that interest by reflection,—

They have a more direct interest in this glory; a true and real right, upon a manifold title: the Father's gift, Son's purchase, Holy Ghost's obsignation and earnest; the Promiser's tender; their faith's acceptance; their Forerunner's prepossession. Yea, it is their "inheritance;"<sup>1</sup> they are "children, and therefore heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ" to the same glory with him. They are by him received to the glory of God, "called to his kingdom and glory." Will it not contribute exceedingly to their satisfaction, when they shall look upon this glory, not as unconcerned spectators, but as interested persons? "This is my happiness, to behold and enjoy this blessed God?" What a rapturous expression is that, "God our own God shall bless us;"<sup>2</sup> and that, "Thy God thy glory"! Upon interest in God follows their interest in his glory and blessedness: which is so much the dearer and more valuable, as it is theirs: their glory, from their God. They shall be blessed by God, their own God; "drink waters out of their own well." How endearing a thing is

<sup>1</sup> Rom. viii. 17; xv. 7; 1 Thess. ii. 12.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. lxxvii. 6.

propriety! Another man's son is ingenious, comely, personable; this may be a matter of envy; but mine own is so, this is a joy. I read in the life of a devout nobleman of France,<sup>1</sup> that receiving a letter from a friend, in which were inserted these words, *Deus meus et omnia*; 'My God, and my all;' he thus returns back to him, "I know not what your intent was, to put into your letter these words, *Deus meus et omnia*; 'My God and my all:' only you invite me thereby to return the same to you, and to all creatures; 'My God, and my all; my God, and my all; my God, and my all.' If perhaps you take this for your motto, and use it to express how full your heart is of it; think you it possible I should be silent upon such an invitation, and not express my sense thereof? Likewise, be it known unto you therefore, that he is 'my God, and my all;' and if you doubt of it, I shall speak it a hundred times over. I shall add no more, for anything else is superfluous, to him that is truly penetrated with 'my God and my all:' I leave you therefore in this happy state of jubilation; and conjure you, to beg for me, of God, the solid sense of these words."

And do we think, 'my God, and my all;' or 'my God, and my glory,' will have lost its emphasis in heaven? or that it will be less significant among awaked souls? These things concur then concerning the object: it is most excellent, even divine, entire, permanent, and theirs: how can it but satisfy?

<sup>1</sup> Monsieur de Renti.

## CHAPTER VI.

WHAT THE VISION OF GOD'S FACE CONTRIBUTES TO THE SOUL'S SATISFACTION, ESTIMATED FROM THE CONSIDERATION OF THE ACT OF VISION ITSELF. WHEREIN THIS PLEASURE SURPASSES THAT OF SENSE. A COMPARISON PURSUED MORE AT LARGE BETWEEN THIS INTUITION AND DISCOURSE; BETWEEN IT AND FAITH. THIS INTUITION MORE ABSOLUTELY CONSIDERED: ITS CHARACTERS, AND WHAT THEY CONTRIBUTE TO THE SATISFACTION OF THE BLESSED SOUL: THAT IT IS, NAMELY, EFFICACIOUS, COMPREHENSIVE, FIXED, APPROPRIATIVE.

II. THE *act of vision*, or *intuition* itself. How great the pleasure will be that accrues to the blessed from this sight of God's face, is very much also to be estimated from the *nature of the act*,<sup>1</sup> as well as *the excellency of the object*. Inasmuch as every vital act is pleasant, the most perfect act of the noblest faculty of the soul must needs be attended with highest pleasure. It is a pleasure that most nearly imitates Divine pleasure. And everything is more perfect, as it more nearly approaches Divine perfections.

Intellectual pleasure is as much nobler than that of sense, as an immortal spirit is more noble than a clod of earth.

<sup>1</sup> Res sunt perfectiores vel imperfectiores prout à summa perfectione magis vel minimè abscedunt.—Pet. Molin. *de Cognitione Dei*. See Culverwel of the Light of Nature, speaking (as I remember) to this purpose, c. 17.—Quocirca et cum universè voluptatem beatæ vitæ esse finem dicimus; longè profectò absumus, ut eas voluptates, quæ sunt virorum luxu diffluentium, aut aliorum etiam, quatenus spectantur in ipsa motione, actioneve fruendi; quâ nimirum sensus jucundè dulciterque afficitur, intelligamus; veluti quidam rem ignorantibus, aut à nobis dissentientibus, aut alioquin adversum nos malè affecti, interpretantur; sed illud duntaxat (ut res iterum dicatur) intelligimus: non dolere corpore; animo non perturbari.—Gassend. *Syntag. Philos. Epicur.* See his Epistle to Menæceus in D. Laert.

The pleasure of sense is drossy, feculent; the pleasure of the mind refined and pure; that is faint and languid, this lively and vigorous; that scant and limited, this ample and enlarged; that temporary and fading, this durable and permanent; that flashy, superficial, this solid and intense; that raving and distracted, this calm and composed: whence even that great (reputed) sensualist, Epicurus himself, professedly disclaims, or is represented as disclaiming, the conceit of placing happiness in sensual delights.

And as the pleasure of intellection excels all the pleasure of sense, so doth the pleasure of intuition excel all other intellectual pleasure. Let us to this purpose but consider, generally, this way of knowing things, and compare it with those two other ways, by *discourse* and *faith*.

1. *Discourse*. I mean (that I be not mistaken by the vulgar reader) the discourse of the mind, or ratiocination; that way of attaining the knowledge of things, by comparing one thing with another, considering their mutual relations, connexions, dependencies; and so arguing out what was more doubtful and obscure, from what was more known and evident.

To the altogether unlearned it will hardly be conceivable, and to the learned it need not be told, how high a gratification this employment of his reason naturally yields to the mind of a man: when the harmonious contexture of truths with truths, the apt coincidence, the secret links and junctures of coherent notions, are clearly discerned; when *effects* are traced up to their *causes*; <sup>1</sup> *properties* lodged in their native *subjects*; things sifted to their principles. What a pleasure is it, when a man shall apprehend himself regularly led on, though but by a slender thread of discourse, through the labyrinths of nature; when still new discoveries are successfully made, every further inquiry ending in a further prospect, and every new scene of things entertaining the mind with a fresh delight! How many have suffered a

<sup>1</sup> Felix qui potuit verum cognoscere causas.

voluntary banishment from the world, as if they were wholly strangers and unrelated to it; rejected the blandishments of sense, macerated themselves with unwearied studies, for this pleasure: making the ease and health of their bodies, to give place to the content and satisfaction of their minds!

But how much intuition hath the advantage above this way of knowledge, may be seen in these two obvious respects.

i. It is a more facile way of knowing.<sup>1</sup> Here is no need of a busy search, a tiresome indagation,—the difficulty whereof makes the more slothful rather trust than try—a chaining together of consequences. The soul hath its clothing, its vestment of light, upon as cheap terms as the lilies theirs; doth “neither toil nor spin” for it: and yet Solomon, “in all the glory” of his famed wisdom, was not arrayed like it. This knowledge saves the expense of study; is instantaneous, not successive. The soul now sees more, at one view, in a moment, than before in a lifetime: as a man hath a speedier and more grateful prospect of a pleasant country, by placing himself in some commodious station that commands the whole region, than by travelling through it. It is no pains to look upon what offers itself to my eye. Where there is a continued series of consequences, that lie naturally connected, the soul pleasingly observes this continuity; but views the whole frame, the whole length of the line at once (so far as its limited capacity can extend), and needs not discuss every particle severally in this series of truths, and proceed *gradatim* from the knowledge of one truth to another;—in which case only one at once would be present to its view. It sees things that are connected, not *because* they are so: as a man, conveniently placed in some eminent station, may possibly see, at one view, all the successive parts of a gliding stream:<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Nonnulli tædio investigandæ veritatis, cuilibet opinioni potiùs ignavi succumbunt; quàm in explorandâ veritate, pertinaci diligentia perseverare volunt.—Min. Felix, Oct. 9.

<sup>2</sup> Atque ut homini sedenti ad ripam fluminis, sola aqua presens est quæ ei hoc temporis punctulo observatur; eidem verò homini, totum flumen presens esset, si supra summam aeris regionem erectus, uno aspectu fontem et ostium fluminis posset aspicere: Ità oculo Dei, etc.—P. Molinæus, *de Cognit. Dei*.

but he that sits by the water's side, not changing his place, sees the same parts, only because they succeed; and these that pass, make way for them that follow, to come under his eye. So doth a learned man describe the unsuccessive knowledge of God, of which the glorified soul's way of knowing is an imitation; as the very words 'seeing' and 'beholding' (which it is so frequently set forth by in Scripture) do naturally import. Yet, that as to them, all ratiocination shall be excluded that state, I see no reason to admit; though with God it can have no place. And as he is reckoned to live a pleasanter life, that spends upon a plentiful estate, than he that gets his bread by the sweat of his brows; so this more easy way of knowing must needs be reckoned more pleasing. This knowledge is as Jacob's venison, not hunted for, but brought to hand. The race is not here to the swift. The unlearned idiot<sup>1</sup> knows as much as the profoundest rabbi, at least with as much satisfaction;<sup>2</sup> and all arms are of an equal size, or are content with their own measure.

ii. It is more certain. For what do we use to reckon so certain as what we see with our eyes? "Better" (even in this respect) "is the sight of the eyes, than the wandering of the desire." While here the mind is carried with most earnest desire to pursue knowledge, it very often mistakes its way, and miserably wanders. In our most wary ratiocinations, we many times shoot at rovers: but when we know by *this* vision, our mark is immediately presented to our eye. We are in no danger to be imposed upon by delusive appearances of things. We look through no fallacious mediums, are held in no suspense; puzzled with no doubts, whether such consequences will hold, such conclusions be rightly inferred; and so are not retarded from giving a present unwavering assent. Here are no perplexing intricacies, no dubious hallucinations or uncertain guesses. We see things as they are, by a simple and undeceiving light, with both subjective and objective certainty, being secure both from doubt and error.

<sup>1</sup> In the original sense of *ιδιώτης*, a private person.—*Ed.*

<sup>2</sup> Herbert.



2. *Faith.* How magnificent things doth Scripture speak of this grace! which the experience also of such as have been wont to live by it (that is, to make it the governing principle of their lives) doth abundantly confirm. How clear are its apprehensions! "it is the evidence of things not seen."<sup>1</sup> How sweet its enjoyments! "whom not seeing ye love; and though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice, with joy unspeakable, and full of glory."<sup>2</sup>

Even the heathen theology hath magnified it above knowledge: 'What is it,' saith one, 'that unites us with the self-goodness, and so joins us thereto, that it quiets or gives rest to all our action and motion? I will express it in one word; it is faith itself, which unspeakably and after a hidden manner, doth unite and conjoin happy souls with the self-good. For,' saith he, 'it concerns us not, either in a way of science,<sup>3</sup> or with any imperfection, to inquire after the good; but to behold ourselves in the Divine light, and so shutting our eyes, to be placed in the unknown and secret unity of beings.'

And a later writer gives us this as a conclusion from that former author,—that as faith, which is credulity, is below science;<sup>4</sup> so that faith, which is truly so called, is, super-substantially, above science and intelligence, immediately uniting us to God.

But it is evident, intuitive knowledge far exceeds even faith also.

i. It is more *distinct and clear.* Faith is taking a thing upon report; "Who hath believed our report?"<sup>5</sup> And they are more general, languid apprehensions we have of things this way. Faith enters at the ear; "it comes by hearing."<sup>6</sup> And if we compare the perceptions of these two external senses, that of hearing and sight, the latter is unspeakably more clear and satisfying. He that hath knowledge of a

<sup>1</sup> Ἐλεγχος. Heb. xi. 1.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Pet. i. 8.

<sup>3</sup> Ὁυ γνωστικῶς, οὐδὲ ἀτελῶς, ἀλλ' ἐπιδόντας ἑαυτοῦς τῷ θεῷ φωτὶ, etc.—Proclus in *Plat. Theol.*

<sup>4</sup> Picus Mirand.

<sup>5</sup> Isa. liii. 1.

<sup>6</sup> Rom. x. 16.

foreign country only by report of another, hath very indistinct apprehensions of it, in comparison of him who hath travelled it himself. While the queen of Sheba only *heard* of Solomon's glory, she could not satisfy herself, without an *ἀντροψία*, the sight of her own eye; and, when she saw it, she saith the one half was not told her of what she now beheld. The ear more slowly and gradually receives, and the tongue more defectively expresses to another, an account of things, than one's ocular inspection would take it in. But as to the excellency of this intuitive knowledge above faith, the comparison lies not, between knowing by the ministry of a more noble sense, and a less noble; but knowing by dependence on a less noble, and without dependence upon any at all. When God hath been pleased to afford discoveries, in that way of vision, to men in the body,—his prophets, etc.—he hath usually bound up their senses by sleep or trances; sense hath had no part or lot in this matter. Unto believing, it must necessarily concur.

ii. *More affective.* What we see, even with our external eye, much more powerfully moves our heart, than what we only give credit to upon hearsay. The queen of Sheba much admired, no doubt, Solomon's famed splendour and magnificence, while she only heard of it; but when she saw it, it puts her into an ecstasy; it ravished away her soul; "she had no more spirit," etc. What would the sight of the Divine glory do, if God did not strengthen "with all might:" were there not as well glorious power to support, as powerful glory to transform?

Job had "heard of God by the hearing of the ear," but when "once his eye saw him," (whether that were by the appearance of any sensible glory, which is probable enough,—for it is said, "the Lord answered him out of the whirlwind," or whether by a more immediate revelation, it is less material,) what work did it make in his soul!

"The devils believe, and tremble;" so impressive are the pre-apprehensions of judgment to come, and the consequents thereof, with them; yet their present torment thence is no

torment in comparison—"art thou come to torment us before the time?"—of what they expect. Let wicked men consider this,—they will have their intuition in hell too. Were your belief, and terror thereupon, with reference to the eternal judgment and the impendent wrath of God, equal to what the devils themselves have upon the same account, actual sensation will make you more exceed yourselves in point of misery than the devils do now exceed you. There is, no doubt, a proportionable difference between the impressions of present faith and future vision, with holy souls. Now, "not seeing, yet believing, they rejoice with joy unspeakable:" their present joy cannot be spoken; their future then cannot be thought! Experience daily tells us how greatly, sensible, present objects have the advantage upon us beyond those that are spiritual and distant, though infinitely more excellent and important. When the tables are turned, the now sensible things disappear; a new scene, of things invisible and eternal, is immediately presented to our view; when the excellency of the objects, the disposedness of the subjects, the nature of the act, shall all multiply the advantages on this part,—how affective will this vision be, beyond what we have ever found the faint apprehensions of our so much disadvantaged faith to amount to? A kind message from an indulgent father to his far distant son, informing of his welfare and yet continuing love, will much affect; but the sight of his father's face will even transport and overcome him with joy.

But further, consider this intuition a little more particularly and absolutely in itself. So, you may take this somewhat distincter account of it in some few particulars, corresponding to those by which the object—the glory to be beheld,—was lately characterized.

1. It will be a *vigorous, efficacious intuition*; as that which it beholds is "the most excellent," even the *Divine* "glory." Such an object cannot be beheld but with an eye full of lively vigour; a sparkling, a radiant eye: a weak eye would be struck blind, would fail, and be closed up at the first glance.

We must suppose, then, this vision to be accompanied with the highest vitality, the strongest energy, a mighty plenitude of spirit and power; no less than the Divine: nothing but the Divine *power* can sufficiently fortify the soul to behold Divine *glory*. When the Apostle speaks only of his desire of glory, "he that hath wrought us to this self same thing," saith he, "is God;" he that hath moulded us, suitably framed us—as the word signifieth—for this thing, is God; it is the work of a Deity to make a soul desire glory: certainly then it is his work to give the power of beholding it: and by how much the more of power, so much the more of pleasure in this vision. Weak sight would afford but languid joy. But when the whole soul, animated with Divine power and life, shall seat itself in the eye; when it shall be, as it were, "all eye,"—as one said of God, whom now it perfectly imitates,—and be wholly intent upon vision; apply itself thereto with all its might, as its only business; what satisfying joys doth it now taste, renewed by every repeated view!<sup>1</sup> How doth it now, as it were, prey upon glory, as the eye of the eagle upon the beams of the sun! We meet with the expression of *ures bibule*, 'thirsty ears;' here will be *oculi bibuli*, 'thirsty eyes:' a soul ready to drink in glory at the eye. If vision be by intromission, what attractive eyes are here, drawing in glory, feeding upon glory! If by extramission, what piercing, darting eyes, sending forth the soul at every look to embrace the glorious object!

There is a great power that now attends realizing thoughts of God; whether it appear in the consequent working of the soul directly towards God, or by way of reflection upon itself. If directly towards God, how mightily is he admired! "Who is a God like unto thee?" If by reflection upon our own sin and vileness, how deeply doth it humble! "Now mine eye seeth thee, therefore I abhor myself." "Woe is me, I am undone, . . . mine eyes have seen the Lord of glory." If by way of reflection upon our interest in

<sup>1</sup> S. H'e onym.

him or relation to him, how mightily doth it support and comfort! "I will look to the Lord, . . . my God will hear me."<sup>1</sup> How full of rich sense is that scripture, "They looked to him, and were lightened!"<sup>2</sup> One look clothed them with light, cast a glory upon their souls, filled them with life and joy: it was but a thought, the cast of an eye, and they were as full as hearts could hold. Oh the power then of these heavenly visions, when we dwell in the views of that transforming glory!

2. This will be a *comprehensive intuition*, as its object is *entire* glory. I mean comparatively, not absolutely comprehensive. More of the Divine glory will be comprehended, unspeakably, than before. It is called, we know, by the Schoolmen, the knowledge of *comprehensors*, in contradiction to that of *viators*. We shall better be able to discern the Divine excellencies *together*; have much more adequate conceptions; a fuller, and more complete notion of God: we shall see him "as he is." It is too much observable, how, in our present state, we are prejudiced by our partial conceptions of him; and what an inequality they cause in the temper of our spirits.

For wicked men,—the very notion they have of God proves fatal to their souls, or is of a most destructive tendency; because they comprehend not *together* what God hath revealed of himself. Most usually they confine those few thoughts of God they have, only to his mercy; and that exclusively as to his holiness and justice: hence their vain and mad presumption. The notion of an unholy (or a not-holy and not-just) God, what wickedness would it not induce? "Thou thoughtest I was altogether such an one as thyself:" a God after their own hearts; then the reins are let loose. More rarely, when the conscience of guilt hath arrested the self-condemned wretch, God is thought of under no other notion than of an irreconcilable enemy and avenger; as one thirsting after the blood of souls, and that will admit of no

<sup>1</sup> Mic. vii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> Psal. xxxiv. 5.

atonement : so without all pretence, and so flatly contrary to all his discoveries of himself, do men dare to affix to him black and horrid characters, forged only out of the radicated and inveterate hatred of their own hearts against him—that never take up good thoughts of any one—only because they have no mind to acquaint themselves with him, and that they may have some colour for their affected distance ; and so, perhaps, never return, but perish under a horrid wilful despair.

And even the people of God themselves are too apt, sometimes, so wholly to fix their eye upon love and grace, that they grow into an unbecoming, uncreaturely familiarity, while the thoughts of infinite majesty, adorable greatness, and glory are asleep ; sometimes, possibly, they apprehend vindictive justice, the indignation and jealousy of God against sin, —precluding meanwhile the consideration of his indulgent compassions towards truly humble and penitent souls,—to that degree of affrightment and dread, that they grow into an unchildlike strangeness towards him and take little pleasure in drawing nigh to him.

But when now our eye shall take in the discovery of Divine glory *equally*, how sweet and satisfying a pleasure will arise from that grateful mixture of reverent love, humble joy, modest confidence, meek courage, a prostrate magnanimity, a triumphant veneration, a soul shrinking before the Divine glory into nothing, yet not contenting itself with any less enjoyment than of him, who is all in all !

There is nothing here in this complexion or temper of soul but hath its warrant in the various aspect of the face of God comprehensively beheld ; nothing but what is, even by its suitability, highly grateful and pleasing.

3. It will be *fixed, steady intuition*, as its object is *permanent* glory. The vision of God can neither infer nor admit weariness. The eye cannot divert ; its act is eternally delectable ; and affords an unvariable, undecaying pleasure. Sensual delights soon end in loathing, quickly bring a glutting surfeit, and degenerate into torments when they are continued

and unintermittent.<sup>1</sup> A philosopher<sup>2</sup> in an epistle which he writes to a friend from the court of Dionysius, where he was forcibly detained, thus bemoans himself: 'We are unhappy, O Antisthenes, beyond measure; and how can we but be unhappy, that are burdened by the tyrant every day, with sumptuous feasts, plentiful computations, precious ointments, gorgeous apparel? and I knew, as soon as I came into this island and city, how unhappy my life would be.' This is the nature and common condition of even the most pleasing sensible objects: they first tempt, then please a little, then disappoint, and lastly vex. The eye that beholds them blasts them, quickly rifles and deflowers their glory, and views them with no more delight at first than disdain afterwards. Creature-enjoyments have a bottom, are soon drained and drawn dry: hence there must be frequent diversions; other pleasures must be sought out, and are chosen, not because they are better, but because they are new.

This demonstrates the emptiness and vanity of the creature. Affection of variety only proceeds from sense of want; and is a confession, upon trial, that there is not, in such an enjoyment, what was expected.

Proportionably, in the state of glory a constant indeficient fulness renders the blessed soul undesirous of any change. *There* is no need of varieties or diversions; what did once please can never cease to do so. This glory cannot fade or lose anything of its attractive power. The *faculty* cannot languish, or lose the disposition by which it is contempered and made proportionable thereto: hence no weariness can ensue. What! a soul in which the love of God is perfected, grow weary of beholding him! The sun will sooner grow weary of shining; the touched needle of turning itself to its wonted point. Everything will sooner grow weary of its centre, and the most fundamental laws of nature be sooner antiquated, and made void for ever.

<sup>1</sup> Proba istas, quæ voluptates vocantur, ubi modum transcenderint, penas esse.—Sen. *Ep.* 83.

<sup>2</sup> Κακοδαιμονούμεν ὃ ἀντίσθενες, οὐ μετρίως, etc.—Socraticorum. *Epist.* 9.

“The eye of the fool,” Solomon tells us, “is in the ends of the earth;”<sup>1</sup> *his* only is a rolling wandering eye, that knows not where to fix. Wisdom guides and fixes the eye of the holy soul, determines it unto God only: “I will bless the Lord, who hath given me counsel: my reins also instruct me . . . I have set the Lord always before me.”<sup>2</sup> Surely heaven will not render it less capable of dijudication; of passing a right judgment of the excellency and worth of things. And here a rational judgment will find no want; and an irrational, will find no place. Therefore, as permanent glory will certainly infer a perpetual vision, perpetuated vision will as certainly perpetuate the soul’s satisfaction and blessedness.

4. It will be a *possessive intuition*, as it is an *appropriate* glory which it pitches upon. It will be the language of every look, ‘This glory is mine.’ The soul looks not upon it shily, as if it had nothing to do with it; or with slight and careless glances: but the very posture of its eye speaks its interest, and proclaims the pretensions it hath to this glory. With how different an aspect doth a stranger passing by, and the *owner*, look upon the same house, the same lands! A man’s eye lays his claim for him and avows his right. A grateful object that one can say is his own, he arrests it with his eye: so do saints with appropriate looks behold their God and the Divine glory; even with such an eye as He was wont to behold them, “To this man will I look,”<sup>3</sup> etc., that is, as the place of my rest, mentioned before;—he designs him with his eye: which is the import of that expression, “The Lord knows who are his;”<sup>4</sup> his eye marks them out; owns them as his own; as concerning others whom he disowns, the phrase is, “I know you not.” And how vastly different is such an intuition from that, when I look upon a thing, with a hungry lingering eye, which I must never enjoy or never expect to be the better for: this vision is

<sup>1</sup> Prov. xvii. 24.

<sup>3</sup> Isa. lxvi. 1, 2.

<sup>2</sup> Psalm xvi. 7, 8.

<sup>4</sup> 2 Tim. ii. 19.



fruitive ; unites the soul with the blessed object : which kind of sight is meant, when actual blessedness is so often expressed by "seeing God."

We see then what vision, the sight of God's face, contributes to the satisfaction of blessed souls.

## CHAPTER VII.

WHEREIN ASSIMILATION, THE LIKENESS OR GLORY OF GOD IMPRESSED, CONTRIBUTES UNTO SATISFACTION : WHERE IS PARTICULARLY PROPOUNDED TO BE SHOWN—WHAT PLEASURE IT INVOLVES—WHAT IT DISPOSES TO—WHAT IT INVOLVES IN THE 'ESSE' OF IT—WHAT IN THE 'COGNOSCI.'—I. THE PLEASURE OF "BEING LIKE GOD" DISCOVERED—II. SHOWING, CONCERNING THE IMAGE OF GOD, GENERALLY CONSIDERED, THAT IT IS THE SOUL'S HEALTH AND SOUNDNESS RESTORED—THAT IT IS A VITAL, AN INTIMATE, A CONNATURAL, A PERFECT IMAGE.

OUR next business is to discover what assimilation, or the impressed likeness of God, may further add to this satisfied state; or what satisfying pleasure the blessed soul finds in this,—that it is like God.

And here we are distinctly to inquire into the pleasure which such an assimilation to God *involves in itself*, and *tends and disposes to*.

I. The pleasure it involves in itself; or which is taken in it, abstractly considered: which we may more particularly unfold by showing the pleasure involved,—1. In being like God. 2. In knowing or reflecting upon the same: the *esse* and the *cognosci* of this assimilation.

1. The pleasure in being like God; which may be discovered both by a general consideration hereof, and by instancing in some particulars wherein blessed souls shall be like him.

It is obvious to suppose an inexpressible pleasure in the very feeling, the inward sensation, the holy soul will have of that happy frame *in general*, whereinto it is now brought;

that joyful harmony, that entire rectitude it finds within itself. You may as soon separate light from a sunbeam, as pleasure from such a state. This likeness or conformity to God is an *εὐκρασία*, a perfect temperament; an athletic healthiness; a strong, sound constitution of soul. Do but imagine what it is to a man's body after a wasting sickness, to find himself well. Frame a notion of the pleasure of health and soundness, when both all the parts and members of the body are in their proper places and proportions, and a lively, active vigour, a sprightly strength possesses every part and actuates the whole; how pleasant is this temper! If we were all body, there could be no greater felicity than this. But by how much the more noble any creature is, so is it capable of more exquisite pains or pleasures. Sin is the sickness and disease of the soul;<sup>1</sup> enfeebles all its powers, exhausts its vigour, wastes its strength. You know the restless tossings, the weary rollings to and fro, of a diseased, languishing body; such is the case of a sinful soul. Let it but seriously bethink itself, and then speak its own sense,—but here is the malignity of the disease, it cannot be serious, it always raves,—what will it be? ‘Oh, I can take no rest!’ The way of wickedness is called “a way of pain;”<sup>2</sup> sinners would find it so if the violence of the disease had not bereft them of sense. ‘Nothing savours with me; I can take comfort in nothing.’ “The wicked is as a troubled sea,” as their name imports, “that cannot rest, whose waters,” etc.<sup>3</sup> The image of God renewed in holiness and righteousness, is health restored after such a consuming sickness; which, when we awake, when all the drowsiness that attends our disease is shaken off, we find to be perfect. “The fear of the Lord” (an ordinary paraphrase of holiness or piety) is said to be “health to the navel,

<sup>1</sup> Τιμώτερον ψυχῆ σώματος, τὸ δὲ τιμώτερον ἀγαθὸν μείζον, τὸ δὲ τῷ μείζονι ἀγαθῷ ἐναντίον, μείζον κακὸν· ἀγαθὸν δὲ μείζον ὑγεία ψυχῆς ὑγείας σώματος, μείζον οὖν κακὸν, νόσος ψυχῆς, νόσος σώματος, νόσος ψυχῆς μοχθηρία, etc.—Max. Tyr. *Dissert.* 41.

<sup>2</sup> רשע רך Psal. cxxxix. 24.

<sup>3</sup> רשע Isa. lvii. 20. Hinc illud et tædium et displicentia sui, et nusquam residentis animi volutatio, etc.—Sen. *de Tranqu. Animi.*

and marrow to the bones." Our Lord Jesus invites wearied sinners "to come to him, to take his yoke on them, to learn of him,"—that is, to imitate him, to be like him,—and promises they "shall find rest to their souls."<sup>1</sup> How often do we find *grace* and *peace* in conjunction, in the apostle's salutations and benedictions? We are told that the ways of Divine wisdom—that is, which it prescribeth—are all "pleasantness and peace."<sup>2</sup> That "in keeping the commandments of God, there is great reward." That "they are not grievous," that is—for there seems to be a meiosis in the expression,—are joyous, pleasant. And what are his commandments, but those expresses of himself wherein we are to be like him, and conform to his will? "The kingdom of God"<sup>3</sup> (that holy order which he settles in the spirits of men; his law transcribed and impressed upon the soul; which is nothing else but its conformation and likeness to himself) "is righteousness, and" then "peace." The *φρόνημα Πνεύματος*,<sup>4</sup> that notion, and judgment, and savour of things; that excellent temper of mind and heart—for that is the extent of the expression—whereof the holy Spirit of God is both the author and pattern, is life and peace; involves them in itself. When one thing is thus, in *casu recto*, predicated of another, it speaks their most intimate connexion, as Rom. xiv. 17, above; so 1 John v. 3, "This is love, that," etc. So here, such a mind is life and peace; though the *copula* be not in the original, it is fitly supplied in the translation. You cannot separate, as much as to say, life and peace from such a mind: it hath no principle of death or trouble in it. Let such as know anything of this blessed temper and complexion of soul, compare this scripture and their own experience together. When at any time they find their souls under the blessed empire and dominion of a spiritual mind; when spirituality wholly rules and denominates them; are not their souls the very region of life and peace? both these in conjunction, life and peace? not raging

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xi. 28.<sup>2</sup> Prov. iii. 17; Ps. xix. ; 1 John v. 3.<sup>3</sup> Rom. xiv. 17.<sup>4</sup> Rom. viii. 6.

life, not stupid peace, but a placid peaceful life, a vital vigorous rest and peace: it is not the life of a fury, nor peace of a stone: life that hath peace in it, and peace that hath life in it. Now can the soul say, 'I feel myself well; all is now well with me.' Nothing afflicts the spiritual mind,<sup>1</sup> so far and while it is such: it is wrapt up and clothed in its own innocency and purity and hereby become invulnerable, not liable to hurtful impressions. Holiness, under the name of light—for that is, by the context, the evident meaning of the word there—is by the Apostle spoken of as the Christian's *armour*.<sup>2</sup> "Put on," saith he, "the armour of light," in opposition to the works of darkness, which he had mentioned immediately before. Strange armour, that a man may see through! A good man's armour is, that he needs none;<sup>3</sup> his armour is an open breast; that he can expose himself; is fearless of any harm. "Who is he that shall harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good?" It should be read, *imitators*;<sup>4</sup> so the word signifies: and so, whereas 'following' is either of a pattern or an end, the former must be meant here, by the natural importance of that word. And hence, by "that which is good"<sup>5</sup> is not to be understood *created* goodness; for it is not enough to imitate that goodness; for so we must *be* good; but the words are capable of being read, "him that is good," or, which is all one, the good;<sup>6</sup> and so it is the increate Good, the blessed God himself, formally considered under the notion of good. Nothing can harm you, if you be *like God*; that is the plain sense of this scripture. Likeness to God is armour of proof, that is, an imitation of him; namely, in his moral goodness, which holiness, as a general name of it, comprehends. A person truly like God is secure from any external violence; so far as that it shall

<sup>1</sup> Invulnerable est non quòd non feritur, sed quòd non læditur. Sen. de Constantiâ Sapiientis, sive quòd in sapientem non cadit injuria.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. xiii. 12.

<sup>3</sup> Integer vitæ scelerisque purus, etc.—Hor.

<sup>4</sup> Μιμηταί.

<sup>5</sup> Τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ.

<sup>6</sup> As Plato and his followers used the expression *τᾶγαθόν*, fully, according to the sense of Matt. xix. 17.

never be able to invade his spirit. He is in spirit far raised above the tempestuous, stormy region, and converses where winds and clouds have no place.

Nor can—so far as this temper of soul prevails—any evil grow upon such a mind within itself. It is life and peace; it is light and purity; for it is the image, the similitude of God. “God is light, and with him is no darkness at all.”<sup>1</sup> Holy souls “were darkness, but they are light in the Lord.” He the “Father of lights,” they “the children of light.”<sup>2</sup> They were darkness: not in the dark, but (in the abstract) “darkness:” as if that were their whole nature, and they nothing else but an impure mass of conglobated darkness. So “ye are light:”<sup>3</sup> as if they were that, and nothing else; nothing but a sphere of light.

Why, suppose we such a thing as an entire sphere of nothing else but pure light,—what can work any disturbance here, or raise a storm within it? A calm, serene thing; perfectly homogeneous, void of contrariety or any self-repugnant quality; how can it disquiet itself?

We cannot yet say that thus it is with holy souls in their present state, according to the highest literal import of these words, “ye are light:” but thus it will be when they awake; when they are satisfied with this likeness. They shall then be like God fully and throughout. Oh the joy and pleasure of a soul made after such a similitude! Now glory is become as it were their being; they are glorified. Glory is revealed into them, transfused throughout them. Everything that is conceivable under the notion of an excellency competent to created nature, is now to be found with them; and they have it inwrought into their very beings. So that in a true sense it may be said that “they are light;” they not only *have* such excellencies, but they *are* them: as the moralist<sup>4</sup> saith of the wise or virtuous man, that he not so properly hath all

<sup>1</sup> 1 John i.

<sup>2</sup> Eph. v.; Jas. i.

<sup>3</sup> Σφαῖρα ψυχῆς αὐτοειδῆς, ὅταν μήτε ἐκτείνηται ἐπί τι, μήτε ἔσω συντρέχη, μήτε συνιζάνη, ἀλλὰ φωτὶ λάμπηται, etc.—Marc. Antonin. lib. ii.

<sup>4</sup> Omnia non tam habere quam esse.—Sen.

things, as is all things. It is said of man, in respect of his naturals, he is the image and glory of God;<sup>1</sup> as for his supernatural excellencies, though they are not essential to man, they are more expressive of God; and are now become so inseparable from the nature of man too, in this his glorified state, that he can as soon cease to be intelligent as holy. The image of God, even in this respect, is not separable from him: nor blessedness surely from this image. As the Divine excellencies, being in their infinite fulness in God, are his own blessedness, so is the likeness, the participation of them in the soul, that now bears this image, its blessedness. Nothing can be necessary to its full satisfaction which it hath not in itself, by a gracious vouchsafement and communication. "The good man," in that degree which his present state admits of, Solomon tells us, "is satisfied from himself:"<sup>2</sup> he doth not need to traverse the world, to seek his happiness abroad; he hath the matter of satisfaction, even that goodness which he is now enriched with, in his own breast and bosom: yet he hath it all by participation from the fountain-goodness. But that participated goodness is so intimately one with him, as sufficiently warrants and makes good the assertion, "he is satisfied from himself:" namely, from himself, not primarily or independently, but by derivation from him, "who is all in all," and more intimate to us than we ourselves.<sup>3</sup> And what is that participated goodness but a degree of the Divine likeness? But when that goodness shall be fully participated; when this image and imitation of the Divine goodness shall be complete and entire, then shall we know the rich exuberant sense of those words. How fully will this image or likeness satisfy then!

And yet more distinctly, we may apprehend how satisfying this likeness or image impressed will be, if a little further deferring the view of the particulars of this likeness which

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xi. 7.

<sup>2</sup> Prov. xiv. 14.

<sup>3</sup> *Intimo nostro intimior. Esse nostrum laudabile.*—Gibieuf, *de Libertate, ex Plat. et Aug.*

we have designed to instance in,—we consider these general properties of it.

(1.) It is a *vital* image: not the image only of him that lives, the living God; but it is his *living* and soul-quickening image. It is the likeness of him in that very respect: an imitation and participation of the life of God; by which, once revived, the soul lives that was dead before. It is not a dead picture, a dumb show, an unmoving statue; but a living, speaking, walking image: that wherewith the child is like the Father: the very life of the subject where it is; and by which it lives as God, speaks and acts conformably to him: an image, not such a one as is drawn with a pencil, that expresses only colour and figure; but such a one as is seen in a glass,<sup>1</sup> that represents life and motion—as was noted from a worthy author before. It is even, in its first and more imperfect draught, an analogical participation—as we must understand it—of the Divine<sup>2</sup> nature; before which first tincture, those prelude touches of it upon the spirit of man, his *former* state is spoken of as an “alienation from the life of God;”<sup>3</sup> as having no interest, no communion therein. The “putting on of the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness,”<sup>4</sup> is presently mentioned in direct opposition to that dismal state, implying that to be a participation of the Divine life: and certainly, so far as it is so, it is a participation of the Divine blessedness too.

(2.) It is an image most *intimate* therefore to its subject. Glory it is; but not a superficial skin-deep glory, such as shone in Moses' face, which he covered with a veil. It is thoroughly transformative; changes the soul throughout; not in external appearance, but in its very nature. All outward embellishments would add little felicity to a putrid, corrupt soul. That would be but painting a sepulchre: this adds ornament unto life; and both, especially, to the inward man. It is not paint in the face, while death is at the

<sup>1</sup> Sic oculos, sic ille manus, sic ora ferebat.

<sup>3</sup> Eph. iv. 18.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Pet. i.

<sup>4</sup> Eph. iv. 24.



heart; but it is the radication of such a principle within, as will soon form and attemper the man universally to itself. It is glory, blessedness,—participated, brought home and lodged in a man's own soul, in his own bosom; he cannot then but be satisfied. A man may have a rich stock of outward comforts, and while he hath no heart to enjoy them, be never the happier. But it is impossible that happiness should be thus lodged in his soul, made so intimate and one with him, and yet that he should not be satisfied, not be happy.

(3.) An image *connatural* to the spirit of man: not a thing alien and foreign to his nature, put into him purposely, as it were, to torment and vex him; but an ancient well-known inhabitant, that had place in him from the beginning. Sin is the injurious intruder; which therefore puts the soul into a commotion, and permits it not to rest while it hath any being there. This image calms it, restores it, works a peaceful, orderly composure within; returns it to itself, to its pristine blessed state; being reseatd there as in its proper, primitive subject.

For though this image, in respect of corrupted nature, be *supernatural*, in respect of institute and undefiled nature, it was, in a true sense, *natural*; as hath been demonstrated by divers of ours against the Papists, and, upon the matter, yielded by some of the more moderate among themselves.<sup>1</sup> At least it was connate with human nature, consentaneous to it, and perfective of it. We are speaking, it must be remembered, of that part of the Divine image that consists in *moral* excellencies; there being another part of it, as hath been said, that is, even in the strictest sense, natural.

There is nothing in the whole moral law of God—in conformity whereunto this image did *ab origine* consist—nothing of what he requires from man, that is at all destructive of his being, prejudicial to his comforts, repugnant to his most innate principles: nothing that clashes with his reason or is

<sup>1</sup> As may be seen by comparing what Estius says to the two questions, 1. 'An gratia fuerit primo homini naturalis?' 2. 'Utrum originalis justitia fuerit homini supernaturalis?' l. 2. dist. 25.

contrary to his interest; or that is not, most directly, conservative of his being and comforts, agreeable to his most rational principles, subservient to his best and truest interest. For what "doth God the Lord require,"<sup>1</sup> but fear and love, service and holy walking, from an entire and undivided soul? What, but what is good; not only in itself, but for us; and in respect whereof, his law is said to be holy, just, and good?<sup>2</sup>

And what he requireth, he impresseth. This "law, written in the heart," is this "likeness."

How grateful then will it be, when after a long extermination and exile, it returns and repossesses the soul, is recognised by it, becomes to it "a new nature," yea, even a Divine; a vital living law, "the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus!"<sup>3</sup> What grievance or burden is it to do the dictates of nature? actions that easily and freely flow from their own principles? and when blessedness itself is enfolded in those very acts and inclinations? How infinitely satisfying and delightful will it be, when the soul shall find itself conaturalised to everything in its duty; and shall have no other duty incumbent on it than to be happy! when it shall need no arguments and exhortations to love God; nor need be urged and pressed, as heretofore, to mind him, to fear before him! when love, and reverence, and adoration, and praise, when delight and joy, shall be all natural acts. Can you separate this in your own thoughts, from the highest satisfaction?

(4.) This image will be now *perfect*: every way, fully perfect.

i. In all its parts; as it is in the first instant of the soul's entrance into the state of regeneration: the womb of grace knows no defective maimed births. And yet here is no little advantage as to this kind of perfection. For now those lively lineaments of the new creature *all appear*, which were much obscured before; every line of glory is conspicuous;

<sup>1</sup> Deut. x. 12; Micah vi. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. vii. 12.

<sup>3</sup> Rom. viii. 2.

every character legible; the whole entire frame of this image is, in its exact symmetry and apt proportions, visible at once. And it is an unspeakable addition to the pleasure of so excellent a temper of spirit, that accrues from the discernible entireness of it. Heretofore, some gracious dispositions have been to seek (through the present prevalence of some corruption or temptation) when there was most need and occasion for their being reduced into *act*. Hence the reward and pleasure of the act and improvement of the principle were lost together. Now, the soul will be equally disposed to every holy exercise that shall be suitable to its state. Its temper shall be even and symmetrical; its motions uniform and agreeable: nothing done out of season, nothing seasonable omitted, for want of a present disposition of spirit thereto. There will be not only an habitual, but actual entireness of the frame of holiness in the blessed soul.

ii. Again, this image will be perfect in degree; so as to exclude all degrees of its contrary, and to include all degrees of itself. There will now be no longer any colluctation with contrary principles; no "law in the members warring against the law of the mind;" no "lustings of the flesh against the spirit." That war is now ended in a glorious victory and eternal peace. There will be no remaining blindness of mind, nor error of judgment, nor perverseness of will, nor irregularity or rebellion of affections: no ignorance of God, no aversion from him or disaffection towards him. This likeness removes all culpable dissimilitude or unlikeness. This communicated glory fills up the whole soul, causes all clouds and darkness to vanish, leaves no place for anything that is vile or inglorious; it is pure glory, free from mixture of anything that is alien to it.

And it is itself full. The soul is replenished, not with airy evanid shadows; but with substantial, solid glory, a massive weighty glory;<sup>1</sup> for I know not but *subjective* glory may be taken in within the significancy of that known scripture, if it

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iv. 17.

be not more principally intended: inasmuch as the text speaks of a glory to be wrought out by *afflictions*, which are the files and furnaces, as it were, to polish or refine the soul into a glorious frame. It is cumulated glory, glory added to glory. *Here* it is growing progressive glory: "we are changed into the same image from glory to glory."<sup>1</sup> It shall now be stable, consistent glory; that carries a self-fulness with it, which some include also in the notion of purity:<sup>2</sup> it is full itself, includes every degree requisite to its own perfection. God hath now put the last hand to this glorious image, added to its ultimate accomplishments. Now, a conformity to Christ, even in the resurrection from the dead, in his glorious state, is fully attained. That "prize of the high calling of God" is now won. And the humble sense of not having "attained as yet," and of not being "already perfect"—in which humility the foundation of the temple of God in a saint is laid, and the building raised—is turned into joyful acclamations, "Grace, grace!" for the laying on of the top-stone, the finishing of this glorious work.

And when this temple is filled with the glory of the Lord, the soul itself replenished with the Divine fulness; will not its joy be full too? For here is no sacrifice to be offered but that of praise, and joy is the proper seasoning for that sacrifice.

Now, the new creature hath arrived to "the measure of the stature of a perfect man in Christ Jesus." The first formation of this spiritual, as well as of the natural man, was hidden and secret; it was curiously wrought, and in a way no more liable to observation than that of framing the child in the womb, as that is as hidden as the concoction of minerals or precious stones in the lower parts of the earth: no secrets of nature can outvie the mysteries of godliness. Its growth is also by very insensible degrees, as it is with the products of nature: but its arrival to perfection is infinitely

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iii. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Purum est quod est plenum sui, et quod minimum habet alieni.

more strange than anything in nature ever was. How sudden and wonderful is the change! when, in the twinkling of an eye, the blessed soul instantly awakes out of drowsy languishings and miserable weakness, into perfect strength and vigour!

“As a man is, so is his strength;” and as his strength is, so is his joy and pleasure. The sun is said to go forth “as a strong man, rejoicing to run his race.”<sup>1</sup> When a man goes in the fulness of his strength upon any enterprise, how do his blood and spirits triumph beforehand! no motion of hand or foot is without a sensible delight. The strength of a man’s spirit is unspeakably more than that of the outward man; its faculties and powers more refined and raised: and hence are rational or intellectual exercises and operations much more delightful than corporal ones can be.

But still as the man is, so is his strength,—it is an incomparably greater strength that attends the heaven-born man. This man “born of God,” “begotten of God, after his own likeness;” this hero, this son of God, was born to conflicts, to victories, to triumphs. While he is yet but in his growing age, “he overcomes the world,” as Hercules the serpents in his cradle; “overcomes the wicked one,” and is at last “more than conqueror.” A mighty power attends godliness; “a spirit of power, and of a sound mind:” by how much this Divine creature grows, so much the more like God: and, being perfect, conflicts cease; he had overcome and won the crown before. And, now, all his strength runs out into acts of pleasure. Now, when he shall go forth in his might to love God, as we are required to love him now with all our might, and every act of praise shall be an act of power, done with a fulness of strength—as it is said their praises, at the bringing home of the ark, were with all their might—oh what will the pleasure be that shall accompany this state of perfection! Perfect power and perfect pleasure are here met, and shall for ever dwell together, and be always

<sup>1</sup> Ps. xix.

commensurate to one another. They are so, here, in their imperfect state: our feeble, spiritless duties, weak, dead prayers; they have no more sweetness than strength, no more pleasure than power in them. Therefore we are listless and have no mind to duties, as we find we are more frequently destitute of a spiritual liveliness and vigour therein. When a spirit of might and power goes on with us in the wonted course of our converses with God, we then forecast opportunities, and gladly welcome the season, when it extraordinarily occurs, of drawing nigh to him. It cannot be thought that the connexion and proportion between these should fail in glory; or that, when everything else is perfect, the blessed soul itself made perfect, even as "God himself is perfect,"—in this bearing his likeness,—should be unlike him in bliss, or its satisfaction be imperfect.

## CHAPTER VIII.

THE SATISFACTION CARRIED IN THE GLORY OF GOD IMPRESSED, FURTHER SHOWN BY INSTANCES — CERTAIN PARTICULARS OF THIS IMPRESSION INSTANCED IN: A DEPENDENT FRAME OF SPIRIT, SUBJECTION OR SELF-DEVOTING, LOVE, PURITY, LIBERTY, TRANQUILLITY.

BUT besides the general consideration of this likeness, we shall instance in some of the particular excellencies comprehended in it, wherein the blessed shall imitate and resemble God: whence we may further estimate the pleasure and satisfaction that “being like God” will afford. Only here let it be remembered, that as we all along in this discourse speak of likeness to God in respect of moral excellencies; so by likeness to him, in respect of these, we understand not only a participation of those which are communicable, but a correspondent impress also, as to those that are incommunicable; as hath been more distinctly opened in the propositions concerning this likeness: which being premised, I shall give instances of both kinds, to discover somewhat of the inexpressible pleasure of being thus conformed to God.

And here, pretermittting the impress of knowledge, of which we have spoken under the former head of vision; we shall instance,—

(1.) In a dependent frame of spirit: which is the proper impress of the Divine all-sufficiency and self-fulness, duly apprehended by the blessed soul. It is not easy to conceive a higher pleasure than this, compatible to a creature. The pleasure of dependence; yea, this is an higher than we can conceive. Dependence—which speaks the creature’s *σκέσις* or

habitude to its principle, as the subserviency which imports its habitude to its end—is twofold.

i. *Natural*: which is common and essential to all creatures, even when no such thing is thought on or considered by them. The creatures live, move, and have their being in God, whether they think of it or no.

ii. *Voluntary* or rational; which is, *de facto*, peculiar, and *de jure*, common to reasonable creatures as such: a dependence that is ἐκ προαιρέσεως, elective; and with a foregoing reason (which I understand by *elective*; not a liberty of doing or not doing it) and concomitant consideration of what we do, and animadversion of our own act: when knowingly and willingly, understanding ourselves in what we do, we go out of ourselves, and live in God. This is the dependence of which I speak. And it cannot but be attended with transcendent pleasure in that other state, when that knowledge and animadversion shall be clear and perfect: both, as this dependence imports,—a nullifying of self and a magnifying (I may call it omnifying) of God, a making him “all in all.”

As it imports, which it doth most evidently, a self-annihilation, a pure *nullifying of self*, it is a continual recognition of my own nothingness, a momentarily iterated confession, that my whole being is nothing but a mere puff of precarious breath, a bubble raised from nothing by the arbitrary *fiat* of the great Creator; reducible, had he so pleased any moment, to nothing again. These are true and just acknowledgments, and, to a well-tempered soul, infinitely pleasant, when the state of the case is thoroughly understood as *now* it is, and it hath the apprehension clear how the creation is sustained; how, and upon what terms its own being, life, and blessedness are continued to it,—that it is by itself nothing; and that it is every moment determinable upon the constancy of the Creator’s will, that it is not simply nothing. It is not possible, that anything should hinder this consideration from being eternally delightful but that diabolical uncreaturely pride, that is long since banished heaven, and that banished its very subjects thence also. Nothing can suit that temper but



to be a god ; to be wholly independent ; to be its own sufficiency. The thoughts of living at the will and pleasure of another, are grating ; but they are only grating to a proud heart, which here hath no place. A soul naturalized to humiliations, accustomed to prostrations and self-abasements, trained up in acts of mortification, and that was brought to glory through a continued course and series of self-denial ; that, ever since it first came to know itself, was wont to depend for every moment's breath, for every glimpse of light, for every fresh influence—"I live, yet not I,"<sup>1</sup>—with what pleasure doth it now, as it were, vanish before the Lord ! what delight doth it take to diminish itself, and as it were disappear ; to contract and shrivel up itself, to shrink even into a point, into a nothing, in the presence of the Divine glory, that it may be "all in all !" Things are now pleasant to the soul, "in its right mind," as they are suitable ; as they carry a comeliness and congruity in them : and nothing now appears more becoming than such a self-annihilation. The distances of Creator and creature, of infinite and finite, of a necessary and arbitrary being, of a self-originated and a derived being, of what was from everlasting and what had a beginning,—are now better understood than ever ; and the soul by how much it is now come *nearer* to God, is more apprehensive of its *distance*. And such a frame and posture doth hence please it best, as doth most fitly correspond thereto. Nothing is so pleasing to it, as to be as it ought. That temper is most grateful that is most proper and which best agrees with its state. Dependence therefore is greatly pleasing, as it is a self-nullifying thing. And yet it is in this respect pleasing but as a means to a further end. The pleasure that attends it is higher and more intense, according as it more immediately attains that end, namely,—

*The magnifying and exalting of God* : which is the most connatural thing to the holy soul ; the most fundamental and deeply impressed law of the new creature. Self gives

<sup>1</sup> Gal. ii. 20.

place that God may take it; becomes nothing that he may be all: it vanishes, that his glory may shine the brighter.

Dependence gives God his proper glory. It is the peculiar honour and prerogative of a Deity, to have a world of creatures hanging upon it, staying themselves upon it; to be the *fulcrum*, the centre of a lapsing creation. When this dependence is voluntary and intelligent, it carries in it a more explicit owning and acknowledgment of God. By how much more this is the distinct and actual sense of my soul, 'Lord, I cannot live but by thee:' so much the more openly and plainly do I speak it out, 'Lord, thou art God alone; thou art the fulness of life and being; the only root and spring of life; the everlasting I AM; the Being of beings.'

How unspeakably pleasant, to a holy soul, will such a perpetual agnition or acknowledgment of God be! when the perpetuation of its being shall be nothing else than a perpetuation of this acknowledgment; when every renewed aspiration, every motion, every pulse of the glorified soul shall be but a repetition of it; when it shall find itself, in the eternity of life,—that everlasting state of life which it now possesses,—to be nothing else than an everlasting testimony that God is God: 'He is so, for I am, I live, I act, I have the power to love him; none of which could otherwise be.' When, amongst the innumerable myriads of the heavenly host, this shall be the mutual alternate testimony of each to all the rest throughout eternity, will not this be pleasant? When each shall feel continually the fresh illapses and incomes of God, the power and sweetness of Divine influences, the enlivening vigour of that vital breath, and find in themselves, 'Thus we live and are sustained;' and are yet as secure, touching the continuance of this state of life, as if every one were a god to himself, and did each one possess an entire god-head; when their sensible dependence on him, in their glorified state, shall be his perpetual triumph over all the imaginary deities, the fancied *Numina*, wherewith he was heretofore provoked to jealousy: and he shall now have no rival left, but be acknowledged and known, to be "all in

all;” how pleasant will it then be, as it were, to lose themselves in him, and to be swallowed up in the overcoming sense of his boundless, all-sufficient, everywhere flowing fulness!

And then add to this: they do by this dependence actually make this fulness of God their own. They are now met in one common principle of life and blessedness, that is sufficient for them all. They no longer live a life of care, are perpetually exempt from solicitous thoughts, which here they could not perfectly attain to in their earthly state. They have nothing to do but to *depend*; to live upon a present self-sufficient good, which alone is enough to replenish all desires; else it were not self-sufficient. How can we divide, in our most abstractive thoughts, the highest pleasure, the fullest satisfaction from this dependence?<sup>1</sup> It is to live at the rate of a god; a god-like life: a living upon immense fulness, as he lives.

(2.) *Subjection*; which I place next to dependence, as being of the same alloy; the product of impressed sovereignty, as the other, of all-sufficient fulness: both impressions upon the creature, corresponding to somewhat in God, most incommunicably appropriate to him.

This is the soul’s real and practical acknowledgment of the Supreme Majesty, its homage to its Maker, its self-dedication; than which nothing more suits the state of a creature, or the spirit of a saint. And as it is suitable, it is pleasant. It is that by which the blessed soul becomes, in its own sense, a consecrated thing, a devoted thing, sacred to God: its very life and whole being referred and made over to him. With what delightful relishes, what sweet gusts of pleasure is this done, while the soul tastes its own act; approves it with a full ungainsaying judgment; apprehends the condignity and fitness of it; assents to itself herein; and hath the ready suffrage, the harmonious concurrence of all its powers!

<sup>1</sup> Τὸ δὲ αὐτάρκεις τίθεμεν, ὃ μονούμενον αἰρετὸν ποιεῖ τὸν βίον, καὶ μηδεὺς ἐνδεῶ. — Arist. *de Mor.* lib. i. c. 4.

When the words are no sooner spoken, "Worthy art thou, O Lord, to receive glory, honour, and power, for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created," but they are resounded from the *penetralia*, the inmost bowels, the most intimate receptacles and secret chambers of the soul, "O Lord, thou art worthy:" worthy that I and all things should be to thee: worthy, to be the Omega as thou art the Alpha; the last as thou art the first; the end as thou art the beginning of all things; the ocean into which all being shall flow, as the fountain from which it sprang. My whole self and all my powers, the excellencies now implanted in my being, the privileges of my now glorified state, are all worth nothing to me but for thee; please me only, as they make me fitter for thee. Oh the pleasure of these sentiments, the joy of such raptures, when the soul shall have no other notion of itself than of an everlasting sacrifice, always ascending to God in its own flames!

For this devotedness and subjection speak not barely an *act*, but a *state*: a "being to the praise of grace;" a "living to God."<sup>1</sup> And it is no mean pleasure that the sincere soul finds in the imperfect beginnings, the first essays of this life, the initial breathings of such a spirit, its entrance into this blessed state: when it makes the first tender and present of itself to God, as the Apostle expresses it; when it first begins to esteem itself an hallowed thing; separate and set apart for God: its first act of unfeigned self-resignation, when it tells God from the very heart, 'I now give up myself to thee to be thine.' Never was marriage-covenant made with such pleasure, with so complacential consent. This quitting claim to ourselves, parting with ourselves upon such terms, to be the Lord's for ever,—oh the peace, the rest, the acquiescence of spirit that attends it! When the poor soul that was weary of itself, knew not what to do with itself, hath now on the sudden found this way of disposing itself to such an advantage; there is pleasure in this treaty. Even the

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xii. 1.

previous breakings and relentings of the soul towards God are pleasant. But, oh the pleasure of consent! of "yielding ourselves to God,"<sup>1</sup> as the Apostle's expression is; when the soul is overcome, and cries out, 'Lord, now I resign, I yield; possess now thy own right, I give up myself to thee.' That yielding is subjection, self-devoting; in order to future service and obedience: "To whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey,"<sup>2</sup> etc. And never did any man enroll himself as a servant to the greatest prince on earth with such joy. What pleasure is there in the often iterated recognition of these transactions; in multiplying such bonds upon a man's own soul—though done faintly, while the fear of breaking checks its joy in taking them on! When in the uttering of these words, "I am thy servant, O Lord; thy servant, the son of thy handmaid,"<sup>3</sup>—that is, thy born-servant, alluding to that custom and law among the Jews,— "Thy servant devoted to thy fear,"<sup>4</sup> a man finds they fit his spirit and are aptly expressive of the true sense of his soul, is it not a grateful thing? And how pleasant is a state of life consequent and agreeable to such transactions and covenants with God! When it is "meat and drink to do His will!" When his "zeal eats a man up," and one shall find himself secretly consuming for God, and the vigour of his soul exhaled in his service! Is it not a pleasant thing so "to spend and be spent?" When one can in a measure find that his will is one with God's, transformed into the Divine will; that there is but one common will and interest and end between him and us; and so, that in "serving God we reign with him;" in spending ourselves for him, we are perfected in him; is not this a pleasant life? Some heathens have spoken at such a rate of this kind of life as might make us wonder and blush. One speaking of a virtuous person, saith, 'He is as a good soldier that bears wounds, and numbers scars, and at last, smitten through with darts, dying, will

<sup>1</sup> Rom. vi. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. vi. 16.

<sup>3</sup> Ps. cxvi. 16.

<sup>4</sup> Ps. cxix. 38.

love the emperor for whom he falls; he will (saith he) keep in mind that ancient precept, "follow God." But there are that complain, cry out and groan, and are compelled by force to do his commands, and hurried into them against their will, and what a madness is it (saith he) to be drawn rather than follow?'<sup>1</sup> And presently after subjoins, 'We are born in a kingdom; to obey God is liberty.' The same person writes in a letter to a friend, 'If thou believe me, when I most freely discover to thee the most secret fixed temper of my soul, in all things my mind is thus formed: I obey not God so properly as I assent to him. I follow him with all my heart, not because I cannot avoid it.'<sup>2</sup> And another, 'Lead me to whatsoever I am appointed, and I will follow thee cheerfully; but if I refuse or be unwilling, I shall follow notwithstanding.'<sup>3</sup>

A soul cast into such a mould, formed into an obediential subject frame, what sweet peace doth it enjoy, how pleasant rest! Everything rests most composedly in its proper place: a bone out of joint knows no ease, nor lets the body enjoy any. The creature is not in its place but when it is thus subject, is in this subordination to God. By flying out of this subordination, the world of mankind is become one great disjointed body, full of weary tossings, unacquainted with ease or rest. That soul that is, but in a degree, reduced to that blessed state and temper, is as it were in a new world; so great and happy a change doth it now feel in itself. But when this transformation shall be completed in it; and the will of God shall be no sooner known than rested in with a complacential approbation; and every motion of the first and great mover shall be an efficacious law to guide and determine all our motions; and the lesser wheels shall presently run at the first impulse of the great and master-wheel without the least rub or hesitation; when the law of sin shall no longer check the law of God; when all the contentions of a rebellious

<sup>1</sup> Seneca, de Vita Beatâ, lib. xv. 'Et ut bonus miles feret vulnera,' etc.

<sup>2</sup> Epist. 96.

<sup>3</sup> Epictet. Enchir.

flesh, all the counter-strivings of a perverse, ungovernable heart, shall cease for ever: oh unconceivable blessedness of this consent, the pleasure of this joyful harmony, this peaceful accord!

Obedience, where it is due but from one creature to another, carries its no small advantages with it, and conducibleness to a pleasant unsolicitous life. To be particularly prescribed to in things about which our minds would otherwise be tossed with various apprehensions, anxious, uncertain thoughts, how great a privilege is it! I cannot forget a pertinent passage of an excellent person of recent memory. 'And,' saith he, 'for pleasure, I shall profess myself so far from doting on that popular idol, Liberty, that I hardly think it possible for any kind of obedience to be more painful than an unrestrained liberty. Were there not true bounds of magistrates, of laws, of piety, of reason in the heart, every man would have a fool—I add, a mad tyrant—to his master, that would multiply him more sorrows than briars and thorns did to Adam, when he was freed from the bliss at once, and the restraint of Paradise; and was sure greater slave in the wilderness than in the inclosure. Would but the Scripture permit me that kind of idolatry, the binding my faith and obedience to any one visible infallible judge or prince, were it the Pope or the Mufti or the grand Tartar; might it be reconcilable with my creed, it would be certainly with my interest, to get presently into that posture of obedience. I should learn so much of the barbarian ambassadors in Appian, which came on purpose to the Romans to negotiate for leave to be their servants. It would be my policy, if not my piety; and may now be my wish, though not my faith, that I might never have the trouble to deliberate, to dispute, to doubt, to choose,—those so many profitless uneasinesses,—but only the favour to receive commands, and the meekness to obey them.'<sup>1</sup> How pleasurable then must obedience be to the perfect will of the blessed God, when our wills shall also be perfectly attempered

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Hammond's Sermon of Christ's Easy Yoke.

and conformed thereunto! Therefore are we taught, "Thy will be done in earth as it is in heaven." What is more perfect in its kind, gives rule to the rest.<sup>1</sup>

(3.) *Love*. This is an eminent part of the image or likeness of God in his saints, as it is that great attribute of the Divine Being that is, alone, put to give us a notion of God; "God is love."<sup>2</sup> This is an excellency—consider it whether in its original or copy—made up of pleasantnesses. All love hath complacency or pleasure in the nature and most formal notion of it. To search for pleasure in love is the same thing as if a man should be solicitous to find water in the sea, or light in the body of the sun. Love to a friend is not without high pleasure, when especially he is actually present and enjoyed. Love to a saint rises higher in nobleness and pleasure, according to the more excellent qualification of its object. It is *now* in its highest improvement, in both these aspects of it; where whatsoever tends to gratify our nature, whether as human or holy, will be in its full perfection. Now doth the soul take up its stated dwelling in love, even in God who is love, and as he is love: it is now inclosed with love, encompassed with love, it is conversant in the proper region and element of love. The love of God is now perfected in it. That love which is not only participated from him, but terminated in him, that "perfect love"<sup>3</sup> casts out tormenting fear: so that here is pleasure without mixture. How naturally will the blessed soul now dissolve and melt into pleasure! It is new framed on purpose for love-embraces and enjoyments. It shall now love like God, as one composed of love. It shall no longer be its complaint and burden, that it cannot retaliate in this kind; that being beloved, it cannot love.

(4.) *Purity*. Herein also must the blessed soul resemble God and delight itself. "Every one that hath this hope,"—namely, of being hereafter like God, and seeing him as he

<sup>1</sup> Perfectissimum in suo genere est mensura reliquorum.

<sup>2</sup> 1 John iv. 8, 16.

<sup>3</sup> 1 John iv. 18.



is—"purifieth himself as he is pure." A God-like purity is intimately connected with the expectation of future blessedness, much more with the fruition. "Blessed are the pure in heart:" besides the reason there annexed—"for they shall see God," which is to be considered under the other head, the pleasure unto which this likeness disposes—that proposition carries its own reason in itself. It is an incomparable pleasure that purity carries in its own nature: as sin hath in its very nature, besides its consequent guilt and sorrow, trouble and torment beyond expression. Whatsoever defiles doth also disturb: nor do any but pure pleasures deserve the name. An Epicurus himself will tell us, there cannot be pleasure without wisdom, honesty, and righteousness.<sup>1</sup> It is least of all possible there should, when once a person shall have a right knowledge of himself, and—which is the moral impurity whereof we speak—the filthiness of sin. I doubt not but much of the torment of hell will consist in those too late and despairing self-loathings, those sickly resentments the impure wretches will be possessed with, when they see what hideous, deformed monsters their own wickedness hath made them. Here the gratifications of sense that attend it, bribe and seduce their judgments into another estimate of sin: but *then*, it shall be no longer thought of under the more favourable notion of a *γλυκίπικρον*: they shall taste nothing but the gall and wormwood.

It is certainly no improbable thing but that reason being now so fully rectified and undeceived, visors torn off, and things now appearing in their own likeness; so much will be seen and apprehended of the intrinsic evil and malignity of their vitiated natures, as will serve for the matter of further torment; while yet such a sight can do no more to a change of their temper than the devils' faith doth to theirs: such sights, being accompanied with their no-hope of ever attaining a better state, do therefore no way tend to mollify

<sup>1</sup> Whose doctrine, as to this matter of pleasure, is not so much to be blamed as his practice, if both be rightly represented to us. *Οὐκ ἐστὶν ἡδέως ζῆν ἄνευ τοῦ φρονίμως καὶ δικαίως.*—*Exc. Cicer. 1 de Fin.*

or demulce their spirits, but to increase their rage and torment.

It is, however, out of question, that the purity of heaven will infinitely enhance the pleasure of it: for it is more certain the intrinsical goodness of holiness—which term I need not among these instances, inasmuch as the thing admits not of one entire notion, but lies partly under this head, partly under the second, that of *devotedness to God*—will be fully understood in heaven, than the intrinsical evil of sin in hell: and when it is understood, will it not affect? will it not please? Even here, how pleasing are things to the pure (but in degree so), that participate of the Divine purity! “Thy word is very pure,” saith the Psalmist; “therefore thy servant loveth it.”<sup>1</sup> Under this notion do holy ones take pleasure each in other; because they see somewhat of the Divine likeness, their Father’s image, in one another: will it not be much more pleasing to find it, each one, perfect in himself? to feel the ease, and peace, and rest, that naturally goes with it? A man that hath any love of cleanliness, if casually plunged into the mire, he knows not what to do with himself,—he fancies his own clothes to abhor him, as Job rhetorically speaks;<sup>2</sup> so, doth as natural a pleasure attend purity: it hath it even in itself. “The words of the pure,” saith the Wise Man, “are pleasant words,”<sup>3</sup> (words of pleasantnesses it might be read,) that pure breath that goes from him is not without a certain pleasurable accompanying it. And if so to another, much more to himself, especially when everything corresponds; and, as the expression is, he finds himself clean throughout.

(5.) *Liberty*, another part of the Divine likeness, wherein we are to imitate God, cannot but be an unspeakable satisfaction: supposing such a state of the notion of liberty, as may render it really a perfection; which otherwise it would be a wickedness to impute to God, and an impossibility to partake from him.

I here speak of the *moral liberty* of a saint, as such; not of

<sup>1</sup> Ps. cxix. 140.

<sup>2</sup> Job ix.

<sup>3</sup> Prov. xv. 26.

the natural liberty of a man, as a man : and of the liberty consummate of saints in glory ; not of the inchoate, imperfect liberty of saints on earth.

And, therefore, the intricate controversies about the liberty of the human will lie out of our way, and need not give us any trouble.

It is out of question that this liberty consists not (whatever may be said of any other) in an equal propension to good or evil ; nor in the will's independency on the practical understanding ; nor in a various uncertain mutability or inconstancy ; nor is it such as is opposed to all necessity ; it is not a liberty from the government of God, nor from a determination to the simply best and most eligible objects.<sup>1</sup>

But it is a liberty from the servitude of sin, from the seduction of a misguided judgment, and the allurements of any ensnaring forbidden object : consisting in an unbounded amplitude and enlargedness of soul towards God, and indetermination to any inferior good ; resulting from an entire subjection to the Divine will, a submission to the order of God, and steady adherence to him.<sup>2</sup> And unto which the many descriptions and eulogies agree most indisputably, which from sundry authors are congested together by Gibieuf, in that ingenious tractate of 'Liberty.'

As that, 'He is free that lives as he will,' from Cicero, insisted on by St. Aug. *de Civit. Dei*, lib. xiv. c. 25 ; that is, who neither wishes anything nor fears anything ; who in all things acquiesces in the will of God ; who minds nothing but his own things, and accounts nothing his own but God ; who savours nothing but God ; who is moved only by the will of God.

Again ; 'He is free, that cannot be hindered, being willing,

<sup>1</sup> Which is a no more desirable state than that which, I remember, the historian tells us was the condition of the Armenians ; who, having cast off the government that was over them, became 'incerti, solutique, et magis sine domino quam in libertate.'—Tacit. *An.* l. ii.

<sup>2</sup> Libertas nostra non est subjectio ad Deum formaliter, sed amplitudo consequens eam.—Gibieuf. *de Libert. Dei et Creaturæ*, lib. i. c. 32.

nor forced being unwilling,' from Epictetus; that is, who hath always his will; as having perfectly subjected it to the will of God, as the same author explains himself.

Again; 'He is free that is master of himself,' from the Civilians; that is—as that liberty respects the spirit of a man—that hath a mind independent on anything foreign and alien to himself.

'That only follows God,' from Philo Judæus; 'That lives according to his own reason,' from Aristotle; with many more of like import: *that* alone does fully and perfectly suit that state of liberty the blessed soul shall hereafter eternally enjoy, as that author often acknowledges.

This is "the glorious liberty of the children of God; the liberty wherewith the Son makes free;" liberty, indeed, measured and regulated by the royal law of liberty, and which is perfected only in a perfect conformity thereto. There is a most servile liberty,<sup>1</sup> a being free from righteousness,<sup>2</sup> which under that specious name and show, enslaves a man to corruption:<sup>3</sup> and there is as free a service, by which a man is still the more free, by how much the more he serves and is subject to his superior's will and governing influences; and by how much the less possible it is he should swerve therefrom.<sup>4</sup>

The nearest approaches therefore of the soul to God, its most intimate union with him and entire subjection to him in its glorified state, makes its liberty consummate. Now is its deliverance complete, its bands are fallen off; it is perfectly disentangled from all the snares of death, in which it was formerly held; it is under no restraints, oppressed by no weights, held down by no clogs. It hath free exercise of all its powers; hath every faculty and affection at command.

<sup>1</sup> *Quam invexere sibi, adjuvant servitute. Et sunt, quodammodo, propria libertate captivi.*—Boeth. ex Gib. *Nectit quâ valeat trahi catenam.*—Sen. *Trag.*

<sup>2</sup> Rom. vi. 20.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Pet. ii.

<sup>4</sup> *Liberior quod divinæ gratiæ subjectior. Primum liberum arbitrium, quod homini datum est, quando primum creatus est rectus, potuit non peccare; sed potuit et peccare. Hoc autem novissimum eò potentius erit, quo peccare non potuit.*—Aug. *de Civitat. Dei*, lib. xxii. c. 30.

How unconceivable a pleasure is this! With what delight doth the poor prisoner entertain himself when his manacles and fetters are knocked off; when he is enlarged from his loathsome dungeon and the house of his bondage; breathes in a free air; can dispose of himself and walk at liberty whither he will! The bird escaped from his cage, or freed from his line and stone that resisted its vain and too feeble strugglings before; how pleasantly doth it range! with what joy doth it clap its wings and take its flight! A faint emblem of the joy wherewith that pleasant cheerful note shall one day be sung and chanted forth, "Our soul is escaped, as a bird out of the snare of the fowler; the snare is broken, and we are escaped." There is now no place for such a complaint, 'I would, but I cannot; I would turn my thoughts to glorious objects, but I cannot.' The blessed soul feels itself free from all confinement; nothing resists its will, as its will doth never resist the will of God. It knows no limits, no restraints; is not tied up to this or that particular good; but expatiates freely in the immense universal all-comprehending goodness of God himself.

And this liberty is the perfect image and likeness of the liberty of God, especially in its consummate state. In its progress towards it, it increases as the soul draws nearer to God: which nearer approach is not in respect of place or local nearness, but likeness and conformity to him; in respect whereof, as God is most sublime and excellent in himself, so is it in him.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Libertas nostra inhæret divinæ, ut exemplari, et in perpetuâ ejus imitatione versatur, sive ortum, sive progressum, sive consummationem ejus intuearis: libertas nostra, in ortu, est capacitas Dei. In progressu, libertas res est longè clarior: progressus enim attenditur penes accessum hominis ad Deum; qui quidem non locali propinquitate, sed imitatione et assimilatione constat, et eâ utique imitatione, et assimilatione, secundùm quam, sicut Deus est sublimis, et excelsus seipso; ita homo est sublimis, et excelsus Deo, et altitudo ejus Deus est, ut inquit D. Augustinus. Consummatio denique libertatis est, cum homo in Deum, felicissimo gloriæ cœlestis statu, transformatur; et Deus omnia illi esse incipit. Qui quidem postremus status, eo differt à priori . . . quippe homo tum non modo inalligatus est creaturis, sed nec circa illas negotiatur, etiam referendo in finem . . . nec in creaturis

Its consummate liberty is, when it is so fully transformed into that likeness of God as that he is all to it, as to himself; so that as he is an infinite satisfaction to himself, his likeness in this respect is the very satisfaction itself of the blessed soul.

(6.) *Tranquillity.* This also is an eminent part of that assimilation to God, wherein the blessedness of the holy soul must be understood to lie: a perfect composure, a perpetual and everlasting calm, an eternal vacancy from all unquietness or perturbation. Nothing can be supposed more inseparably agreeing to the nature of God than this: whom Scripture witnesses to be “without variableness or shadow of change.” There can be no commotion without mutation, nor can the least mutation have place in a perfectly simple and uncompounded nature: whence even pagan reason hath been wont to attribute the most undisturbed and unalterable tranquillity to the nature of God. Balaam knew it was incompatible to him to lie or repent. And—supposing him to speak this from a present inspiration—it is their common doctrine concerning God. ‘Any the least troubles and tempests,’ saith one, ‘are far exiled from the tranquillity of God; for all the inhabitants of heaven do ever enjoy the same stable tenor, even an eternal equality of mind.’<sup>1</sup> And a little after speaking of God, saith he, ‘It is neither possible He should be moved by the force of another, for nothing is stronger than God: nor of His own accord, for nothing is perfecter than God.’

And whereas there is somewhat that is mutable and subject to change, somewhat that is stable and fixed: ‘In which of those natures,’ saith another, ‘shall we place God? must we not in that which is more stable and fixed, and free

se infundit, nec per illas procedit, ut faciebat cum esset viator: sed in solo Deo, et conquiescit et effundit se placidissimè, et motus ejus, cum sit ad presentissimum et conjunctissimum bonum, similior est quieti quàm motui.—Gib. l. ii. c. 14.

<sup>1</sup> Omnes turbulæ tempestatesque procul à Deorum cœlestium tranquillitate exulant, etc.—Apuleius *de Deo Socratis*.

from this fluidness and mutability? For what is there among all beings, that can be stable or consist, if God do not by his own touch stay and sustain the nature of it?'<sup>1</sup>

Hence it is made a piece of deformity,—of likeness to God,—by another, who tells his friend, 'It is a high and great thing which thou desirest, and even bordering upon a Deity, not to be moved.'<sup>2</sup>

Yea, so hath this doctrine been insisted on by them, that, while other Divine perfections have been less understood, it hath occasioned the Stoical assertion of fatality to be introduced on the one hand, and the Epicurean negation of Providence on the other; lest anything should be admitted that might seem repugnant to the tranquillity of their 'Numina.'

But we know that our God doth whatsoever pleaseth him, both in heaven and earth; and that he doth all according to the wise counsel of his holy will: freely, not fatally, upon the eternal prevision and foresight of all circumstances and events: so that nothing can occur that is new to him, nothing that he knows not how to improve to good, or that can therefore infer any alteration of his counsels, or occasion to him the least perturbation or disquiet in reference to them.

Holy souls begin herein to imitate him, as soon as they first give themselves up to his wise and gracious conduct. It is enough that he is wise for himself and them. Their hearts safely trust in him. They commit themselves with unsolicitous confidence to his guidance; knowing he cannot himself be misled, and that he will not mislead them: as Abraham followed him, not knowing whither he went. And thus, by faith, they enter into his rest.

They do now in their present state only enter into it, or hover about the borders: their future assimilation to God in

<sup>1</sup> . . . 'Εν ποτέρᾳ τῶν φύσεων τούτων τὴν θεὸν τακτέον; ἄρα οὐκ ἐν στασιματέᾳ καὶ ἐδραιωτέᾳ, καὶ ἀπηλλαγμένη τοῦ βέματος τούτου, etc.—Max. Tyr. *Disser.* i.

<sup>2</sup> Quod desideras autem magnum, summum est. Deoque vicinum; non concuti.—Sen. *de Tranquill. Animi.*

this, gives them a stated settlement of spirit in this rest. They before did owe their tranquillity to their faith, now to their actual fruition. Their former acquiescency and sedate temper was hence, that they believed God would deal well with them at last; their present, for that he hath done so. Those words have now their fullest sense, both as to the rest itself which they mention and the season of it, "Return to thy rest, O my soul, for the Lord hath dealt bountifully with thee."<sup>1</sup> The occasions of trouble, and a passive temper of spirit, are ceased together. There is now no fear without nor terror within. The rage of the world is now allayed; it storms no longer. Reproach and persecution have found a period. There is no more dragging before tribunals, nor haling into prisons; no more running into dens and deserts; or wandering to and fro in sheep-skins and goat-skins. And with the cessation of the external occasions of trouble, the inward dispositions thereto are also ceased. All infirmities of spirit, tumultuating passions, unmortified corruptions, doubts or imperfect knowledge of the love of God, are altogether vanished and done away for ever.

And indeed, that perfect cure wrought within, is the soul's great security from all future disquiet. A well-tempered spirit hath been wont strangely to preserve its own peace in this unquiet world. Philosophy hath boasted much in this kind; and Christianity performed more.

The philosophical *γαλήνη*, or calmness of mind, is not without its excellency and praise: 'That stable settlement and fixedness of spirit, that *εὐθυμία*,'—as the moralist<sup>2</sup> tells us it was wont to be termed among the Grecians, and which he calls tranquillity,—'when the mind is always equal and goes a smooth, even course, is propitious to itself, and beholds the things that concern it with pleasure, and interrupts not this joy, but remains in a placid state, never at any time exalting or depressing itself.' But how far doth the Christian peace surpass it! "That peace which passeth all understanding;"<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Ps. cxvi.<sup>2</sup> Sen. de Tranquil. Anim.<sup>3</sup> Phil. iv. 7.



that, amidst surrounding dangers, enables the holy soul to say without a proud boast, "None of all these things move me;"<sup>1</sup>—the peace that immediately results from that faith which unites the soul with God, and fixes it upon him as its firm basis. When it is "kept in perfect peace, by being stayed upon him, because it trusts in him;" "when the heart is fixed, trusting in the Lord;" filled full of "joy and peace,"—or of *joyous peace*, by an ἐν διὰ δυνάμειν—"in believing."<sup>2</sup>

And if philosophy and, which far transcends it, Christianity,—reason and faith,—have that statique power, can so compose the soul and reduce it to so quiet a consistency in the midst of storms and tempests: how perfect and contentful a repose will the immediate vision and enjoyment of God afford it, in that serene and peaceful region where it shall dwell for ever, free from any molestation from without or principle of disrest within!

<sup>1</sup> Acts xx. 24.

<sup>2</sup> Isa. xxvi. 3; Ps. cxii. 7; Rom. xv. 13.

## CHAPTER IX.

THE PLEASURE ARISING FROM KNOWING, OR CONSIDERING OURSELVES TO BE LIKE GOD—FROM CONSIDERING IT, I. ABSOLUTELY—II. COMPARATIVELY, OR RESPECTIVELY: TO THE FORMER STATE OF THE SOUL—TO THE STATE OF LOST SOULS—TO ITS PATTERN—TO THE WAY OF ACCOMPLISHMENT—TO THE SOUL'S OWN EXPECTATIONS—TO WHAT IT SECURES.—THE PLEASURE WHERE TO IT DISPOSES: OF UNION—COMMUNION.—A COMPARISON OF THIS RIGHTEOUSNESS WITH THIS BLESSEDNESS.

2. HERE is also to be considered, the pleasure and satisfaction involved in this assimilation to God, as it is *known or reflected on*, or that arises from the *cognoscei* of this likeness.

We have hitherto discoursed of the pleasure of being like God, as that is apprehended by a spiritual sensation, a feeling of that inward rectitude, that happy pleasure, of souls now perfectly restored. We have yet to consider a further pleasure, which accrues from the soul's animadversion upon itself, its contemplating itself thus happily transformed. And though that very sensation be not without some animadversion, as indeed no sensible perception can be performed without it, yet we must conceive a consequent animadversion which is much more explicit and distinct, and which therefore yields a very great addition of satisfaction and delight: as when the blessed soul shall turn its eye upon itself, and designedly compose and set itself to consider its present state and frame, the consideration it shall now have of itself and this likeness impressed upon it may be either *absolute*, or *comparative* and *respective*.

I. *Absolute*. How pleasing a spectacle will this be, when the glorified soul shall now intently behold its own glorious

frame ; when it shall dwell in the contemplation of itself ; view itself round on every part, turn its eye from glory to glory, from beauty to beauty, from one excellency to another ; and trace over the whole draught of this image, this so exquisite piece of Divine workmanship, drawn out in its full perfection upon itself ; when the glorified eye and divinely enlightened and inspirited mind shall apply itself to criticise, and make a judgment upon every several lineament, every touch and stroke ; shall stay itself and scrupulously insist upon every part ; view at leisure every character of glory the blessed God hath enstamped upon it,—how will this likeness now satisfy ! And that expression of the blessed Apostle (taken notice of upon some other occasion formerly), “The glory to be revealed in us,” seems to import in it a reference to such a self-intuition. What serves revelation for, but in order to vision ? What is it, but an exposing things to view ? And what is revealed in us, is chiefly exposed to our own view.

All the time, from the soul’s first conversion till now, God hath been as it were at work upon it,—“He that wrought us to,”<sup>1</sup> etc.—hath been labouring it, shaping it, polishing it, spreading his own glory upon it, inlaying, enamelling it with glory : now at last the whole work is revealed, the curtain is drawn aside, the blessed soul awakes. ‘Come now,’ saith God, ‘behold my work, see what I have done upon thee, let my work now see the light ; I dare expose it to the censure of the most curious eye ; let thine own have the pleasure of beholding it.’ It was a work carried on in a mystery, secretly wrought as “in the lower parts of the earth,” as we alluded before, by a Spirit that came and went no man could tell how. Besides that in the general only, we knew “we should be like him,” it did not “yet appear what we should be :” now it appears : there is a revelation of this glory. Oh the ravishing pleasure of its first appearance ! And it will be a glory always fresh and flourishing—as Job’s expression is, “My

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. v. 5.

glory was fresh in me"—and will afford a fresh undecaying pleasure for ever.

II. The blessed soul may also be supposed to have a comparative and respective consideration of the impressed glory: that is, so as to compare it with, and refer it to, several things that may come into consideration with it: and may so heighten its own delight in the contemplation thereof.

1. If we consider this impression of glory, in reference to its *former loathsome deformities* that were upon it, and which are now vanished and gone: how unconceivable a pleasure will arise from this comparison! When the soul shall consider at once what it is, and what once it was, and thus bethink itself: 'I that did sometimes bear the accursed image of the Prince of darkness, do now represent and partake of the holy, pure nature of the Father of lights. I was a mere chaos, a hideous heap of deformity, confusion and darkness. But he that "made light to shine out of darkness, shined into me, to give the knowledge of the light of his own glory in the face of Jesus Christ;"<sup>1</sup> and since, made my "way as the shining light, shining brighter and brighter unto this perfect day."<sup>2</sup> I was a habitation for dragons, a cage of noisome lusts, that, as serpents and vipers, were winding to and fro through all my faculties and powers, and preying upon my very vitals. Then was I hateful to God, and a hater of him; sin and vanity had all my heart. The charming invitations and allurements of grace were as music to a dead man; to think a serious thought of God, or breathe forth an affectionate desire after him, was as much against my heart as to pluck out mine own eyes or offer violence to mine own life. After I began to live the spiritual new life, how slow and faint was my progress and tendency towards perfection! how indisposed did I find myself to the proper actions of that life! To go about any holy spiritual work was too often as to climb a hill or strive against the stream, or as an attempt to fly without wings. I have some-

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iv. 6.

<sup>2</sup> Prov. iv. 18.

time said to my heart, Come, now let us go pray, love God, think of heaven; but oh, how listless to these things, how lifeless in them! Impressions made, how quickly lost! Gracious frames, how soon wrought off and gone! Characters of glory razed out, and overspread with earth and dirt! Divine comeliness hath now at length made me perfect. The glory of God doth now enclothe me; they are his ornaments I now wear. He hath made me that lately "lay among the pots, as the wings of a dove covered with silver, and her feathers with yellow gold;" he hath put another nature into me, the true likeness of his own holy Divine nature; he hath now perfectly mastered and wrought out the enmity of my heart against him. Now to be with God is my very element. Loving, admiring, praising him, are as natural as breathing once was. I am all spirit and life, I feel myself disburthened and unclogged of all the heavy oppressive weights that hung upon me. No "body of death" doth now encumber me, no deadness of heart, no coldness of love, no drowsy sloth, no averseness from God, no earthly mind, no sensual inclinations or affections, no sinful divisions of heart between God and creatures. He hath now the whole of me. I enjoy and delight in none but him: oh blessed change! oh happy day!

2. If in contemplating itself, clothed with this likeness, it respect the state of damned souls, what transports must that occasion, what ravishing resentments; when it compares human nature in its highest perfection, with the same nature in its utmost depravation! An unspeakably more unequal comparison than that would be, of the most amiable lovely person, flourishing in the prime of youthful strength and beauty, with a putrefied rotten carcase, deformed by the corruption of a loathsome grave. When glorified spirits shall make such a reflection as this: 'Lo, here we shine in the glorious brightness of the Divine image; and behold, yonder deformed, accursed souls. They were as capable of this glory as we; had the same nature with us, the same reason, the same intellectual faculties and powers; but what monsters

are they now become! They eternally hate the eternal excellency. Sin and death are finished upon them. They have each of them a hell of horror and wickedness in itself. Whence is this amazing difference?' Though this cannot but be an awful wonder, it cannot also but be tempered with pleasure and joy.

3. We may suppose this likeness to be considered in reference to its *pattern*, and in comparison therewith; which will then be another way of heightening the pleasure that shall arise thence. Such a frame and constitution of spirit is full of delights in itself: but when it shall be referred to its original, and the correspondency between the one and the other be observed and viewed; how exactly they accord and answer each other, as face doth face in the water; this cannot still but add pleasure to pleasure, one delight to another; when the blessed soul shall interchangeably turn its eye to God and itself, and consider the agreement of glory to glory; the several derived excellencies to the original. 'He is wise, and so am I; holy, and so am I. I am now made perfect as my heavenly Father is.' This gives a new relish to the former pleasure. How will this likeness please under that notion, as it is his; a likeness to him! Oh the accent that will be put upon those appropriative words to be made "partakers of his holiness," and of the "Divine nature!" Personal excellencies in themselves considered cannot be reflected on but with some pleasure; but to the ingenuity of a child, how especially grateful will it be, to observe in itself such and such graceful deportments, wherein it naturally imitates its father! 'So he was wont to speak, and act, and demean himself.' How natural is it unto love, to affect and aim at the imitation of the person loved! So natural it must be to take complacency therein, when we have hit our mark and achieved our design. The pursuits and attainments of love are proportionable and correspondent each to other.

And what heart can compass the greatness of this thought, to be made like God! Lord, was there no lower pattern than thyself, thy glorious blessed self, according to which to

form a worm? This cannot want its due resentments in a glorified state.

4. This transformation of the blessed soul into the likeness of God, may be viewed by it, in reference to the *way of accomplishment*; as an end, brought about by so amazing stupendous means: which will certainly be a pleasing contemplation. When it reflects on the method and course insisted on for bringing this matter to pass; views over the work of redemption, in its tendency to this end,—the restoring God's image in souls;<sup>1</sup> considers Christ manifested to us, in order to his being revealed and formed in us: that God was made in the likeness of man, to make men after the likeness of God; that he partook with us of the human nature, that we might with him partake of the Divine; that he assumed our flesh, in order to impart to us his Spirit: when it shall be considered, for this end had we so “many great and precious promises;”<sup>2</sup> for this end did the glory of the Lord shine upon us through the glass of the gospel; “that we might be made partakers,”<sup>3</sup> etc., “that we might be changed,” etc.; yea, when it shall be called to mind, (though it be far from following hence, that this is the only or principal way wherein the life and death of Christ have influence in order to our eternal happiness,) that our Lord Jesus lived for this end, that we might learn so “to walk, as he also walked;” that he died that we “might be conformed to his death;” “that he rose again,” that we might with him “attain the resurrection of the dead;” that he was in us the hope of glory, that he might be in us—that is, the same image that bears his name—our final consummate glory itself also; with what pleasure will these harmonious congruities, these apt correspondencies, be looked into at last!

Now may the glorified saint say, ‘I here see the end the Lord Jesus came into the world for. I see for what he was “lifted up,” made a spectacle; that he might be a transforming one: what the effusions of his Spirit were for; why it

<sup>1</sup> Phil. ii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Pet. i. 4.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Cor. iii. 18.

so earnestly strove with my wayward heart. I now behold in my own soul the fruit of the travail of his soul. This was the project of redeeming love, the design of all-powerful gospel-grace. Glorious achievement! blessed end of that great and notable undertaking! happy issue of that high design!

5. With a reference to all their own *expectations and endeavours*. When it shall be considered by a saint in glory, —‘The attainment of this perfect likeness to God was the utmost mark of all my designs and aims; the term of all my hopes and desires. This is that I longed and laboured for; that which I prayed and waited for; which I so earnestly breathed after, and restlessly pursued. It was but to recover the defaced image of God: to be again made like him, as once I was. Now I have attained my end; I have the fruit of all my labour and travails; I see now the truth of those often encouraging words, “Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness, for they shall be filled. Be not weary in well-doing, for ye shall reap, if ye faint not.” What would I once have given for a steady abiding frame of holiness, for a heart constantly bent and biassed toward God; constantly serious, constantly tender, lively, watchful, heavenly, spiritual, meek, humble, cheerful, self-denying! How have I cried and striven for this, to get such a heart, such a temper of spirit! How have I pleaded with God and my own soul in order hereto! How often over have I spread this desire before the Searcher and Judge of hearts; turn me out of all my worldly comforts, so thou give me but such a heart; let me spend my days in a prison or a desert, so I have but such a heart; I refuse no reproaches, no losses, no tortures, may I but have such a heart! How hath my soul been sometimes ravished with the very thoughts of such a temper of spirit, as hath appeared amiable in my eye, but I could not attain! and what a torture again hath it been that I could not! What grievance in all the world; in all the days of my vanity, did I ever find comparable to this;—to be able to frame to myself by



Scripture, and rational light and rules, the notion and idea of an excellent temper of spirit; and then to behold it, to have it in view, and not to be able to reach it, to possess my soul of it! What indignation have I sometimes conceived against mine own soul, when I have found it wandering, and could not reduce it; hovering, and could not fix it; dead, and could not quicken it; low, and could not raise it! How earnestly have I expected this blessed day, when all those distempers should be perfectly healed, and my soul recover a healthy, lively, spiritual frame! What fresh ebullitions of joy will here be, when all former desires, hopes, endeavours, are crowned with success and fruit! This joy is the joy of harvest; "They that have sown in tears, do now reap in joy. They that went out weeping, bearing precious seed, now with rejoicing bring their sheaves with them."<sup>1</sup>

6. In reference to what this impressed likeness shall *for ever secure* to it: an everlasting amity and friendship with God; that it shall never sin, nor he ever frown more.

i. That it shall sin no more. The perfected image of God in it is its security for this: for it is holy throughout; in every point conformed to his nature and will; there remains in it nothing contrary to him. It may therefore certainly conclude, it shall never be liable to the danger of doing anything but what is good in his sight: and what solace will the blessed soul find in this! If *now* an angel from heaven should assure it, that from such an hour it shall sin no more, the world would not be big enough to hold such a soul. It hath now escaped the deadliest of dangers, the worst of deaths and—which, even in its present state, upon more deliberate calmer thoughts it accounts so—the sting of death, the very deadliness of death; the hell of hell itself. The deliverance is now complete, which cannot but end in delight and praise.

ii. That God can never frown more. This it is hence also assured of: how can he but take perfect, everlasting complacency

<sup>1</sup> Ps. cxxvi. 5, 6.

in his own perfect likeness and image, and behold with pleasure his glorious workmanship, now never liable to impairment or decay! How pleasant a thought is this, 'The blessed God never beholds me but with delight! I shall always behold his serene countenance, his amiable face never covered with any clouds, never darkened with any frown! I shall now have cause to complain no more,—My God is a stranger to me, he conceals himself, I cannot see his face; lo, he is encompassed with clouds and darkness, or with flames and terrors.' These occasions are for ever ceased. God sees no cause, either to behold the blessed soul with displeasure, or with displeasure to avert from it, and turn off his eye. And will not this eternally satisfy? When God himself is so well pleased, shall not we?

2. The pleasure it disposes to. Besides that the inbeing and knowledge of this likeness are so satisfying, it disposes, and is the soul's qualification for, a yet further pleasure: that of closest union and most inward communion with the blessed God.

i. *Union*: which—what it is more than relation—is not till now complete. Besides relation, it must needs import presence; not physical or local, for so nothing can be nearer God than it is: but moral and cordial, by which the holy soul, with will and affections guided by rectified reason and judgment, closes with and embraces him; and he also upon wise forelaid counsel, and with infinite delight and love, embraceth it: so friends are said to be one, besides their relation as friends, by an union of hearts. An union between God and the creature,—as to kind and nature higher than this, and lower than hypostatical or personal union, I understand not, and therefore say nothing of it.<sup>1</sup>

But as to the union here mentioned: as, till the image of God be perfected, it is not completed; so it cannot but be perfect then. When the soul is perfectly formed according to God's own heart and fully participates the Divine likeness; is perfectly like him; that likeness cannot but infer the most

<sup>1</sup> I would fain know what the *tertium* shall be, resulting from the physical union some speak of.

intimate union that two such natures can admit: that is, for nature, a love-union; such as that which our Saviour mentions, and prays to the Father to perfect between themselves and all believers, and among believers mutually with one another. Many much trouble themselves about this scripture;<sup>1</sup> but sure that can be no other than a love-union. For 1. It is such an union as Christians are capable of among themselves; for surely he would never pray that they might be one with an union whereof they are not capable. 2. It is such an union as may be made visible to the world. Whence it is an obvious corollary, that the union between the Father and the Son, there spoken of as the pattern of this, is not their union or oneness in essence—though it be a most acknowledged thing, that there is such an essential union between them; for who can conceive that saints should be one among themselves, and with the Father and the Son, with such an union as the Father and the Son are one themselves, if the essential union between Father and Son were the union here spoken of? But the exemplary or pattern-union, here mentioned, between the Father and Son, is but an union in mind, in love, in design, and interest; wherein he prays, that saints on earth might visibly be one with them also, “that the world might believe,” etc.

It is yet a rich pleasure that springs up to glorified saints from that love-union, now perfected, between the blessed God and them. It is mentioned and shadowed in Scripture under the name and notion of marriage-union, in which the greatest mutual complacency is always supposed a necessary ingredient. To be thus “joined to the Lord,”<sup>2</sup> and made as it were one spirit with him; for the eternal God to cleave in love to a nothing-creature, as his likeness upon it engages him to do;—is this no pleasure, or a mean one?

ii. *Communion*: unto which that union is fundamental and introductive; and which follows it upon the same ground, from a natural propensity of like to like. There is nothing

<sup>1</sup> John xvii. 11, 21.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. vi. 16.

now to hinder God and the holy soul of the most inward fruitions and enjoyments; no animosity, no strangeness, no unsuitableness on either part. Here the glorified spirits of the just have liberty to solace themselves amidst the rivers of pleasure at God's own right hand, without check or restraint. They are pure, and these pure. They touch nothing that can defile, they defile nothing they can touch. They are not now forbidden the nearest approaches to the once inaccessible Majesty; there is no holy of holies into which they may not enter, no door locked up against them. They may have free admission into the innermost secret of the Divine presence, and pour forth themselves in the most liberal effusions of love and joy; as they must be the eternal subject of those infinitely richer communications from God, even of immense and boundless love and goodness.

Do not debase this pleasure by low thoughts, nor frame too daring positive apprehensions of it. It is yet a secret to us. The eternal converses of the King of glory with glorified spirits are only known to himself and them. That expression which we so often meet in our way, "It doth not yet appear what we shall be," seems left on purpose to check a too curious and prying inquisitiveness into these unrevealed things. The great God will have his reserves of glory, of love, of pleasure for that future state. Let him alone awhile, with those who are already received into those mansions of glory, those everlasting habitations: he will find a time for those that are yet pilgrims and wandering exiles, to ascend and enter too.

In the meantime, what we know of this communion may be gathered up into this general account, the reciprocation of loves; the flowing and reflowing of everlasting love between the blessed soul and its infinitely blessed God: its egress towards him, his illapses into it.

Unto such pleasure doth this likeness dispose and qualify: you can no way consider it, but it appears a most pleasurable satisfying thing.

Thus far have we shown the qualification for this blessed-

ness, and the nature of it; what it pre-requires, and wherein it lies. And how highly congruous it is, that the former of these should be made a pre-requisite to the latter, will sufficiently appear to any one, that shall, in his own thoughts, compare this righteousness and this blessedness together. He will indeed plainly see that the natural state of the case and habitude of these, each to other, make this connexion unalterable and eternal; so as that it must needs be simply impossible to be *thus* blessed without being *thus* righteous.

For what is this righteousness other than this blessedness begun, the seed and principle of it? And that with as exact proportion, or rather sameness of nature, as is between the grain sown and reaped; which is more than intimated in that of the Apostle, "Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption." There is the same proportion too, "but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting;"<sup>1</sup> which, though it be spoken to a particular case, is yet spoken from a general rule and reason applicable a great deal further.

And as some conceive—and is undertaken to be demonstrated—that the seeds of things are not virtually only, but actually and formally the very things themselves:<sup>2</sup> so is it here also. The very parts of this blessedness are discernible in this righteousness, the future vision of God in *present knowledge* of him; for this knowledge is a real initial part of righteousness; the rectitude of the mind and apprehensions concerning God, consisting in conformity to his revelation of himself: *present holiness* including also the future assimilation to God: and the contentment and peace that attends it, the consequent satisfaction in glory.

But as in glory the impression of the Divine likeness is that which vision subserves and whence satisfaction results; so is it here, visibly, the main thing also. The end and design of the gospel revelation, of whole Christianity,—I

<sup>1</sup> Gal. vi. 7, 8.

<sup>2</sup> Dr. Harv. *de Oro*.

mean systematically considered,—of all evangelical doctrines and knowledge, is to restore God's likeness and image; from whence joy and peace result of course when once the gospel is believed.<sup>1</sup> The gospel is the instrument of impressing God's likeness, in order whereunto it must be understood and received into the mind. Being so, the impression upon the heart and life is Christianity habitual and practical, whereupon joy and pleasure, the belief or thorough reception of the gospel thus intervening, do necessarily ensue.<sup>2</sup>

So aptly is the only way or method of "seeing God's face," so as to be "satisfied with his likeness," said to be in or through "righteousness."

<sup>1</sup> Πῶς οὖν γινόμεθα καθ' ὁμοίωσιν; διὰ τῶν εὐαγγελίων. Τί ἐστὶ χριστιανισμός; θεοῦ ὁμοίωσις: κατὰ τὸ ἐνδεχόμενον ἀνθρώπου φύσει.—Greg. Nyss. *in Verba 'faciamus Hominem,' etc.* Orat. i.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. xv. 13.

## CHAPTER X.

THE SEASON OF THIS SATISFACTION, WHICH IS TWOFOLD ; AT 'DEATH'—  
'RESURRECTION.'—THE FORMER SPOKEN TO ; WHEREIN IS SHOWN THAT  
THIS LIFE IS TO THE SOUL, EVEN OF A SAINT, BUT AS A SLEEP : THAT  
AT DEATH IT AWAKES. — AS TO THE LATTER ; THAT THERE IS A CON-  
SIDERABLE ACCESSION TO ITS HAPPINESS AT THE RESURRECTION.

THIRDLY, the *season* of this blessedness comes next to be considered ; which (as the words "when I awake" have been concluded here to import) must, in the general, be stated beyond the time of this present life.

Holy souls are here truly blessed, not perfectly ; or their present blessedness is perfect only in nature and kind, not in degree. It is, in this respect, as far short of perfection as their holiness is. Their hunger and thirst are present, their being filled is yet future. The experience of saints in their best state on earth, their desires, their hopes, their sighs and groans, do sufficiently witness they are not satisfied ; or if they be in point of security, they are not in point of enjoyment. The completion of this blessedness is reserved to a better state ; as its being the "end of their way," their "rest from their labours," "the reward of their work,"<sup>1</sup> doth import and require. Therefore many scriptures that speak of their present rest, peace, repose, satisfaction, must be understood in a comparative, not the absolute highest sense.

More particularly, in that other state, the season of their

<sup>1</sup> Matt. v. 6.

blessedness is twofold; or there are two terms from whence, in respect of some gradual or modal diversifications, it may be said severally to commence or bear date, namely,—

The time of their *entrance* upon a blessed immortality, when they shall have laid down their earthly bodies in death: of their *consummation* therein, when they receive their bodies glorified in the general resurrection.

Both these may not unfitly be signified by the phrase in the text “when I awake:” for, though Scripture doth more directly apply the term of “awaking” to the latter, there will be no violence done to the metaphor, if we extend its signification to the former also. To which purpose it is to be noted, that it is not death formally, or the disanimating of the body, we would have here to be understood by it— which indeed *sleeping* would more aptly signify than *awaking*—but, what is coincident therewith in the same period, the exuscitation and revival of the soul. When the body falls asleep, then doth the spirit awake; and the eyelids of the morning, even of an eternal day, do now first open upon it.

I. Therefore we shall not exclude from this season the introductive state of blessedness, which takes its beginning from the blessed soul’s first entrance into the invisible state: and the fitness of admitting it will appear by clearing these two things:—

1. That its condition in this life, even at the best, is in some sort but a sleep.

2. That when it passes out of it into the invisible regions, it is truly said to awake.

1. Its abode in this mortal body is but a *continual sleep*; its senses are bound up; a drowsy slumber possesses and suspends all its faculties and powers.

Before the renovating change, how frequently doth the Scripture speak of sinners as men asleep! “Let us not sleep, as do others.” “Awake thou that sleepest, and stand up from the dead,”<sup>1</sup> etc. They are in a dead sleep, under the

<sup>1</sup> 1 Thess. v. 6; Eph. v. 14.



sleep of death : they apprehend things as men asleep. How slight, obscure, hovering notions have they of the most momentous things, and which it most concerns them to have thorough real apprehensions of ! All their thoughts of God, Christ, heaven, hell, of sin, of holiness, are but uncertain wild guesses, blind hallucinations, incoherent fancies ; the absurdity and inconcinnity whereof they no more reflect upon than men asleep. They know not these things, but only dream of them. They put darkness for light, and light for darkness ; have no senses exercised to discern between good and evil. The most substantial realities are with them mere shadows and chimeras ; fancied and imagined dangers startle them,—as it is wont to be with men in a dream ; real ones, though never so near them, they as little fear as *they*. The creature of their own imagination, the “lion in the way” which they dream of in their slothful slumber, affrights them ; but the real roaring lion that is ready to devour them, they are not afraid of.

And conversion doth but relax and intermit, it doth not totally break off this sleep : it, as it were, attenuates the consopiting fumes, doth not utterly dispel them. What a difficulty is it “to watch but one hour !” There are some lucid and vivid intervals, but of how short continuance ! how soon doth the awakened soul close its heavy eyes, and fall asleep again ! how often do temptations surprise even such, in their slumbering fits, while no sense of their danger can prevail with them “to watch and pray,” with due care and constancy, lest they enter thereinto !

Hither are most of the sins of our lives to be imputed and referred ; not to mere ignorance, that we know not sin from duty, or what will please God and what displease him ; but to a drowsy inadvertency, that we keep not our spirits in a watchful considering posture.<sup>1</sup> Our eyes, that should be “ever towards the Lord,” will not be kept open ; and though

<sup>1</sup> So well doth the Apostle’s watchword suit our case, “Awake to righteousness, and sin not,” etc. (1 Cor. xv. 34.)

we resolve, we forget ourselves; before we are aware, we find ourselves overtaken; sleep comes on upon us like an armed man, and we cannot avert it. How often do we hear, and read, and pray, and meditate as persons asleep, as if we knew not what we were about! How remarkable, useful providences escape either our notice or due improvement, amidst our secure slumbers! How many visits from heaven are lost to us, when we are, as it were, between sleeping and waking—"I sleep, but my heart waketh,"<sup>1</sup>—and hardly own the voice that calls upon us, "till our beloved hath withdrawn himself!" Indeed, what is the whole of our life here but a dream? the entire scene of this sensible world but a "vision of the night?" where every man "walks but in a vain show;"<sup>2</sup> where we are mocked with shadows, and our credulous sense abused by impostures and delusive appearances. Nor are we ever secure from the most destructive mischievous deception, further than as our souls are possessed with the apprehensions that this is the very truth of our case; and thence instructed to consider, and not to prefer the shadows of time before the great realities of eternity.

Nor is this sleep casual, but even connatural to our present state, the necessary result of so strict an union and commerce with the body; which is, to the indwelling spirit, as a dormitory or charnel-house rather than a mansion. A soul drenched in sensuality—a Lethe that hath too little of fiction in it—and immured in a slothful putid flesh, sleeps as it were by fate, not by chance, and is only capable of full relief by suffering a dissolution; which it hath reason to welcome as a jubilee, and in the instant of departure to sacrifice, as Seneca did,<sup>3</sup> (with that easy and warrantable change, to make a heathen expression scriptural) *Jehocæ liberatori*, to adore and praise its "great Deliverer:" at least,—accounts being once made up, and a "meetness" in any measure attained for "the heavenly inheritance," etc.,—hath no reason to regret

<sup>1</sup> Cant. v. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. xxxix. 6.

<sup>3</sup> Who at the time of his death sprinkled water upon the servants about him, 'additâ voce, se liquorem illum libare Jovi liberatori.'—Tacit. *Annal.*

or dread the approaches of the eternal day, more than we do the return of the sun after a dark and longsome night. But, as the sluggard doth nothing more unwillingly than forsake his bed; nor bears anything with more regret than to be awaked out of his sweet sleep, though you should entice him with the pleasures of a paradise to quit a smoky loathsome cottage; so fares it with the sluggish soul, as if it were lodged in an enchanted bed: it is so fast held by the charms of the body, all the glory of the other world is little enough to tempt it out; than which there is not a more deplorable symptom of this sluggish slumbering state. So deep an oblivion, which you know is also naturally incident to sleep, hath seized it of its own country, of its alliances above, its relation to the Father and world of spirits,—it takes this earth for its home, where it is both in exile and captivity at once: and, as a prince, stolen away in his infancy, and bred up in a beggar's shed, so little *seeks*, that it *declines*, a better state. This is the degenerate, torpid disposition of a soul lost in flesh and enwrapped in stupifying clay; which hath been deeply resented by some heathens. So one brings in Socrates pathetically bewailing this oblivious dreaming temper of his soul, 'which,' saith he, 'had seen that pulchritude' (you must pardon him here the conceit of its pre-existence) 'that neither human voice could utter, nor eye behold: but that now, in this life, it had only some little remembrance thereof, as in a dream; being both in respect of place and condition, far removed from so pleasant sights, pressed down into an earthly station, and there encompassed with all manner of dirt and filthiness,' etc.

And to the same purpose Plato often speaks in the name of the same person; and particularly of the 'winged state' of the good soul when apart from the body, carried in its triumphant flying chariot<sup>1</sup>—of which he gives a large description, somewhat resembling Solomon's rapturous metaphor, "Before I was aware, my soul made me as the chariots of Amminadib:"<sup>2</sup>—but being in the body, it is with it as with

<sup>1</sup> πτέρωμα. In Phædro.

<sup>2</sup> Cant. vi. 12.

a bird that hath lost its wings,—it falls a sluggish weight to the earth.

Which indeed is the state even of the best, in a degree, within this tabernacle. A sleepy torpor stops their flight; they can fall, but not ascend; the remains of such drowsiness do still hang even about saints themselves. The Apostle therefore calls upon such to “awake out of sleep;”<sup>1</sup> from that consideration—as we know men are not wont to sleep so intensely towards morning—“that now their salvation was nearer than when they believed;” that is, as some judicious interpreters<sup>2</sup> understand that place, for that they were nearer death and eternity than when they first became Christians; though this passage be also otherwise, and not improbably, interpreted. However,—

2. The holy soul’s *release and dismissal* from its earthly body, which is that we propounded next to be considered, will excuss and shake off this drowsy sleep. Now is the happy season of its awaking into the heavenly vital light of God; the blessed morning of that long-desired day is now dawned upon it; the cumbersome night-veil is laid aside, and the garments of salvation and immortal glory are now put on. It hath passed through the trouble and darkness of a wearisome night, and now is joy arrived with the morning,—as we may be permitted to allude to those words of the Psalmist,<sup>3</sup> though that be not supposed to be the peculiar sense.

I conceive myself here not concerned operosely to insist in proving, that the souls of saints sleep not in the interval between death and the general resurrection, but enjoy present blessedness: it being beside the design of a practical discourse, which rather intends the propounding and improvement of things acknowledged and agreed, for the advantage and benefit of them with whom they are so, than the discussing of things dubious and controversible. And what I here propound in order to a consequent improvement and application, should methinks pass for an acknowledged

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xiii. 11.

<sup>2</sup> Aretius, Beza, etc.

<sup>3</sup> Ps. xxx. 5.

truth among them that professedly believe and seriously read and consider the Bible;—for mere philosophers that do not come into this account, it were impertinent to discourse with them from a text of Scripture;—and where my design only obliges me to intend the handling of that, and to deliver from it what may fitly be supposed to have its ground there; unless their allegations did carry with them the show of demonstrating the simple impossibility of what is asserted thence to the power of that God whose word we take it to be; which I have not found anything they say to amount to. That we have reason to presume it an acknowledged thing among them that will be concluded by Scripture, *that the soul doth not sleep when it ceases to animate its earthly body*, many plain texts do evince, which are amassed together by the Reverend Mr. Baxter;<sup>1</sup> some of the principal whereof I would invite any that waver in this matter, seriously to consider: as the words of our Saviour to the thief on the cross, “This day shalt thou be with me in paradise;”<sup>2</sup> that of the Apostle, “We are willing rather to be absent from the body, and present with the Lord;”<sup>3</sup> and that, “I am in a strait, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ;”<sup>4</sup> that passage, “The spirits of just men made perfect,”<sup>5</sup> etc.; which are expressions so clear, that it is hard for an industrious caviller to find what to except to them;<sup>6</sup> and

<sup>1</sup> In his ‘Saints’ Rest,’ p. 2, c. x.

<sup>2</sup> Luke xxiii. 43.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Cor. v. 8.

<sup>4</sup> Phil. i. 23.

<sup>5</sup> Heb. xii. 23.

<sup>6</sup> It is true, that divers of the Fathers and others have spoken, some dubiously, some very diminishingly, of the blessedness of separate souls; many of whose words may be seen together in that elaborate tractate of the learned Parker, *De Descens.* lib. ii. p. 77: yea, and his own assertion in that very page (be it spoken with reverence to the memory of so worthy a person) argues something gross, and, I conceive, unwarrantable thoughts of the soul’s dependence on a body of earth. His words are *tertium vulnus* (speaking of the prejudices the soul receives by its separation from the body) *omnes operationes etiam suas, quæ sunt præsertim ad extrâ, extinguit*: where he makes it a difficulty to allow it any operations at all, as appears by the *præsertim* inserted. He first indeed denies it all operations, and then, more confidently and especially, those *ad extrâ*. And if he would be understood to exclude it only from its operations *ad extrâ* (if he take operations *ad extrâ*

indeed the very exceptions that are put in, are so frivolous, that they carry a plain confession there is nothing colourable to be said.

as that phrase is wont to be taken) he must then mean by it, all such operations as have their *objects*, not only those that have their *terms to which*, without the agent; that is, not only all transient, but all immanent acts that have their objects without them. As when we say, all God's acts *ad extrâ* are free; we mean it even of his immanent acts that have their objects without him, though they do not *ponere terminum extrâ Deum*; as his election, his love of the elect. And so he must be understood to deny the separate souls (and that with a *præsertim* too) the operations of knowing God, of loving him, and delighting in him; which are all operations *ad extrâ*, as having their objects *extrâ animam*, though their *terminus ad quem* be not so; which makes the condition of the separate souls of saints unspeakably inferior to what it was in the body; and what should occasion so dismal thoughts of that state of separation, I see not. Scripture gives no ground for them, but, evidently enough, speaks the contrary. Reason and philosophy offer nothing that can render the sense we put upon the forementioned plain Scripture, self-contradictions or impossible. Yea, such as had no other light or guide have thought the facility of the soul's operations, being separate from its earthly body, much greater by that very separation. And upon this score doth St. Augustine, with great indignation, inveigh against the philosophers, Plato more especially, because they judged the separation of the soul from the body necessary to its blessedness. 'Quia videlicet ejus perfectam beatitudinem tunc illi fieri existimant cum omni prorsus corpore exuta, ad Deum simplex, et sola et quodammodo nuda redierit.'<sup>1</sup> Unto which purpose the words of Philolaus Pythagoricus, of Plato, of Porphyrius, are cited by Ludovicus Vives, in his comment upon that above-mentioned passage: the first speaking thus . . . 'Deposito corpore hominem Deum immortalem fieri:' the second thus . . . 'Trahi nos à corpore ad ima, et à cogitatione superarum rerum subinde revocari: ideo relinquendum corpus, et hîc quantum possumus et in alterâ vitâ prorsum, ut liberi et expediti, verum ipsi videamus et optimum amemus.' The third denies . . . 'Aliter fieri beatum quenquam posse, nisi relinquat corpus et affigatur Deo.' I conceive it by the way not improbable, that the severity of that pious Father against that dogma of the philosophers, might proceed upon this ground, that what they said of the impossibility of being happy in *an earthly body*, he understood meant by them of an impossibility to be happy in *any body at all*; when it is evidently the common opinion of the Platonists, that the soul is always united with some body or other, and that even the *demons* have bodies, ærial or ethereal ones; which Plato himself is observed by St. Augustine to affirm, whence he would fasten a contradiction on him;<sup>2</sup> not considering, it is likely, that he would much less have made a

<sup>1</sup> *De Civit. Dei*, l. xiii. c. 16.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

Yea, and most evident it is from those texts, not only that holy souls sleep not in that state of separation, but that they are awaked by it, as out of a former sleep into a much more

difficulty, to concede such bodies also to human souls after they had lost their terrestrial ones, as his sectators do not; who hold, they then presently become *dæmons*.

In the meantime it is evident enough, the doctrine of the separate soul's present blessedness is not destitute of the patronage and suffrage of philosophers: and it is indeed the known opinion of as many of them as ever held its immortality—which all of all ages and nations have done, a very few excepted;—for inasmuch as they knew nothing of the resurrection of the body, they could not dream of a *sleeping interval*.

And it is at least a shrewd presumption that nothing in reason lies against it, when no one instance can be given among them that professedly gave up themselves to its only guidance, of any one that, granting the immortality of the soul, and its separableness from its terrestrial body, ever denied the immediate blessedness of good souls in that state of separation. Nor, if we look into the thing itself, is it at all more unapprehensible that the soul should be independent on the body in its operations, than in its existence?

If it be possible enough to form an unexceptionable notion of a spiritual being distinct and separable from any corporeal substance (which the learned Dr. More hath sufficiently demonstrated in his treatise of the Immortality of the Soul), with its proper attributes and powers peculiar to itself; what can reasonably withhold me from asserting, that being separate from the body, it may as well operate alone, (I mean exert such operations as are proper to such a being,) as exist alone? That we find it here, *de facto*, in its present state, acting only with dependence on a body, will no more infer, that it can act no otherwise, than its present existence in a body will, that it can never exist out of it; neither whereof amounts to more than the trifling exploded argument *à non esse ad non posse*, and would be as good sense as to say, 'Such a one walks in his clothes; therefore out of them he cannot move a foot.'

Yea, and the very *use* itself which the soul now makes of corporeal organs and instruments, plainly evidences, that it doth exert some action wherein they assist it not. For it supposes an operation *upon them* antecedent to any operation *by them*. Nothing can be the *instrument*, which is not first the *subject* of my action; as when I use a pen, I act *upon* it in order to my action *by* it,—that is, I impress a motion upon it, in order whereunto I use not that or any other such instrument: and though I cannot produce the designed effect,—leave such characters so and so figured,—without it; my hand can yet, without it, perform its own action, proper to itself, and produce many nobler effects. When therefore the soul makes use of a bodily organ, its action *upon* it must needs at last be without the ministry of any organ, unless you multiply to it body upon body, *in infinitum*.

And if, possibly, it perform not some meaner and grosser pieces of drudgery when out of the body, wherein it made use of its help and service before;

lively and vigorous activity than they enjoyed before; and translated into a state as much better than their former, as the tortures of a cross are more ungrateful than the pleasures

that is no more a disparagement or diminution, than it is to the magistrate, that law and decency permit him not to apprehend or execute a malefactor with his own hand. It may yet perform those operations which are proper to itself; that is, such as are more noble and excellent, and immediately conducive to its own felicity.

Which sort of actions, as *cogitation*, for instance, and *dilection*, though being done in the body, there is conjunct with them an agitation of the spirits in the brain and heart; it yet seems to me more reasonable, that as to those acts the spirits are rather subjects than instruments at all of them; that the whole essence of these acts is antecedent to the motion of the spirits, and that motion *certainly* (but *accidentally*) consequent only by reason of the *present*, but *soluble* union the soul hath with the body: and that the purity and refinedness of those spirits doth only remove what would hinder such acts, rather than contribute positively thereto. And so little is the alliance between a thought and any bodily thing, even those very finest spirits themselves; that I dare say, whoever sets himself closely and strictly to consider and debate the matter with his own faculties, will find it much more easily apprehensible, how the acts of intellection and volition may be performed *without* those very corporeal spirits, than *by* them. However, suppose them never so indispensably necessary to those more noble operations of the soul, it may easily be furnished with them, and in greater plenty and purity, from the ambient air (or ether) than from a dull torpid body; with some part of which air, if we suppose it to contract a vital union, I know no rational principle that is wronged by the supposition, though neither do I know any that can necessarily infer it.

As therefore the doctrine of the soul's activity out of this earthly body, hath favour and friendship enough from philosophers; so I doubt not, but upon the most strict and rigid disquisition, it would be as much befriended, or rather righted, by philosophy itself; and that their reason would afford it as direct and more considerable defence than their authority.

In the meantime, it deserves to be considered with some resentment, that this doctrine should find the generality of learned Pagans more forward advocates than some learned and worthy patrons of the Christian faith; which is only imputable to the undue measure and excess of an otherwise just zeal, in these latter, *for the resurrection of the body*; so far transporting them, that they became willing to let go one truth, that they might hold another the faster; and to ransom this at the too dear (and unnecessary) expense of the former: accounting, they could never make sure enough the resurrection of the body, without making the soul's dependence on it so absolute and necessary, that it should be able to do nothing but sleep in the meanwhile. Whereas it seems a great deal more unconceivable, how such

being as the soul is, once quit of the entanglements and encumbrances of the body, *should sleep at all*, than how it should *act without the body*.



of a paradise, these joys fuller of vitality than those sickly, dying faintings; as the immediate presence and close embraces of the Lord of life are more delectable than a mournful, disconsolate absence from him; which the Apostle therefore tells us he desired "as far better," and with an emphasis which our English too faintly expresses; for he uses a double comparative, πολλῆ μᾶλλον κρείσσον, "by much more better;" and as a perfected, that is, a crowned triumphant spirit, that hath attained the end of its race (as the words import in the agonistical notion<sup>1</sup>), is now in a more vivid joyous state than when, lately toiling in a tiresome way, it languished under many imperfections. And it is observable that in the three former scriptures that phrase of "being with Christ," or, "being present with him," is the same which is used by the Apostle,<sup>2</sup> to express the state of blessedness after the resurrection: intimating plainly the sameness of the blessedness before and after. And though this phrase be also used to signify the present enjoyment saints have of God's gracious presence in this life, which is also in nature and kind the same; yet it is plainly used in these scriptures, the two latter more especially, to set out to us such a degree of that blessedness, that, in comparison thereof, our present being with Christ is a not being with him; our presence with him now, an absence from him: "while we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord," and "I am in a strait betwixt two, desiring to depart"—or having a desire unto dissolution—"and to be with Christ," etc. How strangely mistaken and disappointed had the blessed Apostle been, had his absence from the body, his dissolution, his release, set him further off from Christ, or made him less capable of converse with him than before he was! And how absurd would it be to say, the "spirits of the just are perfected," by being cast into a stupifying sleep; yea, or being put into any state not better than they were in before. But their state is evidently far

<sup>1</sup> See Dr. Hammond's Annot. in loc.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Thess. iv. 17.

better. The body of death is now laid aside, and the weights of sin that did so easily beset are shaken off; flesh and sin are laid down together; the soul is rid of its burthensome bands and shackles, hath quitted its filthy darksome prison, the usual place of laziness and sloth; is come forth of its drowsy dormitory, and the glory of God is risen upon it. It is now come into the world of realities, where things appear as they are; no longer as in a dream or vision of the night. The vital, quickening beams of Divine light are darting in upon it on every side, and turning it into their own likeness. The shadows of the evening are vanished, and fled away. It converses with no other objects but what are full themselves, and most apt to replenish it with energy and life. This cannot be but a joyful awaking, a blessed season of satisfaction and delight indeed, to the enlightened revived soul. But,

II. It must be acknowledged the further and more eminent season of this blessedness will be the general resurrection-day, which is more expressly signified in Scripture by this term of "awaking;" as is manifest in many plain texts, where it is either expressly thus used, or implied to have this meaning in the opposite sense of the word "sleep."<sup>1</sup>

What addition shall then be made to the saint's blessedness lies more remote from our apprehension, inasmuch as Scripture states not the degree of that blessedness which shall intervene. We know, by a too sad instructive experience, the calamities of our present state; and can therefore more easily conceive wherein it is capable of betterment, by the deposition of a sluggish cumbersome body, where those calamities mostly have their spring: but then we know less where to fix our foot or whence to take our rise, in estimating the additional felicities of that future state, when both the states to be compared are so unknown to us.

But that there will be great additions, is plain enough. The full recompense of obedience and devotedness to Christ,

<sup>1</sup> Dan. xii. 2; John xi. 11—13; 1 Cor. xv. ; 1 Thess. iv., etc.

of foregoing all for him, is affixed by his promise "to the resurrection of the just;" the judgment-day gives every one his portion "according to his works." Then must the holy, obedient Christian hear from his Redeemer's mouth, "Come, ye blessed of the Father, inherit the kingdom," etc. Till then the devils think their "torment to be before their time." It is "when He shall appear, we shall be like Him, and see him as He is." That noted day is the day of "being presented faultless with exceeding joy."

And divers things there are obviously enough to be reflected on, which cannot but be understood to contribute much to the increase and improvement of this inchoate blessedness.

*The acquisition of a glorified body.* For our vile bodies shall be so far transfigured, as to "be made like,"<sup>1</sup> conform to, "the glorious body," of the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ. And this shall be when he shall appear "from heaven," where saints here below are required to have their commerce as the enfranchised citizens thereof, and from whence they are to continue looking for him in the meantime. When he terminates and puts a period to that expectation of his saints on earth, then shall that great change be made, that is, when he actually appears; at which time the "trumpet sounds,"<sup>2</sup> and even sleeping dust itself awakes; the hallowed dust of them that slept in Jesus first, who are then to come with him. This change may well be conceived to add considerably to their felicity; and natural congruity and appetite is now answered and satisfied, which did either lie dormant, or was under somewhat an anxious, restless expectation before; neither of which could well consist with a state of blessedness every way already perfect. And that there is a real desire and expectation of this change, seems to be plainly intimated in those words of Job: "All the days of my appointed time will I wait till my change come:"<sup>3</sup> where he must rather be understood to speak of the resurrection than

<sup>1</sup> Μετασχηματίζει, σύμμορφον. Phil. iii. 20, 21.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Thess. iv. 14—16.

<sup>3</sup> Chap. xiv. 14.

of death, as his words are commonly mistaken and misapplied; as will appear by setting down the context from the seventh verse: "For there is hope of a tree, if it be cut down, that it will sprout again, and that the tender branch thereof will not cease. Though the root thereof wax old in the earth, and the stock thereof die in the ground: yet through the scent of water, it will bud and bring forth boughs like a plant. But man dieth and wasteth away; yea, man giveth up the ghost, and where is he? As the waters fail from the sea, and the flood decayeth and dryeth up; so man lieth down, and riseth not till the heavens be no more: they shall not be awaked nor raised out of their sleep. O that thou wouldest hide me in the grave, that thou wouldest keep me secret till thy wrath be past, that thou wouldest appoint me a set time, and remember me! If a man die, shall he live again? All the days of my appointed time will I wait till my change come. Thou shalt call, and I will answer thee; thou wilt have a desire to the work of thy hands." He first speaks according to common apprehension and sensible appearance, touching the hopeless state of man in death—as though it were less capable of reparation than that of some inferior creatures—unto the end of verse 10; and then gradually discovers his better hope; bewrays his faith, as it were obliquely, touching this point; lets it break out, first, in some obscure glimmerings, verses 11, 12, giving us, in his protasis, a similitude not fully expressive of his seeming meaning, for waters and floods that fail may be renewed; and in his apodosis, more openly intimating man's sleep should be only till "the heavens were no more:" which "till" might be supposed to signify "never," were it not for what follows, verse 13, where he expressly speaks his confidence by way of petition that at a set and appointed time "God would remember him," so as to recall him out of the grave: and at last, being now minded to speak out more fully, puts the question to himself, "If a man die, shall he live again?" and answers it, "All the days of my appointed time," that is, of that appointed time which he mentioned

before, when God should revive him out of the dust, "will I wait till my change come;" that is, that glorious change when the corruption of a loathsome grave should be exchanged for immortal glory: which he amplifies and utters more expressly, verse 15: "Thou shalt call, and I will answer; thou wilt have a desire to the work of thy hands:" thou wilt not always forget to restore and perfect thy own creature.

And surely that "waiting" is not the act of his inanimate sleeping dust: but though it be spoken of the person totally gone into Hades, into the invisible state, it is to be understood of that part that should be capable of such an action; as much as to say, 'I, in that part that shall still be alive, shall patiently wait thy appointed time of reviving me in that part also which death and the grave shall insult over, in a temporary triumph, in the meantime.' And so will the words carry a facile commodious sense, without the unnecessary help of an imagined rhetorical scheme of speech. And then, that this "waiting" carries in it a desirous expectation of some additional good, is evident at first sight: which therefore must needs add to the satisfaction and blessedness of the expecting soul. And wherein it may do so, is not altogether unapprehensible. Admit that a spirit, had it never been embodied, might be as well without a body, or that it might be as well provided of a body out of other materials; it is no unreasonable supposition, that a connate aptitude to a body should render human souls more happy in a body sufficiently attuned to their most noble operations. And how much doth relation and propriety endear things, otherwise mean and inconsiderable! Or why should it be thought strange, that a soul connaturalized to matter should be more particularly inclined to a particular portion thereof, so as that it should appropriate such a part, and say, 'It is mine?' And will it not be a pleasure to have a vitality diffused through what even more remotely appertains to me? to have everything belonging to the *suppositum* perfectly vindicated from the tyrannous dominion of death? The returning of the spirits into a benumbed or sleeping toe or

finger adds a contentment to a man which he wanted before. Nor is it hence necessary the soul should covet a reunion with every effluvious particle of its former body: a desire implanted by God in a reasonable soul will aim at what is convenient, not what shall be cumbersome or monstrous.

And how pleasant will it be to contemplate and admire the wisdom and power of the great Creator in this so glorious a change, when I shall find a clod of earth, a heap of dust, refined into a celestial purity and brightness! when what "was sown in corruption shall be raised in incorruption; what was sown in dishonour, is raised in glory; what was sown in weakness, is raised in power; what was sown a natural body, is raised a spiritual body;" when this "corruptible shall have put on incorruption," and "this mortal, immortality," and "death be wholly swallowed up in victory."<sup>1</sup> So that this "awaking" may well be understood to carry that in it, which may bespeak it the proper season of the saint's consummate satisfaction and blessedness. But besides what it carries in itself, there are other, more extrinsical concurrents that do further signalize this season, and import a greater increase of blessedness than to God's holy ones.

The body of Christ is now completed, "the fulness of him that filleth all in all," and all the so nearly related parts cannot but partake in the perfection and reflected glory of the whole. There is joy in heaven at the conversion of one sinner, though he have a troublesome scene yet to pass over afterwards in a tempting, wicked, unquiet world; how much more "when the many sons shall be all brought to glory" together!

The designs are all now accomplished and wound up into the most glorious result and issue, whereof the Divine Providence had been, as in travail, for so many thousand years. It is now seen how exquisite wisdom governed the world, and how steady a tendency the most intricate and perplexed methods of Providence had to one stated and most worthy end.

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xv.

Specially, the constitution, administration, and ends of the Mediator's kingdom, are now beheld in their exact aptitudes, order, and conspicuous glory; when so blessed an issue and success shall commend and crown the whole undertaking.

The Divine authority is now universally acknowledged and adored; his justice is vindicated and satisfied; his grace demonstrated and magnified to the uttermost; the whole assembly of saints solemnly acquitted by public sentence, presented spotless and without blemish to God, and adjudged to eternal blessedness. It is the day of solemn triumph and jubilation, upon the finishing of all God's works from the creation of the world, wherein the Lord Jesus "appears to be glorified in his saints, and admired in all that believe:"<sup>1</sup> upon which ensues the resignation of the Mediator's kingdom,<sup>2</sup> (all the ends of it being now attained), that the Father himself may be immediately "all in all." How aptly then are the fuller manifestations of God, the more glorious display of all his attributes, the larger and more abundant effusions of himself, reserved, as the best wine to the last, unto this joyful day! Created perfections could not have been before so absolute, but they might admit of improvement; their capacities not so large, but they might be extended further; and then who can doubt but that Divine communications may also have a proportionable increase, and that upon the concurrence of so many great occasions they shall have so?

<sup>1</sup> 1 Thess. i.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. xv.

## CHAPTER XI.

AN INTRODUCTION TO THE USE OF THE DOCTRINE HITHERTO PROPOSED.—  
THE 'USE' DIVIDED INTO 'INFERENCES OF TRUTH'—'RULES OF DUTY.'—  
I. INFERENCE, THAT BLESSEDNESS CONSISTS NOT IN ANY SENSUAL ENJOY-  
MENT.—II. INFERENCE, THE SPIRIT OF MAN, SINCE IT IS CAPABLE OF SO  
HIGH A BLESSEDNESS, IS A BEING OF HIGH EXCELLENCY.

*Use.* And now is our greatest work yet behind; the improvement of so momentous a truth, to the affecting and transforming of hearts; that, if the Lord shall so far vouchsafe his assistance and blessing, they may taste the sweetness, feel the power, and bear the impress and image of it. This is the work, both of greatest necessity, difficulty, and excellency, and unto which all that hath been done hitherto is but subservient and introductive. Give me leave therefore, reader, to stop thee here, and demand of thee ere thou go further; hast thou any design in turning over these leaves, of bettering thy spirit, of getting a more refined heavenly temper of soul? Art thou weary of thy dross and earth, and longing for the first-fruits, the beginnings of glory? Dost thou wish for a soul meet for the blessedness hitherto described? What is here written is designed for thy help and furtherance. But if thou art looking on these pages with a wanton rolling eye, hunting for novelties, or what may gratify a prurient wit, a coy and squeamish fancy, go read a romance or some piece of drollery; know here is nothing for thy turn; and dread to meddle with matters of everlasting concernment without a serious spirit;<sup>1</sup> read not

<sup>1</sup> Dissoluti est pectoris in rebus seriis quærere voluptatem.—Arnob.



another line till thou have sighed out this request, 'Lord, keep me from trifling with the things of eternity.' Charge thy soul to consider, that what thou art now reading must be added to thy account against the great day. It is amazing to think with what vanity of mind the most weighty things of religion are entertained amongst Christians. Things that should swallow up our souls, drink up our spirits, are heard as "a tale that is told," disregarded by most, scorned by too many. What can be spoken so important, or of so tremendous consequence, or of so confessed truth, or with so awful solemnity and premised mention of the sacred name of the Lord, as not to find either a very slight entertainment or contemptuous rejection, and this by persons avowing themselves Christians? We seem to have little or no advantage in urging men upon their own principles, and with things they most readily and professedly assent to. Their hearts are as much untouched and void of impression by the Christian doctrine, as if they were of another religion. How unlike is the Christian world to the Christian doctrine! The seal is fair and excellent, but the impression is languid or not visible. Where is that serious godliness, that heavenliness, that purity, that spirituality, that righteousness, that peace, unto which the Christian religion is most aptly designed to work and form the spirits of men? We think to be saved by an empty name; and glory in the show and appearance of that, the life and power whereof we hate and deride. It is a reproach with us not to be *called* a Christian, and a greater reproach to *be* one. If such and such doctrines obtain not in our professed belief, we are heretics or infidels; if they do in our practice, we are precisians and fools. To be so serious and circumspect and strict and holy, to make the practice of godliness so much our business as the known and avowed principles of our religion do plainly exact from us (yea, though we come, as we cannot but do, unspeakably short of that required measure), is to make oneself a common derision and scorn. Not to be professedly religious is barbarous; to be so in good earnest, ridiculous. In other things men are

went to act and practise according to the known rules of their several callings and professions, and he would be reckoned the common fool of the neighbourhood that should not do so; —the husbandman that should sow when others reap, or contrive his harvest into the depth of winter, or sow fitches and expect to reap wheat; the merchant that should venture abroad his most precious commodities in a leaky bottom, without pilot or compass, or to places not likely to afford him any valuable return. In religion only it must be accounted absurd to be and do according to its known, agreed principles, and he a fool that shall but practise as all about him profess to believe! Lord! whence is this apprehended inconsistency between the profession and practice of religion? what hath thus stupified and unmanned the world? that seriousness in religion should be thought the character of a fool? that men must visibly make a mockery of the most fundamental articles of faith only to save their reputation, and be afraid to be serious, lest they should be thought mad? Were the doctrine here opened believed in earnest; were the due proper impress of it upon our spirits, or, as the pagan moralist's expression is, were our minds 'transfigured into it;'<sup>1</sup> "what manner of persons should we be in all holy conversation and godliness?"

But it is thought enough to have it in our creed, though never in our hearts; and such as will not *deride* the holiness it should produce, yet endeavour it not, nor go about to apply and urge truths upon their own souls to any such purpose. What should turn into grace and spirit and life turns all into notion and talk, and men think all is well if their heads be filled and their tongues tipped, with what should transform their souls and govern their lives. How are the most awful truths, and that should have greatest power upon men's spirits, trifled with as matters only of speculation and discourse! They are heard but as empty airy words, and presently evaporate, pass away into words again; like food,

<sup>1</sup> Scientiam qui didicit, et facienda et vitanda præcepit, nondum sapiens est, nisi in ea quæ didicit transfiguratus est animus.—Sen. *Ep.* 94.

as Seneca speaks, ‘that comes up presently the same that it was taken in; which,’ as he saith, ‘profits not, nor makes any accession to the body at all.’<sup>1</sup> ‘A like case,’ as another ingeniously speaks, ‘as if sheep, when they had been feeding, should present their shepherds with the very grass itself which they had cropped, and show how much they had eaten. No,’ saith he, ‘they concoct it, and so yield them wool and milk. And so,’ saith he, ‘do not you’ (namely, when you have been instructed) ‘presently go and utter words among the more ignorant,’—meaning they should not do so in a way of ostentation, to show how much they knew more than others,—‘but works that follow upon the concoction of what hath been by words made known to them.’<sup>2</sup> Let Christians be ashamed that they need this instruction from heathen teachers.

“Thy words were found, and I did eat them,” saith the prophet; “and thy word was to me the joy and rejoicing of my heart.” Divine truth is only so far at present grateful, or useful for future, as it is received by faith and consideration, and in the love thereof, into the very heart, and there turned *in succum et sanguinem*—into real nutriment to the soul: so shall man live by the word of God. Hence is the application of it, both personal and ministerial, of so great necessity.

If the truths of the gospel were of the same alloy with some parts of philosophy, whose end is attained as soon as they are known; if the Scripture doctrine, the whole entire system of it, were not a doctrine after godliness; if it were not designed to sanctify and make men holy; or if the hearts of men did not reluctate; were easily receptive of its impressions; our work were as soon done, as such a doctrine were nakedly proposed. But the state of the case in these respects

<sup>1</sup> Non prodest cibus, nec corpori accedit, qui statim sumptus emittitur.—Sen. *Epist.*

<sup>2</sup> Ἐπεὶ καὶ τὰ πρόβατα, οὐ χορτὸν φέροντα τοῖς ποιμέσιν ἐπιδεικνύει πόσον ἔφαγεν, ἀλλὰ τὴν νομὴν ἔσω πέψαντα, ἔριον ἔξω φέρει καὶ γάλα. καὶ σύ τοίνυν, μὴ ταχέως ῥήματα τοῖς ἰδιώταις ἐπιδείκνυε, ἀλλὰ ἀπ’ αὐτῶν πεφθέντων τὰ ἔργα.—Epictet.

is known and evident. The tenor and aspect of gospel truth speaks its end; and experience too plainly speaks the oppositeness of men's spirits. All, therefore, we read and hear is lost if it be not urgently applied. The Lord grant it be not then too.

Therefore, reader, let thy mind and heart concur in the following improvement of this doctrine, which will be wholly comprehended under these two heads :

*Inferences of Truth, and Rules of Duty*, that are consequent and connatural thereto.

I. Inferences of truth deducible from it.

I. Inf. True blessedness consists not in any sensual enjoyment. The blessedness of a man can be but one, most only one. He can have but one highest and best good: and its proper character is, that it finally satisfies and gives rest to his spirit. This the face and likeness of God doth,—His glory beheld and participated. Here then alone his full blessedness must be understood to lie.

Therefore as this might other ways be evinced to be true, so it evidently appears to be the proper issue of the *present* truth, and is plainly proved by it. But alas! it needs a great deal more to be pressed than proved. Oh that it were but as much considered as it is known! The experience of almost six thousand years hath (one would think sufficiently) testified the incompetency of every worldly thing to make men happy; that the present pleasing of our senses and the gratification of our animal part is not blessedness; that men are still left unsatisfied notwithstanding. But the practice and course of the world is such, as if this were some late and rare experiment; which, for curiosity, every one must be trying over again. Every age renews the inquiry after an earthly felicity; the design is entailed—as the Spanish designs are said to be,—and reinforced with as great a confidence and vigour from age to age, as if none had been baffled or defeated in it before; or that it were very likely to take at last. Had this been the alone folly of the first age, it had admitted some excuse; but that the world should still be

cheated by the same so oft repeated impostures, presents us with a sad prospect of the deplorable state of mankind. "This their way is their folly, yet their posterity approve,"<sup>1</sup> etc. The wearied wits and wasted estates laid out upon the philosopher's stone, afford but a faint, defective representation of this case. What chemistry can extract heaven out of a clod of clay? What art can make blessedness spring and grow out of this cold earth? If all created nature be vexed and tortured never so long, who can expect this elixir? Yet after so many frustrated attempts, so much time, and strength, and labour lost, men are still as eagerly and vainly busy as ever; are perpetually tossed by unsatisfied desires, "labouring in the fire," wearying themselves for very vanity, distracted by the uncertain and often contrary motions of a ravenous appetite and a blind mind, that would be happy and knows not how. With what sounding bowels, with what compassionate tears should the state of mankind be lamented by all that understand the worth of a soul? What serious heart doth not melt and bleed for miserable men, that are through a just *nemesis*<sup>2</sup> so perpetually mocked with shadows, cheated with false delusive appearances, infatuated and betrayed by their own senses? They "walk" but "in a vain show, disquieting themselves in vain;" their days flee away as a shadow; their strength is only labour and sorrow; while they rise up early and lie down late, to seek rest in trouble, and life in death. They run away from blessedness while they pretend to pursue it, and suffer themselves to be led down without regret to perdition, "as an ox to the slaughter, and a fool to the correction of the stocks, till a dart strike through their liver:"<sup>3</sup> descend patiently to the chambers of death, not so much as once thinking, 'whither are we going?' dream of nothing but an earthly paradise, till they find themselves amidst the infernal regions.

<sup>1</sup> Ps. xlix.

<sup>2</sup> *Ira Dei est ista vita mortalis, ubi homo vanitati similis factus est, et dies ejus velut umbra prætereunt, etc.*—Aug. *de Civ. Dei*, l. xxii. c. 24.

<sup>3</sup> Prov. vii. 23.

2. Inf. The spirit of man inasmuch as it is capable of such a blessedness, appears an excellent creature.<sup>1</sup> Its natural capacity is supposed; for the Psalmist speaks of his own numerical person, the same that then writ: "I shall behold; shall be satisfied." Take away this *suppositum*, and it could not be so said: or as in Job's words; "I shall behold him, and not another for me;" it would certainly be another, not the same. Judge hence the excellency of a human soul,—the principal subject of this blessedness: without addition of any new natural powers, it is capable of the vision of God, of partaking unto satisfaction the Divine likeness. And is not that an excellent creature, that is capable not only of surveying the creation of God, passing through the several ranks and orders of created beings, but of ascending to the Being of beings, of contemplating the Divine excellencies, of beholding the bright and glorious face of the blessed God himself; till it have looked itself into his very likeness, and have his entire image inwrought into it?

The dignity then of the spirit of man is not to be estimated by the circumstances of its present state, as it is here clad with a sordid flesh, enwrapped in darkness, and grovelling in the dust of the earth; but consider the improvableness of its natural powers and faculties, the high perfections it may attain, and the foundations of how glorious a state are laid in its very nature; and then, who can tell whether its possible advancement is more to be admired or its present calamity deplored? Might this consideration be permitted to settle and fix itself in the hearts of men,—could anything be so grievous to them as their so vast distance from such an attainable blessedness; or anything be so industriously

<sup>1</sup> Not that this blessedness can be attained by mere human endeavours (more whereof see under the next inference), but there is an inclination, a certain *pondus naturæ*, as some Schoolmen speak, by which it propends towards it; or there is the *radix*, or *fundamentum*, or *capacitas*, as some others; that is, that it not only may receive it, but that it may be elevated by grace, *actively* to concur, by its natural powers, as vital principles towards the attainment of it, according to that known saying of St. Augustine, 'Posse credere naturæ est hominis,' etc.

avoided, so earnestly abhorred, as that viler dejection and abasement of themselves, when they are so low already by Divine disposition, to descend lower by their own wickedness; when they are already fallen as low as earth, to precipitate themselves as low as hell? How generous a disdain should that thought raise in men's spirits, of that vile servitude to which they have subjected themselves,—a servitude to brutal lusts, to sensual inclinations and desires; as if the highest happiness they did project to themselves were the satisfaction of these! Would they not with an heroic scorn “turn away their eyes from beholding vanity,” did they consider their own capacity of beholding the Divine glory? could they satisfy themselves to become “like the beasts that perish,”<sup>1</sup> did they think of being satisfied with the likeness of God? And who can conceive unto what degree this aggravates the *sin* of man, that he so little minds,—as it will their *miser*y, that shall fall short of,—this blessedness! They had spirits capable of it. Consider, thou sensual man whose happiness lies in colours, and tastes, and sounds (as the moralist ingeniously speaks),—that herdest thyself with brute creatures and aimest no higher than they: as little lookest up, and art as much a stranger to the thoughts and desires of heaven: thy creation did not set thee so low; *they* are where they were; but *thou* art fallen from thy excellency. God did not make thee a brute creature, but thou thyself. Thou hast yet a spirit about thee, that might understand its own original and alliance to the Father of spirits; that hath a designation in its nature to higher converses and employments. Many myriads of such spirits, of no higher original excellency than thy own, are now in the presence of the Highest Majesty; are prying into the eternal glory, contemplating the perfections of the Divine nature, beholding the unveiled face of God, which transfuses upon them its own

<sup>1</sup> Voluptas bonum pecoris est . . . Hunc tu (non dico inter viros sed) inter homines numeras, cujus summum bonum saporibus, ac coloribus, ac sonis constat? excedat ex hoc animalium numero pulcherrimo, ac diis secundo; mutis aggregetur animal pabulo natum.—Sen. *Ep.* 92.

satisfying likeness. Thou art not so low-born but thou mightest attain this state also. That sovereign Lord and Author of all things, calls thee to it; his goodness invites thee, his authority enjoins thee to turn thy thoughts and designs this way. Fear not to be thought immodest or presumptuous; it is but a dutiful ambition, an obedient aspiring.<sup>1</sup> Thou art under a law to be thus happy; nor doth it bind thee to any natural impossibility; it designs instructions to thee, not delusion; guidance, not mockery. When thou art required to apply and turn thy soul to this blessedness, it is not the same thing, as if thou wert bidden to remove a mountain, to pluck down a star, or create a world. Thou art here put upon nothing but what is agreeable to the primeval nature of man; and though it be to a vast height thou must ascend, it is by so easy and familiar methods, by so apt gradations, that thou wilt be sensible of no violence done to thy nature in all thy way. Do but make some trials with thyself; thou wilt soon find nothing is the hindrance but an unwilling heart. Try, however,—which will suffice to let thee discern thy own capacity, and will be a likely means to make thee willing,—how far thou canst understand and trace the way, complying with it at least as reasonable, that leads to this blessedness. Retire a little into thyself; forget a while thy relation to this sensible world; summon in thy self-reflecting and considering powers. Thou wilt presently perceive thou art not already happy, thou art in some part unsatisfied; and thence will easily understand, inasmuch as thou art not happy in thyself, that it must be something as yet without thee, must make thee so; and nothing can make thee happy, but what is in that respect better than thyself; or hath some perfection in it, which thou findest wanting in thyself. A little further discourse or reasoning with thyself, will easily persuade thee, thou hast something better about thee than that luggage of flesh thou

<sup>1</sup> *Hic deos æquat, illò tendit, originis suæ memor. Nemo, improbè, eò conatur ascendere unde descenderat . . . socii eis sumus et membra, etc.—Sen. Ep. 92.*



goest with to and fro; for thou well knowest, *that*<sup>1</sup> is not capable of reason and discourse; and that the power of doing so is a higher perfection than any thou canst entitle it to; and that therefore, besides thy bulky material part, thou must have such a thing as a spirit or soul belonging to thee, to which that and thy other perfections, not compatible to gross matter, may agree. Thou wilt readily assent, that thou canst never be happy, while thy better and more noble part is unsatisfied; and that it can only be satisfied with something suitable and connatural to it: that therefore thy happiness must lie in something more excellent than this material or sensible world, otherwise it cannot be grateful and suitable to thy soul, yea, in something that may be better and more excellent than thy soul itself, otherwise how can it better and perfect that?<sup>2</sup> As thou canst not but acknowledge thy soul to be spiritual and immaterial, so if thou attend, thou wilt soon see cause to acknowledge a spiritual or immaterial being better and more perfect than thy own soul. For its perfections were not self-originate; they were therefore derived from something,—for that reason confessedly more excellent; whence at last also thou wilt find it unavoidably imposed upon thee to apprehend and adore a being absolutely perfect, and than which there cannot be a more perfect; the first subject and common fountain of all perfections, which hath them underived in himself, and can derive them unto inferior created beings.<sup>3</sup> Upon this eternal and self-essential

<sup>1</sup> Λόγισμος δὲ καὶ νοῦς, οὐκέτι ταῦτα σώματι δίδωσιν αὐτὰ, καὶ γὰρ τὸ ἔργον αὐτῶν οὐ δι' ὀργάνων τελεῖται τοῦ σώματος, ἐμπόδιον γὰρ τοῦτο, εἴτις αὐτῷ ἐν ταῖς σκέψεσι προσχρῆτο.—Plotin. *Ennead.* iv. lib. 3.

<sup>2</sup> Sicut non est à carne, sed super carnem, quod carnem facit vivere : sic non est ab homine, sed super hominem quod hominem facit beatè vivere.—D. Aug. *de Civit. Dei*, lib. xix. c. 25.

<sup>3</sup> Ut in ordine causarum efficientium, ita et in gradibus virtutis et perfectionis, non datur progressus in infinitum : sed oportet sit aliqua prima et summa perfectio.—Pet. Molin. *de Cognitione Dei* : not to insist upon what hath been much urged by learned men of former and later (yea, and of the present) time,—that whosoever denies the existence of an *absolute perfect being*, contradicts himself in the denial, inasmuch as *necessity of existence* is included in the very subject of the negation; some accounting it a sophism, and it being unseasonable here to discuss it.

Being, the infinitely blessed God, thou necessarily dependest, and owest therefore constant subjection and obedience to him. Thou hast indeed offended him, and art thereby cut off from all interest in him and intercourse with him; but he hath proclaimed in his gospel his willingness to be reconciled, and that, through the sufferings, righteousness, and intercession of his only begotten Son, thy merciful Redeemer, the way is open for thy restitution and recovery; that thou mayest partake from him whatever perfection is wanting to thy blessedness. Nothing is required from thee, in order hereunto, but that, relying on and submitting to thy Redeemer's gracious conduct, thou turn thy mind and heart towards thy God, to know him and conform to him; to view and imitate the Divine perfections; the faithful endeavour and inchoation whereof will have this issue and reward, the clear vision and full participation of them;—so that the way and work differ not, in nature and kind, from thy end and reward; thy duty from thy blessedness. Nor are either repugnant to the natural constitution of thy own soul. What violence is there done to reasonable nature in all this? or what can hinder thee herein but a most culpably averse and wicked heart? Did thy reason ever turn off thy soul from God? was it not thy corruption only? What vile images dost thou receive from earthly objects, which deform thy soul, while thou industriously avertest thy Maker's likeness that would perfect it? How full is thy mind and heart of vanity? how empty of God? Were this through natural incapacity, thou wert an innocent creature; it were thy infelicity, negative I mean, not thy crime; and must be resolved into the sovereign will of thy Creator, not thy own disobedient will. But when this shall appear the true state of thy case, and thou shalt hear it from the mouth of thy Judge; 'Thou didst not like to retain me in thy knowledge or love; thou hadst reason and will to use about meaner objects, but none for me; thou couldest sometimes have spared me a glance, a cast of thine eye at least, when thou didst rather choose it should be in the ends of the earth. A thought of me had cost thee as little,

might as soon have been thought, as of this or that vanity; but thy heart was not with me. I banish thee, therefore, that presence which thou never lovedst. I deny thee the vision thou didst always shun, and the impression of my likeness which thou didst ever hate. I eternally abandon thee to the darkness and deformities which were ever grateful to thee. Thine is a self-created hell; the fruit of thy own choice; no invitations or persuasions of mind could keep thee from it.' How wilt thou excuse thy fault or avert thy doom? what arguments or apologies shall defend thy cause against these pleadings? Nay, what armour shall defend thy soul against its own wounding self-reflections hereupon? when every thought shall be a dart; and a convicted conscience an ever-gnawing worm, a fiery serpent with endless involutions ever winding about thy heart?

It will now be sadly thought on, how often thou sawest thy way and declinedst it; knewest thy duty, and didst waive it; understoodst thy interest, and didst slight it; approvedst the things that were more excellent, and didst reject them. How often thou didst prevaricate with thy light, and run counter to thine own eyes; while things confessedly most worthy of thy thoughts and pursuits were overlooked, and empty shadows eagerly pursued. Thy own heart will now feelingly tell thee it was not want of capacity, but inclination, that cut thee off from blessedness. Thou wilt now bethink thyself, that when "life and immortality were brought to light" before thy eyes "in the gospel;" and thou wast told of this future blessedness of the saints, and pressed to "follow holiness, as without which thou couldst not see God;" it was a reasonable man was spoken to, that had a power to understand, and judge, and choose; not a stone or a brute. Thy capacity of this blessedness makes thee capable also of the most exquisite torment; and reflected on, actually infers it. How passionately, but vainly, wilt thou then cry out, 'Oh that I had filled up the place of any the meanest creature throughout the whole creation of God, that I had been a gnat or a fly, or had never been, rather than to have so noble, abused

powers eternally to reckon for!’ Yea, and thou must reckon for not only the actual light and good impressions thou hadst, but even all thou wast capable of and mightest have attained. Thou shalt now recount with anguish and horror, and rend thy own soul with the thoughts, what thou mightest now have been, how excellent and glorious a creature, hadst thou not contrived thy own misery, and conspired with the devil against thyself how to deform and destroy thy own soul! While this remembrance shall always afresh return, that nothing was enjoined thee as a duty or propounded as thy blessedness, but what thou wast made capable of; and that it was not fatal necessity, but a wilful choice, made thee miserable.

## CHAPTER XII.

INFERENCE III. THAT A CHANGE OF HEART IS NECESSARY TO THIS BLESSEDNESS—THE PRETENCES OF UNGODLY MEN, WHEREBY THEY WOULD AVOID THE NECESSITY OF THIS CHANGE—FIVE CONSIDERATIONS PROPOSED IN ORDER TO THE DETECTING THE VANITY OF SUCH PRETENCES—A PARTICULAR DISCUSSION AND REFUTATION OF THOSE PRETENCES.

3. INF. It is a mighty change must pass upon the souls of men in order to their enjoyment of this blessedness. This equally follows from the consideration of the nature and substantial parts of it, as of the qualifying righteousness pre-required to it. A little reflection upon the common state and temper of men's spirits, will soon enforce an acknowledgment that the vision of God and conformity to him are things above their reach, and which they are never likely to take satisfaction in, or at all to savour, till they become otherwise disposed than, before the renovating change, they are. The text expresses no more in stating the qualified subject of this blessedness,—“in righteousness,”—than it evidently *implies* in the account it gives of this blessedness itself, that it lies “in seeing God, and being satisfied with his likeness.” As soon as it is considered that the blessedness of souls is stated here, what can be a more obvious reflection than this; Lord, then how great a change must they undergo! What! such souls be blessed in seeing and partaking the Divine likeness, that never loved it; were so much his enemies! It is true they are naturally capable of it, which speaks their original excellency; but they are morally incapable, that is, indisposed and averse, which as truly and most sadly speaks their present vileness,

and the sordid abject temper they now are of. They are destitute of no natural powers necessary to the attainment of this blessedness; but in the meantime have them so depraved by impure and vicious tinctures that they cannot relish it, or the means to it.<sup>1</sup> They have reasonable souls furnished with intellective and elective faculties, but labouring under a manifold distemper and disaffection: that they “cannot receive,” they “cannot savour,”<sup>2</sup> the things of God, or what is spiritual. They want the *εὐθεσία*, as we express it, the well-disposedness for the kingdom of God, intimated Luke ix. 62, the *ικανότης*, the meetness, the aptitude, or idoneity for the “inheritance of the saints in light.”<sup>3</sup>

A settled aversion from God hath fastened its roots in the very spirit of their minds, for that is stated as the prime subject of the change to be made;<sup>4</sup> and how can they take pleasure then in the vision and participation of his glory? Whereas, by beholding the glory of the Lord, they should be changed into the same image, a veil is upon the heart till it turn to the Lord, as was said concerning the Jews,<sup>5</sup> “The god of this world hath blinded their minds, lest” that transforming light, “the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.”<sup>6</sup> “They are alienated from the life of God, through their ignorance and blindness of heart.”<sup>7</sup> The life they choose is to be *ἄθεοι ἐν κόσμῳ*, atheists, or, “without God in the world.” “They like not to retain God in their knowledge: are willingly ignorant of him;” say to him, “Depart from us; we desire not the knowledge of thy ways.” “The Lord looks down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if any will understand, if any will seek after God;” and the result of the inquiry is, “There is none that doeth good, no, not one.”<sup>8</sup> They are haters of God, as our Saviour accused

<sup>1</sup> Capax est noster animus, perfertur illo, si vitia non deprimant.—Sen. *Epist.* 92.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. ii. 14; Rom. viii. 5.

<sup>3</sup> Col. i. 12.

<sup>4</sup> Eph. iv. 23.

<sup>5</sup> 2 Cor. iii.

<sup>6</sup> 2 Cor. iv. 4.

<sup>7</sup> Eph. iv. 18.

<sup>8</sup> Eph. ii. 12; Rom. i. 28; 2 Pet. iii.; Job xxi. 14; Ps. liii.

the Jews,<sup>1</sup> and St. Paul the Gentiles; “are lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God.”<sup>2</sup> Their understandings are dark, their minds vain, their wills obstinate, their consciences seared, their hearts hard and dead, their lives one continued rebellion against God, and a defiance to heaven. At how vast distance are such souls from such blessedness! The notion and nature of blessedness must sure be changed, or the temper of their spirits. Either they must have new hearts created or a new heaven, if ever they be happy. And such is the stupid dotage of vain man, he can more easily persuade himself to believe that the sun itself should be transformed into a dunghill, that the Holy God should lay aside his nature, and turn heaven into a place of impure darkness, than that he himself should need to undergo a change. O the powerful infatuation of self-love, that men in the “gall of bitterness” should think it is well with their spirits and fancy themselves in a case good enough to enjoy Divine pleasures; that—as the toad’s venom offends not itself—their loathsome wickedness, which all good men detest, is a pleasure to them; and while it is as “the poison of asps under their lips,” they roll it as a dainty bit, revolve it in their thoughts with delight! Their wickedness speaks itself out to the very hearts of others, while it never affects their own, and is “found out to be hateful,” while they still continue “flattering themselves.”<sup>3</sup> And because they are without spot in their own eyes, they adventure so high as to presume themselves so in the pure eyes of God too; and instead of designing to be “like God,” they already imagine him “such an one as themselves.”<sup>4</sup> Hence their allotment of time—in the whole of it, the Lord knows little enough—for the working out of their salvation spends apace, while they do not so much as understand their business. Their measured hour is almost out; an immense eternity is coming on upon them; and lo! they stand as men that “cannot find their hands.”<sup>5</sup> Urge them to the speedy serious endeavour of a

<sup>1</sup> John xv.<sup>2</sup> Rom. i.<sup>3</sup> Ps. xxxvi. 1, 2.<sup>4</sup> Ps. 1.<sup>5</sup> Ps. lxxvi. 5.

heart-change, earnestly to intend the business of regeneration, of becoming new creatures,—they seem to understand it as little as if they were spoken to in an unknown tongue; and are in the like posture with the confounded builders of Babel, they know not what we mean or would put them upon. They wonder what we would have them do. ‘They are,’ say they, ‘orthodox Christians: they believe all the articles of the Christian creed: they detest all heresy and false doctrine: they are no strangers to the house of God, but diligently attend the enjoined solemnities of public worship: some possibly can say, they are sober, just, charitable, peaceable; and others, that can boast less of their virtues, yet say they are sorry for their sins and pray God to forgive them.’ And if we urge them concerning their translation from the state of nature to that of grace, their becoming new creatures, their implantation into Christ: they say ‘they have been baptized, and therein regenerate, and what would we have more?’

But to how little purpose is it to equivocate with God? to go about to put a fallacy upon the Judge of spirits? or escape the animadversion of his fiery flaming eye? or elude his determinations and pervert the true intent and meaning of his most established constitutions and laws?

Darest thou venture thy soul upon it that this is all God means, by “having a new heart created, a right spirit renewed in us;”<sup>1</sup> by being made God’s “workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works;”<sup>2</sup> by “becoming new creatures, old things being done away, all things made new;”<sup>3</sup> by “so learning the truth as it is in Jesus, to the putting off the old man . . . . and putting on the new; which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness;”<sup>4</sup> by “being begotten of God’s own will by the word of truth;”<sup>5</sup> to be the ἀπαρχή, the chief excellency, the prime glory—as certainly his new creature is his best creature,—the first-

<sup>1</sup> Ps. li.<sup>2</sup> Eph. ii. 10.<sup>3</sup> 2 Cor. v. 17.<sup>4</sup> Eph. iv. 23, 24.<sup>5</sup> Jas. i. 18.



fruits or the devoted part of all his creatures; by "having Christ formed in us;" by "partaking the Divine nature," "the incorruptible seed, the seed of God;" by being "born of God," spirit of Spirit; as of earthly parents we are "born flesh of flesh?"<sup>1</sup> When my eternal blessedness lies upon it, had I not need to be sure that I hit the true meaning of these scriptures? especially, that at least I fall not below it, and rest not in anything short of what Scripture makes indispensably necessary to my entering into the kingdom of God?

I professedly waive controversies; and it is a pity so practical a business as this I am now upon, and upon which salvation so much depends, should ever have been encumbered with any controversy. And therefore, though I shall not digress so far as to undertake a particular and distinct handling here of this work of God upon the soul, yet I shall propound something in general touching the change necessarily previous to this blessedness,—wherein that necessity is evidenceable from the nature of this blessedness, which is the business I have in hand,—that I hope will pass among Christians for acknowledged truth, not liable to dispute; though the Lord knows it be little considered: my design being rather to awaken souls to the consideration of known and agreed things than to perplex them about unknown. Consider therefore:

First, that the Holy Scriptures, in the fore-mentioned and other like passages, do plainly hold forth the necessity of a *real change* to be made in the inward temper and dispositions of the soul; and not a *relative* only, respecting its state. This cannot be doubted by any that acknowledge a real inherent depravation, propagated in the nature of man: no, nor denied by them that grant such a corruption to be general and continued among men, whether by imitation only or what way soever. And willing I am to meet men upon their own principles and concessions, however erroneous or short of the truth they may be, while they are yet improvable to

<sup>1</sup> Gal. iv. 6; 2 Pet. i. 4; 1 Pet. i.; John iii. 6.

their own advantage. Admit that regeneration or the new birth includes a change of our relation and state God-ward; doth it therefore exclude an intrinsic subjective change of the inclinations and tendencies of the soul? And if it did, yet other terms are more peculiarly appropriate to, and most expressly point out, this very change alone; as that of conversion, or of turning to God; of "being renewed in the spirit of the mind;" of "putting off the old man that is corrupt by," etc. and "putting on the new man, which is created in righteousness, and true holiness," etc.; "of partaking the divine nature." It matters not if this or that expression be understood, by some, more principally in another sense; the thing itself, of which we speak, is as clearly expressed and as urgently pressed (as there was cause) as any other matter whatsoever throughout the whole Book of God. But men are slower of belief as to this great article of the Christian doctrine, than to most, I might say any, other. This truth more directly assaults the strongholds of the devil in the hearts of men, and is of more immediate tendency to subvert his kingdom; therefore they are most unwilling to have it true, and most hardly believe it. Here they are so madly bold as to give the lie to all Divine revelations; and though they are never so plainly told, "without holiness none shall see God," they will yet maintain the contrary belief and hope, till "go, ye cursed," vindicate the truth of God, and the flame of hell be their eternal confutation. Lord! that so plain a thing will not enter into the hearts of men: that so urgent inculcations will not yet make them apprehend that their souls must be renewed or perish! That they will still go dreaming on with that mad conceit that, whatever the Word of God says to the contrary, they may yet with unsanctified hearts get to heaven! How deplorable is the case when men have no other hope left them, but that the God of truth will prove false and belie his word; yea, and overturn the nature of things to save them in their sins! Thou that livest under the gospel, hast thou any pretence for thy seeming ignorance in this matter? Couldst thou ever

look one quarter of an hour into the Bible, and not meet with some intimation of this truth? What was the ground of thy mistake? What hath beguiled thee into so mischievous a delusion? How could such an imagination have place in thy soul, that a "child of wrath by nature" could become a child of God, without receiving a new nature? That so vast a change could be made in thy state, without any at all in the temper of thy spirit?

Secondly; consider that this change is, in its own nature, and the design of God who works it, dispositive of the soul for blessedness. It is sufficiently evident from the consideration of the state itself of the unrenewed soul, that a change is necessary for this end: such a soul in which it is not wrought, when once its drowsy stupifying slumber is shaken off and its reflecting power awakened, must needs be a perpetual torment to itself. So far it is removed from blessedness, it is its own hell, and can fly from misery and death no faster than from itself. Blessedness composes the soul, reduces it to a consistency; it infers, or rather is, a self-satisfaction,<sup>1</sup> a well-pleas'dness and contentment with oneself, enriched and filled with the Divine fulness. Hence it is "at rest," not as being pent in, but contentedly dwelling with itself, and keeping within its own bounds of its own accord. The unrenewed soul can no more contain itself within its own terms or limits, is as little self-consistent, as a raging flame or an impetuous tempest. Indeed its own lusts perpetually, as so many vultures, rend and tear it, and the more when they want external objects; then, as hunger, their fury is all turned inward, and they prey upon intestines, upon their own subject; but unto endless torment, not satisfaction. In what posture is this soul for rest and blessedness?

The nature of this change sufficiently speaks its own design. It is an introduction of the *primordia*, the very principles of blessedness.

<sup>1</sup> αὐτάρκεια.

And Scripture as plainly speaks the design of God: He regenerates to the "undefiled inheritance;" makes "meet" for it; "works," forms, or fashions the soul "unto that self-same thing,"<sup>1</sup> namely, to desire and groan after that blessed state; and consequently to acquiesce and rest therein. Therefore, vain man, that drest of being happy without undergoing such a change; how art thou trying thy skill to abstract a thing from itself? For the pre-required righteousness, whereunto thou must be changed, and this blessedness, are in kind and nature the same thing, as much as a child and a man. Thou pretendest thou wouldst have that perfected which thou canst not endure should ever be begun: thou settest thyself to prevent and suppress what, in its own nature and by Divine ordination, tends to the accomplishment of thy own pretended desires. Thou wouldst have the tree without ever admitting the seed or plant: thou wouldst have heat, and canst not endure the least warmth; so besotted a thing is a carnal heart!

Thirdly; that inasmuch as this blessedness consists in the satisfactory sight and participation of God's own likeness, unto whom the soul is habitually averse, this change must chiefly stand in its becoming *holy* or *godly*, or in the alteration of its dispositions and inclinations as to God; otherwise the design and end of it is not attained. We are required to "follow peace with all men,"—but here the accent is put—"and holiness, without which no man shall see God."<sup>2</sup> It is therefore a vain thing, in reference to what we have now under consideration; namely, the possibility of attaining this blessedness, to speak of any other changes that fall short of, or are of another kind from, the right disposition of heart God-ward. This change we are now considering is no other than the proper adequate impress of the gospel-discovery upon men's spirits, as we have largely shown the righteousness is, in which it terminates. The sum of that discovery is,—"That God is in Christ, reconciling the

<sup>1</sup> 1 Pet. i. 3, 4; Col. i. 12; 2 Cor. v. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. xii. 14.

world unto himself;”<sup>1</sup> the proper impress of it therefore is the actual reconciliation of the soul to God through Christ; a friendly, well-affected posture of spirit towards God, our last end and highest good; and towards Christ our only way, since the apostasy, of attaining and enjoying it. To rest therefore in any other good dispositions or endowments of mind is as much beside the business, as impertinent to the present purpose, as if one designed to the government of a city should satisfy himself that he hath the skill to play well on a lute, or he that intends physic, that he is well seen in architecture. The general scope and tenor of the gospel tells thee, O man, plainly enough, what the business is thou must intend, if thou wilfully overlook it not, in order to thy blessedness. It is written to draw thee into “fellowship with the Father and the Son,” that thy “joy may be full.”<sup>2</sup> It aims at the bringing of thee into a state of blessedness in God through Christ, and is therefore the instrument by which God would form thy heart thereto; the seal by which to make the first impression of his image upon thee: which will then as steadily incline and determine thy soul towards him, as the magnetic touch ascertains the posture of the needle. Wherefore doth he there discover his own heart but to melt, and win, and transform thine? The “word of grace” is the “seed” of the new creature. Through “the exceeding great and precious promises,” he makes souls “partake of the divine nature.” Grace is firstly revealed to teach “the denial of ungodliness,” etc. Turn thy thoughts hither then, and consider what is there done upon thy soul by the gospel to attemper and conform it to God? Wherein has thy heart answered this its visible design and intendment? Thou art but in a delirious dream till thou seriously bethinkest thyself of this. For otherwise, how can the aversion of thy heart from him escape thy daily observation? Thou canst not be without evidences of it: what pleasure dost thou take in retiring thyself with God? what care to redeem time only

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. v. 18, 19.

<sup>2</sup> 1 John i. 1—4.

for converse with him? hadst thou not rather be anywhere else? In a time of vacaney from business and company, when thou hast so great a variety of things before thee among which to choose an object for thy thoughts, do they not naturally fall upon anything rather than God? Nor do thou think to shift off this by assigning the mere natural cause; for if there were not somewhat more in the matter, why is it not so with all? He upon whom this change had passed could say: "My soul shall be satisfied as with marrow and fatness: and my mouth shall praise thee with joyful lips: when I remember thee upon my bed, and meditate on thee in the night watches."<sup>1</sup> "My meditation of him shall be sweet: I will be glad in the Lord."<sup>2</sup> "How precious are thy thoughts unto me, O God! how great is the sum of them! If I should count them, they are more in number than the sand: when I awake, I am still with thee."<sup>3</sup> "Yea, in the way of thy judgments, O God, have we waited for thee; the desire of our soul is to thy name, and to the remembrance of thee. With my soul have I desired thee in the night; yea, with my spirit within me will I seek thee early,"<sup>4</sup> etc. Therefore plain it is, there is a sinful distemper to be wrought out, an ungodly disposition of heart, which it concerns thee not to rest till thou see removed.

Fourthly; consider that to become godly,—or this change of inclinations and dispositions towards God,—is that which of all other the soul doth most *strongly reluctate and strive against*; and which therefore it undergoes with greatest difficulty and regret. It is a horrid and amazing thing it should be so, but Scripture and experience leave it undoubted that so it is. What! that the highest excellency, the most perfect beauty, loveliness, and love itself, should so little attract a reasonable spiritual being that issued thence! His own offspring so unkind! What more than monstrous unnaturalness is this, so to disaffect one's own original? It

<sup>1</sup> Ps. lxiii. 5, 6.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. civ. 34.

<sup>3</sup> Ps. cxxxix. 17, 18.

<sup>4</sup> Isa. xxvi. 8, 9.

were easy to accumulate and heap up considerations that would render this astonishingly strange. So things are reckoned upon several accounts, either as they are more rare and unfrequent, which is the vulgar way of estimating wonders; or as their causes are of more difficult investigation; or, if they are moral wonders, as they are more unreasonable or causeless; upon this last account, Christ " marvelled at the Jews' unbelief."<sup>1</sup> And so is this hatred justly marvellous; as being " altogether without a cause!"<sup>2</sup>

But thence to infer there is no such thing were to dispute against the sun. No truth hath more of light and evidence in it, though none more of terror and prodigy. To how many thousand objects is the mind] of man indifferent; can turn itself to this or that; run with facility all points of the compass, among the whole universe of beings; but assay only to draw it to God, and it recoils; thoughts and affections revolt, and decline all converse with that blessed object! Toward other objects, it freely opens and dilates itself as under the benign beams of a warm sun; there are placid, complacential emotions; amicable, sprightly converses and embraces. Towards God only it is presently contracted and shut up; life retires, and it becomes as a stone, cold, rigid, and impenetrable: the quite contrary to what is required—which also those very precepts do plainly imply; it is alive to sin, to the world, to vanity; but crucified, mortified, dead to God and Jesus Christ.<sup>3</sup>

The natures of many men that are harsh, fierce, and savage, admit of many cultivations and refinings; and, by moral precept, the exercise and improvement of reason, with a severe animadversion and observance of themselves, they become mild, tractable, gentle, meek. The story of the physiognomist's guess at the temper of Socrates is known. But of all other, the disaffected soul is least inclinable ever to become 'good-natured' towards God, wherein grace or holiness doth consist. Here it is most unpersuadable, never

<sup>1</sup> Mark vi. 6.

<sup>2</sup> John xv. 25.

<sup>3</sup> Rom. vi. 11.

facile to this change. One would have thought no affection should have been so natural, so deeply inwrought into the spirit of man, as an affection towards the Father of spirits; but here he most of all discovers himself to be "without natural affection:" surely here is a sad proof that such affection doth not ascend.

The whole duty of man, as to the *principle* of it, resolves into love. That "is the fulfilling of the law." As to its *object*; the two tables divide it between God and our neighbour; and, accordingly, divide that love. Upon those two branches whereof, love to God and love to our neighbour, "hang all the law and the prophets."

The wickedness of the world hath killed this love at the very root, and indisposed the nature of man to all exercises of it either way, whether towards God or his neighbour. It hath not only rendered man unmeet for holy communion with God, but in a great measure for civil society with one another. It hath destroyed good nature; made men false, envious, barbarous; turned the world—especially the "dark places of the earth," where the light of the gospel shines not—into "habitations of cruelty." But who sees not the enmity and disaffection of men's hearts towards God is the more deeply rooted and less superable evil?

The beloved Apostle gives us a plain and sad intimation how the case is as to this, when he reasons thus, "He that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen?"

He argues from the less to the greater; and this is the ground upon which his argument is built,—that the loving of God is a matter of greater difficulty, and from which the spirit of man is more remote, than loving of his neighbour. And he withal insinuates an account why it is so; God's remoteness from our sense, which is indeed a *cause*, but no *excuse*: it is a peccant faulty cause. For is our so gross sensuality no sin? that nothing should affect our hearts, but what we can see with our eyes? as if our sense were the only measure or judge of excellencies. We are not all flesh;



what have we done with our souls? If we cannot see God with our eyes, why do we not with our minds? at least so much of him we might as to discern his excellency above all things else. How come our souls to lose their dominion, and to be so slavishly subject to a ruling sense? But the reason less concerns our present purpose; that whereof it is the reason, that implied assertion,—that men are in a less disposition to the love of God than their neighbours,—is the sad truth we are now considering. There are certain homiletical virtues that much adorn and polish the nature of man,—urbanity, fidelity, justice, patience of injuries, compassion towards the miserable, etc., and indeed without these the world would break up and all civil societies disband; if at least they did not in some degree obtain. But in the meantime men are at the greatest distance imaginable from any disposition to society with God. They have some love for one another, but none for him. And yet it must be remembered that love to our neighbour and all the consequent exertions of it, becoming duty by the Divine law, ought to be performed as acts of obedience to God, and therefore ought to grow from the stock and root of a Divine love; I mean, *love to God*. They are otherwise but spurious virtues, bastard fruits—“men gather not grapes of thorns,” etc.—they grow from a tree of another *kind*; and whatever semblance they may have of the true, they want their constituent form, their life and soul. Though “love to the brethren” is made a character of the regenerate state, of “having passed from death to life;”<sup>1</sup> it is yet but a more remote, and is itself brought to trial by this higher and more immediate one, and which is more intimately connatural to the new creature,—even the love of God: “By this we know we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments.”<sup>2</sup> A respect to God specifies every virtue and duty.<sup>3</sup> Whatever is loved and served, and not in him and for

<sup>1</sup> 1 John iii. 14.

<sup>2</sup> 1 John v. 2.

<sup>3</sup> Proinde virtutes quas sibi videtur habere, nisi ad Deum retulerit, etiam ipsa vitia sunt potius quàm virtutes.—Aug. *de Civit. Dei*, l. xix. c. 25.

him (*servato ordine finis*, as the school phrase is), becomes an idol; and that love and service is idolatry. And what a discovery is here of disaffection to God,—that in the exercise of such, the above-mentioned, virtues, one single act shall be torn from itself, from its specifying moral form, only to leave out *him*. A promise shall be kept, but without any respect to God—for even the promises made to him are broken without any scruple. That which is another's shall be rendered to him; but God shall not be regarded in the business: an alms given; “for the Lord's sake” left out: that which concerns my neighbour often done, but what concerns God therein, as it were studiously, omitted. This is what he that runs may read,—that though the hearts of men are not to one another as they should, they are much more averse towards God.

Men are easier of acquaintance towards one another, they slide insensibly into each other's bosoms; even the most churlish, morose natures are wrought upon by assiduous repeated kindnesses—*gutta carat lapidem*, etc.—as often falling drops at length wear and work into very stones. Towards God their hearts are more impenetrable than rocks, harder than adamants. He is seeking with some an acquaintance all their days: they live their whole age under the gospel, and yet are never won. They hearken to one another, but are utterly unpersuadable towards God; as the “deaf adder that hears not the voice of the charmer, though charming never so wisely.” The clearest reason, the most powerful arguments move them not; no, nor the most insinuating allurements, the sweetest breathings of love: “How often would I have gathered thee, as the hen her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!” God draws with “the cords of a man, with the bands of love;”<sup>1</sup> but they still perversely keep at an unkind distance.

Men use to believe one another: were there no credit given to each other's words and some mutual confidence in

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xxiii. 37. See Ps. lxxxi. 8—13; Prov. i. 20—24, etc.; Hos. xi. 4.

one another, there could be no human converse,—all must affect solitude, and dwell in dens and deserts as wild beasts; but how incredulous are they of all Divine revelations, though testified with never so convincing evidence! “Who hath believed our report?” The word of the eternal God is regarded—oh, amazing wickedness!—as we would the word of a child or a fool. No sober, rational man, but his narrations, promises or threatenings are more reckoned of. Men are more reconcilable to one another when enemies, more constant when friends. How often doth the power of a conquering enemy, and the distress of the conquered, work a submission on this part and a remission on that. How often are haughty spirits stooped by a series of calamities, and made ductile; proud arrogants formed by necessity and misery into humble supplicants, so as to lie prostrate at the feet of a man that may help or hurt them; while still the same persons retain indomitable unyielding spirits towards God, under their most afflictive pressure. Though his gracious nature and infinite fulness promise the most certain and liberal relief, it is the remotest thing from their thoughts to make any address to him. “They cry because of the oppression of the mighty. But none says, Where is God my maker, who giveth songs in the night;”<sup>1</sup> rather perish under their burthens than look towards God, when his own visible hand is against them or upon them, and their lives at his mercy; they stand it out to the last breath, and are more hardly humbled than consumed; sooner burn than weep; shrivelled up into ashes sooner than melted into tears; “scorched with great heat, yet repent not to give glory to God;”<sup>2</sup> gnaw their tongues for pain, and yet still more disposed to blaspheme than pray or sue for mercy. Dreadful thought! As to one another, reconciliations among men are not impossible or unfrequent, even of mortal enemies; but they are utterly implacable towards God: yet they often wrong one another; but they cannot pretend God ever did

<sup>1</sup> Job xxxv.

Rev. xvi.

them the least wrong, yea, they have lived by his bounty all their days. "They say to God, Depart from us, yet he filleth their houses with good things." So true is the historian's observation, 'Hatred is sharpest where most unjust.'<sup>1</sup>

Yea, when there *seems* at least to have been a reconciliation wrought, are treacheries, covenant-breakings, revolts, strangeness, so frequent among men towards one another as from them towards God? How inconsistent with friendship is it, according to common estimate, to be always promising, never performing; upon any or no occasion to break off intercourses by unkind alienations or mutual hostilities; to be morose, reserved each to other; to decline or disaffect each other's converse; to shut out one another from their hearts and thoughts. But how common and unregretted are these carriages towards the blessed God! It were easy to expatiate on this argument, and multiply instances of this greater disaffection. But in a word, what observing person may not see, what serious person would not grieve to see, the barbarous sooner putting on civility, the riotous sobriety, the treacherous fidelity, the morose urbanity, the injurious equity, the churlish and covetous benignity and charity, than the ungodly man piety and sincere devotedness unto God! Here is the principal wound and distemper sin hath infected the nature of man with: though he have suffered an universal impairment, he is chiefly prejudiced in regard of his habitude and tendency towards God, and what concerns the duties of the first table. Here the breach is greatest, and here is the greatest need of repair. True it is, an inoffensive winning deportment towards men is not without its excellency, and necessity too. And it doth indeed unsufferably reproach Christianity, and unbecome a disciple of Christ; yea, it discovers a man not to be "led by his Spirit," and so to be "none of his,"—to indulge himself in immoral deportments towards men; to be undutiful towards superiors; unconversable towards equals; oppressive towards inferiors; unjust

<sup>1</sup> Tacitus speaking of the hatred of Tiberius and Augusta against Germanicus, 'the causers whereof,' saith he, 'were *acriores, quia iniquæ.*'

towards any. Yet is a holy disposition of heart towards God, most earnestly and in the first place, to be endeavoured—which will then draw on the rest—as having in it highest equity and excellency, and being of the most immediate necessity to our blessedness.

Fifthly; consider that there may be some gradual tendencies, or fainter essays towards godliness that fall short of *real godliness*, or come not up to that thorough change and determination of heart God-ward that is necessary to blessedness. There may be a returning, “but not to the Most High,” and wherein men may be, as the prophet immediately subjoins, “like a deceitful bow,”<sup>1</sup> not fully bent, that will not reach the mark; they come not home to God. Many may be “almost persuaded,” and even within reach of heaven, “not far from the kingdom of God;” may seek to enter, and not be able; their hearts being somewhat inclinable, but more averse; for they can only be unable as they are unwilling. The soul is in no possibility of taking up a complacential rest in God, till it be brought to this,—to move toward him spontaneously and with, as it were, a self-motion. And then is it self-moved towards God, when its preponderating bent is towards him. As a massy stone that one attempts to displace, if it be heaved at till it preponderate, it then moves out by its own weight; otherwise it reverts, and lies where and as it did before;—so it is with many men’s hearts; all our lifting at them is but the rolling of the returning stone; they are moved, but not removed: sometimes they are lifted at in the public ministry of the word; sometimes by a private seasonable admonition; sometimes God makes an affliction his minister; a danger startles them; a sickness shakes them; and they think to change their course: but how soon do they change those thoughts, and are where they were! What enlightenings and convictions, what awakenings and terror, what remorse, what purposes, what tastes and relishes, do some find in their own hearts,

<sup>1</sup> Hos. vii. 16.

that yet are blasted and come to nothing! How many miserable abortions after travailing pangs and throes, and fair hopes of a happy birth of the new creature! Often somewhat is produced that much resembles it, but is not it. No gracious principle but may have its counterfeit in an ungracious heart; whence they deceive not others only, but themselves, and think verily they are true converts, while they are yet in their sins. How many wretched souls that lie dubiously struggling a long time under the contrary alternate impressions of the gospel on the one hand, and the present evil world on the other, and give the day to their own sensual inclinations at last; in some degree, "escape the corruptions of the world, by the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, but are again entangled and overcome, so as their latter end is worse than their beginning!"<sup>1</sup> Such a man is so far from being advantaged by his former faint inclinations towards God, that he would be found at last under this aggravated wickedness beyond all other men,—that when others wandered from God through inadvertency and inconsideration, this man will be found to have been his enemy upon deliberation, and against the various strivings of his convinced heart to the contrary. This is more eminently victorious and reigning enmity; such an one takes great pains to perish. Alas! it is not a slight touch, an overly superficial tincture, some evanid sentiments of piety, a few good thoughts or wishes, that bespeak a "new man," a "new creature." It is a thorough prevailing change, that quite alters the habitual posture of a man's soul and determines it towards God, so as that the after course of his life may be capable of that denomination, "a living to God," "a living after the Spirit;" that exalts the love of God into that supremacy in him, that it becomes the governing principle of his life and the reason and measure of his actions; that, as he loves Him above all things else, better than his own life, so

<sup>1</sup> 2 Pet. ii. 20.

he can truly, though possibly sometimes with a doubtful trembling heart, resolve the ordinary course of his daily walking and practice into that love, as the directive principle of it. 'I pray, I read, I hear, because I love God. I desire to be just, sober, charitable, meek, patient, because I love God.' This is the perfection and end of the love of God; therefore that must needs be the principle hereof,—obedience to his will.<sup>1</sup> Herein appears that "power of godliness," denied (God knows) by too many that have the form: "the spirit of love, power, and of a sound mind."<sup>2</sup> That only is a sound mind in which such love rules in such power. Is not love to God often pretended by such that, whenever it comes to an actual competition, discover they love their own flesh a great deal more; that seldom ever cross their own wills to do his; or hazard their own fleshly interest to promote his interest? We may justly say, as the Apostle, in a case fitly enough reducible hither, "How dwells the love of God in that man?" Notwithstanding such a subdued ineffectual love to God, such an one shall be denominated and dealt with as an enemy. It is not likely any man on earth hates God so perfectly as those in hell. And is not every quality, not yet perfect in its kind, and that is yet growing more and more intense, in the meantime allayed by some degree of its contrary? Yet that over-mastered degree denominates not its subject, nor ought a man from such a supposed love to God to have the name of a lover of him. That principle is only capable of denominating the man, that is prevalent and practical, that hath a governing influence on his heart and life. He in whom the love of God hath not such power and rule, whatever his fainter inclinations may be, is an ungodly man.

And now methinks these several considerations compared and weighed together, should contribute something to the settling of right thoughts in the minds of secure sinners,

<sup>1</sup> John ii. 5. *Τερελεωται.*

<sup>2</sup> 2 Tim. iii. 5; chap. i. 7.

touching the *nature* and *necessity* of this heart-change; and do surely leave no place for the fore-mentioned vain pretences that occasioned them.

For—to give you a summary view of what hath been propounded in those foregoing considerations—it now plainly appears, that the Holy Scripture requires in him that shall enjoy this blessedness, a mighty change of the very temper of his soul, as that which must dispose him thereto; and which must therefore chiefly consist in the right framing of his heart towards God, towards whom it is most fixedly averse, and therefore not easily susceptible of such a change: and that any slighter or more feeble inclination toward God, will not serve the turn; but such only whereby the soul is prevalently and habitually turned to him.

And then what can be more absurd or unsavoury, what more contrary to Christian doctrine or common reason, than, instead of this necessary heart-change, to insist upon so poor a plea as that mentioned above, as the only ground of so great a hope? How empty and frivolous will it appear in comparison of this great soul-transforming change, if we severally consider the particulars of it!

As for orthodoxy in doctrinals, it is in itself a highly laudable thing; and in respect of the fundamentals,—for therefore are they so called,—indispensably necessary to blessedness. As that cannot be without holiness, so nor holiness without truth.<sup>1</sup> But—besides that this is that which every one pretends to—is everything which is necessary, sufficient? As to natural necessity, which is that we now speak to, reason and intellectual nature are also necessary; shall therefore all men, yea, and devils too, be saved?

Besides, are you sure you believe the grand articles of the Christian religion? Consider a little, the *grounds* and *effects* of that pretended faith.

First, its grounds. Every assent is as the grounds of it are. Deal truly here with thy soul. Can you tell wherefore

<sup>1</sup> John xvii. 17.



you are a Christian? what are thy inducements to be of this religion? are they not such as are common to thee with them that are of a false religion? I am here happily prevented by a worthy author,<sup>1</sup> to which I recommend thee; but at the present a little bethink thyself,—Is it not possible thou mayst be a Christian for the same reasons for which one may be a Jew, or a Mahommedan, or a mere Pagan? as namely, education, custom, law, example, outward advantage, etc. Now consider, if thou find this upon inquiry to be thy case, the motives of thy being a Christian admit of being cast together into this form of reasoning.

That religion which a man's forefathers were of, which is established by law, or generally obtains in the country where he lives, the profession whereof most conduces to, or best consists with his credit and other outward advantages, *that* religion he is to embrace as the true religion. But such I find the Christian religion to be to me: therefore, etc.

The proposition here is manifestly false; for it contains grounds common to all religions, publicly owned and professed throughout the world; and sure all cannot be true: and hence the conclusion, though *materially* considered it be true, yet *formally* considered, as a conclusion issuing from such premises, must needs be false; and what then is become of thy orthodoxy, when, as to the formal object of thy faith, thou believest but as Mahommedans and Pagans do? when thou art of this faith, by fate or chance only, not choice or rational inducement?

Next, as to the effects of thy faith: let them be inquired into also, and they will certainly bear proportion to the grounds of it. The gospel is the "power of God to salvation to every one that believeth;"<sup>2</sup> to them that believe it not, it signifies nothing. The Word of God received with a Divine faith, as the Word of God, works effectually upon all that so receive it; that is, all that believe. What such efficacious workings of it hast thou felt upon thy soul? Certainly, its

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Pink's 'Trial of Sincere Love to Christ.'

<sup>2</sup> Rom. i. 16; 1 Thess. ii. 13.

most connatural effect is that very change of heart and inclination God-ward, of which we have been speaking. What is so suitable to the gospel revelation, as a good temper of heart God-ward? And how absurd is it to introduce the cause on purpose to exclude its genuine inseparable effect? But evident it is,—though true faith cannot, that superficial irrational assent in which alone many glory, may too well consist with a disaffected heart towards God: and can it then signify anything towards thy blessedness? Sure to be so a Solifidian, is to be a Nullifidian. Faith not “working by love” is not faith; at least “profits nothing.”

For thy outward conformity in the solemnities of worship, it is imputable to so corrupt motives and principles, that the thing itself, abstractively considered, can never be thought characteristic and distinguishing of the heirs of blessedness. The worst of men may perform the best of outward duties.

Thy most glorious boasted virtues, if they grow not from the proper root,—love to God,—they are but splendid sins, as above appears, and hath been truly said of old.

Thy repentance is either true or false; if true, it is that very change of mind and heart I speak of, and is therefore eminently signalised by that note; it is repentance “towards God;” if false, God will not be mocked.

For thy regeneration in baptism;<sup>1</sup> what can it avail thee as to this blessedness, if the present temper of thy heart be unsuitable thereto? Didst thou ever know any that held that all the baptized should be saved? Will thy infant sanctity excuse the enmity and disaffection to God of thy riper age?

In short, if we seclude this work of God upon the soul, how inconsiderable is the difference between the Christian and the heathen world! Wherein can it then be understood to lie, but in some ineffectual notions, and external observances? And can it be thought that the righteous holy God will make so vast a difference in the states of men hereafter,

<sup>1</sup> Heb. vi.

who differ so little here? or that it shall so highly recommend a man to God, that it was his lot to be born and to have lived upon such a turf or soil, or in such a clime or part of the world? His gracious providence is thankfully to be acknowledged and adored, that hath assigned us our stations under the gospel; but then it must be remembered, the gospel hath the goodness, not of the end, but of the means; which, as by our improvement or non-improvement, it becomes effectual or ineffectual, doth acquit from or aggravate condemnation: and that it works not as a charm or spell, we know not how or why, or when we think not of it; but by recommending itself in the demonstration and power of the Holy Ghost, to our reason and consciences, to our wills and affections, till we be delivered up into the mould or form of it.<sup>1</sup> Surely were it so slight a matter, as too many fondly dream, that must distinguish between them that shall be saved and shall perish, there would need no "striving to enter in at the strait gate;" and the disciples' question would never have been, "Who then shall be saved?" but rather, who shall *not* be saved? Nor would it have been resolved by our Saviour, into the immediate power of him alone, "to whom all things are possible,"<sup>2</sup> that any are saved at all; nor have been so earnestly asserted by him, that "none could come to him" but whom his "Father draws."<sup>3</sup>

The obvious import of which passages is such, that if careless sinners could once obtain of themselves seriously to consider them, methinks they should find little rest in their spirits, till they might discern a work wrought there in some degree worthy of God, an impression some way proportionable to the power of an Almighty arm, and that might speak God its Author. For notwithstanding the soul's natural capacities before asserted and inferred, its moral incapacity,<sup>4</sup> I mean its

<sup>1</sup> Rom. vi. 17.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. xix.

<sup>3</sup> John vi.

<sup>4</sup> That moral incapacity is also in some sense truly natural; that is, in the same sense wherein we are said to be by nature "the children of wrath," Eph. ii. 3. Therefore human nature must be considered as *created by God*, and as *propagated by man*. In the former sense, as God is the Author of it,

wicked aversation from God, is such as none but God himself can overcome.

Nor is that aversation the less culpable, for that it is so hardly overcome; but the more. It is an aversation of *will*; and who sees not, that every man is more wicked, according as his will is more wickedly bent? Hence his impotency or inability to turn to God, is not such as that he cannot turn if he would; but it consists in this, that he is not willing. He affects a distance from God.

Which shows therefore the necessity still of this change. For the possibility of it, and the encouragement,—according to the methods wherein God is wont to dispense his grace,—the sinner hath to hope and endeavour it, will more fitly fall into consideration elsewhere.

it is taken in this distinction, of moral and natural impotency, which needs not further explication; yet you may take this account of it from Dr. Twisse, ‘Impotentia faciendi quod Deo gratum est et acceptum, non est impotentia nature, sed morum. Nulla etenim nobis deest facultas nature per peccatum originale, juxta illud Augustini: nulli agnoscendæ veritatis abstulit facultatem. Adhuc remanet potentia, quâ facere possumus quæcunque volumus.’—*Vind.* l. iii. errat. 9. sect. 6. ‘Naturalem potentiam, quidlibet agendi pro arbitrio ipsorum, dicimus ad omnes transmitti, non autem potentiam moralem.’—*Vindic. Criminat.* 3, s. i. digr. 2, chap. 3.

## CHAPTER XIII.

FOURTH INFERENCE. THAT THE SOUL IN WHICH SUCH A CHANGE IS WROUGHT, RESTLESSLY PURSUES THIS BLESSEDNESS TILL IT BE ATTAINED.

—FIFTH INFERENCE. THAT THE KNOWING OF GOD, AND CONFORMITY TO HIM, ARE SATISFYING THINGS, AND DO NOW IN A DEGREE SATISFY, ACCORDING TO THE MEASURE WHEREIN THEY ARE ATTAINED.—SIXTH INFERENCE. THAT THE LOVE OF GOD TOWARDS HIS PEOPLE IS GREAT, THAT HATH DESIGNED FOR THEM SO GREAT, AND EVEN A SATISFYING GOOD.

4. INF. It is further to be inferred, that a soul wherein such a change is wrought, pursues this blessedness with *restless supreme desire*, till it attain to the fulness thereof. We have here a plainly implied description of the posture and tendency of such a soul, even of a sanctified holy soul which had therefore undergone this blessed change, towards this state of blessedness: "I shall," saith he, "be satisfied with thy likeness," as much as to say, I cannot be satisfied otherwise. We have seen how great a change is necessary to dispose the soul to this blessedness, which being once wrought, nothing else can now satisfy it. Such a thing is this blessedness, (I speak now of so much of it as is previous and conducing to satisfaction, or of blessedness materially considered, the Divine glory to be beheld and participated;) it is of that nature, it makes the soul restless, it lets it not be quiet, after it hath got some apprehension of it, till it attain the full enjoyment. The whole life of such an one is a continual "seeking God's face." So attractive is this glory of a subject rightly disposed to it! While others crave "corn and wine," this is the sum of the holy soul's desires: "Lord,

lift thou up the light of thy countenance,"<sup>1</sup> etc. The same thing is the object of its present desires that shall be of its eternal satisfaction and enjoyments. This is now its "*one thing*," the request insisted on, "to behold the beauty of the Lord,"<sup>2</sup> etc.; and while in any measure it doth so, yet it is still "looking for this blessed hope," still hoping to be "like him, see him as he is." The expectation of satisfaction in this state, implies the restless working of desire till then; for what is this satisfaction, but the fulfilling of our desires, the perfecting of the soul's motions in a complacential rest? Motion and rest do exactly correspond to each other. Nothing can naturally rest in any place to which it was not before naturally inclined to move; and the rest is proportionably more composed and steady, according as the motion was stronger and more vigorous. By how much the heavier any body is, so much the stronger and less resistible is its motion downward; and then accordingly it is less movable when it hath attained its resting-place. It is therefore a vanity and contradiction, to speak of the soul's being satisfied in that which it was not before desirous of.<sup>3</sup> And that state which it shall ultimately and eternally acquiesce in—with a rest that must therefore be understood to be most composed and sedate—towards it must it needs move with the strongest and most unsatisfied desire; a desire that is supreme, prevalent, and triumphant over all other desires, and over all obstructions to itself; least capable of diversion, or of pitching upon anything short of the term aimed at. Ask therefore the holy soul, What is thy supreme desire? and so far as it understands itself, it must answer, 'To see and partake the Divine glory; to behold the blessed face of God, till his likeness be transfused through all my powers, and his entire image be perfectly formed in

<sup>1</sup> Ps. iv.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. xxvii.

<sup>3</sup> Aptitudinally, I mean, and *ex hypothesi*; that is, supposing the knowledge of the object: otherwise as to actual explicit desires, God doth give us beyond what we can ask or think. But it is impossible the soul should rest satisfied in that, which upon knowledge it is undesirous of, and doth or would reject.

me. Present to my view what else you will, I can be satisfied in nothing else but this.'

Therefore this leaves a black note upon those wretched souls that are wholly strangers to such desires; that would be better satisfied to dwell always in dust; that shun the blessed face of God as hell itself, and to whom the most despicable vanity is a more desirable sight than that of Divine glory. Miserable souls! Consider your state. Can that be your blessedness which you desire not? Or do you think God will receive any into his blessed presence, to whom it shall be a burden? Methinks, upon the reading of this, you should presently doom yourselves and see your sentence written in your breasts. Compare your hearts with this holy man's; see if there be anything like this in the temper of your spirits, and never think well of yourselves till you find it so.

5. Inf. The knowledge of God and conformity to him are in their own nature apt to satisfy the desires of the soul, and even now actually do so in the measure wherein they are attained. Some things are not of a satisfying nature; there is nothing tending to satisfaction in them. And then, the continual heaping together of such things doth no more towards satisfaction than the accumulating of mathematical points would towards the compacting of a solid body, or the multiplication of cyphers only, to the making of a sum. But what shall one day satisfy, hath in itself a power and aptitude thereto. The act, whenever it is, supposes the power. Therefore the hungry, craving soul, that would fain be happy, but knows not how, needs not spend its days in making uncertain guesses and fruitless attempts and trials; it may fix its hovering thoughts, and upon assurance here given, say, 'I have now found at last where satisfaction may be had; and have only this to do, to bend all my powers hither and intend this one thing, the possessing myself of this blessed rest; earnestly to endeavour and patiently to wait for it. Happy discovery! welcome tidings! I now know which way to turn my eye and direct my pursuit. I shall no longer spend myself in dubious toilsome wanderings,

in anxious vain inquiry. I have found! I have found! blessedness is here. If I can but get a lively, efficacious sight of God, I have enough—"Show me the Father, and it sufficeth."

Let the weary wandering soul bethink itself, and retire to God; he will not mock thee with shadows, as the world hath done. "This is eternal life, to know him the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom he hath sent." Apart from Christ thou canst not know nor see him with fruit and comfort; but the gospel revelation, which is the revelation of God in Christ, gives thee a lovely prospect of him. His glory shines "in the face of Jesus Christ;" and when, by beholding it, thou art "changed into the same likeness," and findest thyself gradually changing more and more, "from glory to glory," thou wilt find thyself accordingly in a gradual tendency towards satisfaction and blessedness: that is, do but seriously set thyself to study and contemplate the being and attributes of God, and then look upon him as through the Mediator. He is willing to be reconciled to thee and become thy God; and so long let thine eye fix and dwell here till it affect thy heart, and the proper impress of the gospel be by the Spirit of the Lord enstamped upon it; till thou find thyself wrought to a compliance with his holy will, and his image formed in thee; and thou shalt soon experience thou art entering into his rest; and wilt relish a more satisfying pleasure in this blessed change than all thy worldly sensual enjoyments did ever afford thee before.

Surely, if the perfect vision and perception of his glorious likeness will yield a complete satisfaction at last, the initial and progressive tendencies towards the former will proportionably infer the latter.

It is obvious hence to collect who are in this world—ordinarily and, *cæteris paribus*, where more unusual violent temptations hinder not—the most satisfied and contented persons; even those that have most of the clarifying sights of God, and that thence partake most of his image: indeed, Scripture only vouchsafes the name to such sights of God,—



“he that doeth evil hath not seen God.”<sup>1</sup> Such as have most of a godly frame wrought into their spirits, and that have hearts most attempered and conformed to God, these are the most contented persons in the world. Content is part of the gain that attends godliness; it concurring, renders the other a great gain,—“godliness with contentment:”<sup>2</sup> the form of expression discovers how connatural contentment is to godliness; as if they were not to be mentioned apart. Godliness, as if he had said, is a very gainful thing; but if you would comprehend the gainfulness of it fully, do not abstract too curiously; take in with it that which is of so near an alliance that you will hardly know how to consider them apart; let its inseparable adjunct, “contentment,” go along with it, and you will find it a gainful thing indeed.

The true knowledge of God so directly tends to holiness, and that to contentation, that it may be too evidently concluded that a discontented person hath little of the one or the other, not much knowledge and less grace; he is so far from being like God, that in the Apostle’s language above we may say, he “hath not seen him.” Doth that person know God or hath ever seen him, that falls not into the dust, admiring so glorious a Majesty? that subjects not himself to him with loyal affections, accounting it his only grand concernment to please and serve him? But the discontented person takes upon him, as if he were God alone, and as if he expected every creature to do him homage, and thought the creation were made for the pleasure and service of none but him. Hath that person ever seen God, that acknowledges him not a sufficient portion, a full, all-comprehending good? Hath he seen him, that sees not reason to trust him, to commit all his concernments to him? Hath he seen him that loves him not, and delights not in his love? Hath he seen him that quits not all for him, and abandons not every private interest to espouse his? And how evidently do these things tend to quiet and compose the soul! Discontent proceeds

<sup>1</sup> 1 John iii. 6; 3 John 11.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Tim. vi. 6.

from idolising thoughts of ourselves; it is rooted in self-conceit, in self-dependence, self-love, self-seeking, all which despicable idols—or that one great idol, SELF, thus variously served and idolised—one sight of the Divine glory would confound and bring to nothing. The sights of God melt the heart, break it under a sense of sin, and hence compose it to a meek, peaceful humility; but the discontented spirit is an unbroken, proud, imperious spirit. The sights of God purify the soul, refine it from the dross of this vile world, make it daily aspire to a conformity unto the pure and spiritual nature of God. But a discontented spirit is a sensual terrene spirit—for what but such objects are the usual matter of most men's discontents?—taking sensuality in its just latitude, it is a low dunghill spirit, fit for nothing but to rake and scabble in the dirt.

I insist upon this, apprehending (what deserves more lamentations than it hath observation) that too many annex a profession of eminent godliness and spirituality to an indulged, querulous, impatient temper of spirit; join a splendid appearance of piety to an unreformed perverse frowardness, which agree as well as a jewel of gold to a swine's snout: nothing pleases them; their mercies are not worth the acknowledgment; their afflictions intolerable, not to be borne. They fall out and quarrel with all occurrences, actions, events; neither man nor God doth anything good in their sight. The world is not well governed; nothing falls out well as to themselves. What can possibly be thought on more repugnant to the knowledge of God, the grand design of all religion, and the very spirit of the gospel, than this temper? Which way do *these* tend and aim but to lead souls to blessedness; to bring them into a peaceful, happy, satisfied state and frame? And must we, because that end cannot be attained here, therefore go the quite contrary way? or pretend we are going to heaven with our backs turned upon it? Sure the discoveries God now makes of himself to us, and by which he impresses his likeness upon his own,—though they ultimately design our satisfaction and blessed-

ness in heaven,—as intermediate thereunto, they aim at the bringing us into a heaven upon earth; to form us unto a life agreeable, and that hath analogy with that of heaven; unto which nothing is more analogous in our present state, than that peace and serenity which result from Divine knowledge and holiness; nothing more inconsistent, than a peevish, fretful, turbulent spirit. The one is a participation of a bright and mild light from heaven; the other, of a dark and raging fire from hell. It is only God's face, his glorious likeness reflected on our souls, that shall satisfy hereafter, and make heaven heaven. He doth not now wholly conceal himself from us, nor altogether hide his face. The shining of the same face, in what degree he now vouchsafes it, will make this earth a heaven too. One glance towards him may transmit a lively pleasant lustre upon our spirits: "they looked on him, and were lightened;"<sup>1</sup> and we live in the expectation of clearer and more impressive eternal visions. It will become us to express a present satisfiedness proportionable to our present sights and expectations; and to endeavour daily to see more, and to be more like God, that we may be daily more and more satisfied; while we cannot yet attain, to be making gradual approaches towards that blessed state. By how much any have more of the vision and likeness of God in their present state, so much they approach nearer unto satisfaction.

6. Inf. We infer the love of God to his people is great, which hath designed for them so great and even a *satisfying* good. We cannot overlook the occasion this doctrine gives us to consider and contemplate a while the love of God. If this shall be the blessedness of his saints, it is a great love that shall be the spring and source of it.

Two things here before our eyes discover the greatness of his love: that it designs satisfaction to the persons meant; and that they shall be satisfied with the Divine vision and likeness.

1. *It designs their satisfaction.* This is as far as love can

<sup>1</sup> Ps. xxxiv. 5.

go. It is love to the uttermost: it doth not satisfy itself, till it satisfy them. It is love to spare an enemy, to relieve a stranger; but to satisfy for ever them that were both,—this sure exceeds all the wonted measures of love. Much love is shown in the forgiveness of sin, in the supply of necessities; but herein, as the Apostle speaks in another case, is the love of God perfected as to its exercise: it hath now perfectly attained its end, when it hath not left so much as a craving desire, not a wish unsatisfied; the soul cannot say, ‘I wish it were better; oh that I had but this one thing more to complete my happiness!’ It hath neither pretence nor inclination to think such a thought. Divine love is now at rest. It was travailing, big with gracious designs, before; it hath now delivered itself. It would rather create new heavens every moment than not satisfy: but it hath now done it to the full. The utmost capacity of the soul is filled up; it can be no happier than it is. This is love’s triumph over all the miseries, wants, and desires of a languishing soul; the appropriate, peculiar glory of Divine love. If all the excellencies of the whole creation besides were contracted into one glorious creature, it would never be capable of this boast, ‘I have satisfied one soul.’ The love of God leaves none unsatisfied but the proud despisers of it. Now is the eternal sabbath of love. Now it enters into rest, having finished all its works; it views them over now with delight, for lo! they are all good: its works of pardon, of justification, and adoption; its works of regeneration, of conversion, and sanctification; its establishing, quickening, comforting works: they are all good, good in themselves, and in this their end, the satisfaction and repose of blessed souls. Now Divine love puts on the crown, ascends the throne, and the many myriads of glorified spirits fall down about it and adore: all profess to owe to it the satisfying pleasures they all enjoy. Who can consider the unspeakable satisfaction of those blessed spirits, and not also reflect upon this exalted greatness of Divine love?

2. It is again great love, if we consider *wherewith they shall*

*be satisfied.* The sight and participation of the Divine glory,—his face, his likeness, his represented and impressed glory. There may be great love that never undertakes nor studies to satisfy all the desires of the persons we cast our love upon, especially where nothing will satisfy but high and great matters. The love of God knows no difficulties, nor can be overset. The greater the performance or vouchsafement, the more suitable to Divine love. It hath resolved to give the soul a plenary satisfaction, perfectly to content all its desires; and since nothing else can do it, but an eternal beholding of the glorious face of the Divine Majesty and a transformation into his own likeness, that shall not be withheld. Yea, it hath created, refined, enlarged its capacity on purpose, that it might be satisfied with nothing less. Great love may sometimes be signified by a glance; the offered view of a willing face. Thus our Lord Jesus invites his church to discover her own love, and answer his, “Let me see thy face,” etc.<sup>1</sup> Love is not more becomingly expressed or gratified than by mutual looks; *ubi amor, ibi oculus*. How great is that love that purposely lays aside the veil, that never turns away its own, nor permits the aversion of the beholder’s eye throughout eternity. Now we “see in a glass; then face to face,” as if never weary of beholding on either part; but on that part the condescension lies is the transcendent admirable love; *that* a generous beneficent, the *other*—till it be satisfied here—a craving indigent love. And how inexpressible a condescension is this! Poor wretches, many of whom possibly were once so low, that a strutting grandee would have thought himself affronted by their look, and have met with threatening rebukes their over-daring, venturous eye; lo! now they are permitted,—to stand before princes? that’s a mean thing,—to feed their eyes with Divine glory, to view the face of God. He sets them before his face for ever.

And that eternal vision begets in them an eternal likeness;

<sup>1</sup> Cant. ii. 14.

they behold and partake glory at once, that their "joy may be full." They behold not a glorious God with deformed souls; that would render them a perpetual abomination and torment to themselves. Love cannot permit that heaven should be their affliction; that they should have cause to loathe and be weary of themselves in that presence. It satisfies them by clothing and filling them with glory; by making them partake of the Divine likeness, as well as behold it. It is reckoned a great expression of a complying love, but to give a picture; when the parties loved only permit themselves to view in a mute representation a vicarious face. This is much more a *vital* image,—as before; God's own living likeness propagated in the soul; the inchoation of it is called the Divine love, the seed of God. What amazing love is this, of the great God to a worm: not to give over till he have assimilated it to his own glory; till it appear as a ray of light begotten of the Father of lights! "Every one," saith the Apostle, "that doeth righteousness is born of him;"<sup>1</sup> and then it follows, "Behold, what manner of love . . . to be the sons of God; to be like him, to see him as he is,"<sup>2</sup> etc. How great a word is that, spoken in reference to our present state . . . "to make us partakers of his holiness."<sup>3</sup> And—as well it might—it is instanced as an effect and argument of love; for sure chastening itself, abstracted from that end of it, doth not import love. "Whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth," . . . and then by and by, in the same series and line of discourse is added . . . "to make us partakers of his holiness." Love always either supposes similitude or intends it; and is sufficiently argued by it either way. And sure the love of God cannot be more directly expressed, than in his first intending to make a poor soul like him, while he loves it with compassion; and then imprinting and perfecting that likeness, that he may love it with eternal delight. Love is here the first and the last, the beginning and end in all this business.

<sup>1</sup> 1 John ii. 29.<sup>2</sup> Chap. iii. 1.<sup>3</sup> Heb. xii. 14

## CHAPTER XIV.

SEVENTH INFERENCE. THAT SINCE THIS BLESSEDNESS IS LIMITED TO A QUALIFIED SUBJECT, "I IN RIGHTEOUSNESS," THE UNRIGHTEOUS ARE NECESSARILY LEFT EXCLUDED.—EIGHTH INFERENCE. THAT RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NO VAIN THING, INASMUCH AS IT HATH SO HAPPY AN ISSUE AND ENDS SO WELL.

7. INF. Considering this blessedness is not common, but limited to a qualified subject—"I in righteousness,"—a person clothed in righteousness: it evidently follows, the unrighteous are necessarily excluded and shut out,—can have no part nor portion in this blessedness. The same thing that the Apostle tells us, without an inference; "Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God?"<sup>1</sup> etc.; intimating that to be a most confessed known thing: *know ye not?* is it possible ye can be ignorant of this?

The natural necessity of what hath been here inferred, hath been argued already from the consideration of the nature of this blessedness. The legal necessity of it, arising from the Divine will and law, is that I mainly intend at present. By such a necessity also, they are excluded, who by God's rule—according to which the supreme judgment must be managed—shall be found unrighteous: those that come not up to the terms of the gospel covenant; never accepted the offers nor submitted to the commands of it; and that hence consequently are unrelated to Christ, and ununited to him; no way capable of advantage by his most perfect and all-sufficient righteousness, that alone fully answers all

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. vi.

the exactions and demands of the covenant of works: and so, who are at last found unrighteous by the old law and the new; the law both of the Creator and Redeemer too.

There is the same necessity these should be excluded, as that God should be just and true. The word is gone forth of his mouth in righteousness, and cannot return. He did not dally with sinners, when he settled those constitutions whence this necessity results. "He is not a man, that he should lie; nor the son of man, that he should repent." A heathen understood so much of the nature of God.

I have thought sometimes with much wonder, of the stupid folly of unsanctified hearts; they are even confounded in their own wishes: and would have, in order to their security, they know not what. Were the question faithfully put to the very heart of such an one, What wouldst thou have done in order to thy eternal safety from Divine wrath and vengeance? would not the answer be, Oh that God would recall those severe constitutions he hath made; and not insist so strictly on what he hath required in the gospel in order to the salvation of sinners? But, foolish wretch! dost thou know what thou sayest? Wouldst thou have God repeal the gospel, that thou mayest be more secure? In what a case art thou then? Hast thou no hope if the gospel stand in force? What hope wilt thou have if it do not? Must the hopes of all the world be ruined to establish thine? and yet leave them involved in the common ruin too? What but the gospel gives the least hope to apostate sinners? There is now hope for thee in the gospel promise, if thou return to God. "Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts; and let him turn to the Lord, and he will have mercy upon him: and to our God, and he will abundantly pardon."<sup>1</sup> But take away the gospel, and where art thou? Were it possible for thee to repent and become a new man, what settles the connexion between repentance and salvation, but the gospel promise? Will the violated law of works

<sup>1</sup> Isa. lv.



accept thy repentance instead of obedience? Doth it not expressly preclude any such expectation? Doth it give any ground to look for anything but death after sin? Thou must therefore fly to the gospel, or yield thyself lost: and know, it contains none but faithful and true sayings, that have more stability in them than the foundations of heaven and earth: therefore expect nothing to be altered for thy sake. The gospel constitution was settled long before thou wast born: thou comest too late with thy exceptions (if thou hadst any) against it. Remember therefore, this is one of the unalterable determinations of this gospel, "without holiness thou shalt never see God," or, which amounts to the same, thou canst not "behold his face" but in "righteousness." There is no word in all the Bible of more certain truth than this. In this also, how apt are sinners foolishly to entangle themselves. The gospel is true, and to be believed, till they meet with something that crosses them and goes against the hair, and then they hope it is not so. But, vain man! if once thou shake the truth of God, what wilt thou stay thyself upon? Is God true when he promises? and is he not as true when he threatens? If that be a true saying, "Say to the righteous, it shall be well with him,"—is not that as much to be regarded, "Wo to the wicked, it shall be ill with him; the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him." Are not these of equal authority? If thou hadst any reason to hope thou mayest be happy though thou never be righteous, is there not as much reason to fear thou mightest be miserable though thou be; since the one is as much against the flat express word of God as the other? Let not thy love to sin betray thee out of all religion and thy wits together. Wherein wilt thou believe one upon the bare value of his word, that will lie to thee in anything? Yea, and as it is the same authority that is affronted in every command, whence disobedience to one is a breach of all; so is the same veracity denied in every truth, and the disbelief of one belies all; and wilt thou believe him in anything,

thou hast proclaimed a liar in everything? Therefore, so little hast thou gained by disbelieving the Divine revelation in this thing, that thou hast brought thyself to this miserable dilemma: if the word of God be false, thou hast no foundation of any faith left thee; if it be true, it dooms thee to eternal banishment from his blessed face while thou remainest in thy unrighteousness. It will not be thy advantage then to disbelieve this gospel record, but to consider it and take it to heart; it will prove never the less true at last, for that thou wilt not believe it: "Shall thy unbelief make the truth of God of none effect?" And if thou wouldest but reasonably consider the case, methinks thou shouldst soon be convinced. Since thou acknowledgest, as I suppose thee to do, that there are two states of men in the other world, a state of blessedness and a state of misery; and two sorts of men in this world, the righteous and the unrighteous: let thy reason and conscience now judge, who shall be allotted to the one state and who to the other. Sure, if thou acknowledge a righteous Judge of all the world, thou canst not think he will turn men promiscuously into heaven or hell at random without distinction: much less canst thou be so absurd and mad, as to think all the unrighteous shall be saved and the righteous perish: and then what is left thee to judge, but that which I am now urging upon thee, that when the righteous shall be admitted to the vision of God's blessed face, the unrighteous shall be driven forth into outer darkness.

It may be, some here will be ready to say, But to what purpose is all this? they were of the same mind before, and cannot think that any one would ever say the contrary.

Nor do I think so either; but it is one thing not to believe a conclusion to be true, and another to profess a contrary belief: and one thing to believe a conclusion, another to think we believe it. Men often know not their own minds. In practical matters, it is best seen what a man's belief is by his practice: for when any profess to believe this or that practical truth, relating to their salvation, if they believe it not practically,—that is, with such a belief as will

command their suitable practice,—it matters not what belief they are of, or whether they were of that judgment or no: yea, it will prove in the issue better for them they had been of another, when their own professed belief shall be urged against them. But let us consider a little, how in practical matters of less concernment we would estimate a man's belief: you meet a traveller upon the way, who tells you the bridge over such an unpassable river is broken down, and that if you venture, you perish; if you believe him, you return; if you hold on, he reasonably concludes you believe him not; and will therefore be apt to say to you, 'If you will not believe me, you may make trial.' Your physician tells you a disease is growing upon you that in a short time will prove incurable and mortal, but if you presently use the means he shall prescribe, it is capable of an easy remedy: how would you yourself have your belief of your physician judged of in this case? Would you expect to be believed, if you should say you do not at all distrust your physician's integrity and judgment, but yet you resolve not to follow his directions? unless you would have us believe too, that you are weary of your life, and would fain be rid of it. There is no riddle or mystery in this. How ridiculous would men make themselves, if in matters of common concernment, they should daily practise directly contrary to their professed belief? How few would believe them serious or in their wits? But however, call this believing or what you will, we contend not about the name; the belief of such a thing can no further do you good, you can be nothing the better for it further, than as it engages you to take a course suitable and consequent to such a belief. To believe that there is a hell, and run into it; that unrighteousness persisted in will damn you, and yet will live in it;—to what purpose is it, to make your boasts of this faith?

But since you are willing to call this believing, all the foregoing reasoning is to engage you to consider what you believe. Do you believe that unrighteousness will be the death of your soul; will eternally separate you from God, and the presence of his glory? And when you have reasoned

the matter with yourself, you find it to be certainly so,—should not such a thing be more deeply pondered? The bare proposal of an evident truth commands present assent; but if I further *bend my mind* to reason out the same thing to myself, I am occasioned to take notice of the grounds, dependencies, the habitudes of it, what it rests upon and whither it tends, and thence more discern its importance and of what moment it is, than I should have done, if upon first view I had assented only and dismissed it my thoughts. And yet is it possible you should think this to be true, and not think it a most important truth? Is it a small matter in your account, whether you shall be blessed or miserable for ever? whether you be saved or perish eternally? Or is it considered by you according as the weight of the matter requires, that as you are found righteous or unrighteous, so will it everlastingly fare with you?

You may possibly say you already conclude yourself righteous, therefore no further employ your thoughts about it.

But methinks you should hardly be able, however, to put such a thing out of your thoughts, while as yet the final determination is not given in the case. If a man have a question yet depending, concerning his life or estate, though his business be never so clear he will hardly forget it, the trial not being yet past. And though in this matter, you have no reason to suspect error or corruption in your Judge,—through which many honest causes may miscarry in a human judicature,—yet have you no reason to suspect yourself? If the Holy Spirit hath assured you, it hath not stupified you; but as you have then the less of fear, you have the more of love and joy. Therefore you will not thence mind such a concernment the less, but with the more delight; and therefore also, most probably, with the more frequency and intension. What a pleasure will it be to review evidences, and say, ‘Lo! here are the mediums by which I make out my title to the eternal inheritance. Such and such characters give me the confidence to number myself

among God's righteous ones.' And do you lead that heavenly raised life? Do you live in those sweet and ravishing comforts of the Holy Ghost, that may bespeak you one whom he hath sealed up to the day of redemption?

If you pretend not to any such certainty, but rely upon your own judgment of your case, are you sure you are neither mistaken in the notion of the righteousness required, nor in the application of it to your own soul?

Possibly, you may think yourself, because in your ordinary dealing you wrong no man—yourself being judge—a very righteous person. But evident it is, when the Scripture uses this term as descriptive of God's own people, and to distinguish between them that shall be saved and perish, it takes it in that comprehensive sense before explained: and, however, it requires at least much more of thee under other expressions, as thou canst hardly be so ignorant but to know. And do but use thy reason here a little, and demand of thy self: is he to be accounted a righteous person, that thinks it fit to avoid wronging a man, but makes no conscience at all of wronging God? More particularly: is it righteous to live all thy days in a willing ignorance of the Author of thy being; never once to inquire, "Where is God my maker?"<sup>1</sup> Is it righteous to forget him days without number, not to have him from day to day in all thy thoughts? Is it righteous to estrange thyself from him and live as without him in the world, while thou livest, movest, and hast thy being in him? not to glorify him in whose hands thy breath is? to be a lover of pleasure more than God? a worshipper, in thy very soul, of the creature more than the Creator? Is it righteous to harden thy heart against his fear and love? to live under his power, and never reverence it; his goodness, and never acknowledge it? to affront his authority, to belie his truth, abuse his mercy, impose upon his patience, defy his justice; to exalt thy own interest against his; the trifling petite interest of a silly worm against the great all-compre-

<sup>1</sup> Job xxxv.

hending interest of the common Lord of all the world? to cross his will, to do thy own? to please thyself to the displeasing of him? Whence hadst thou thy measures of justice, if this be just?

Again, is it righteous to “deny the Lord that bought thee,” to neglect that great salvation which he is the Author of? and whereas he came to bless thee in turning thee from thine iniquities, wilfully to remain still in an accursed servitude to sin? “when He was made manifest to destroy the works of the devil,” still to yield thyself “a captive at his will?” Whereas He died that thou mightest not “any longer live to thyself,” but “to Him that died for thee and rose again,” and that He “might redeem thee from thy vain conversation;” and that thou art so expressly told, that such as still lead sensual lives, mind earthly things, have not their conversation in heaven, are enemies to the cross of Christ,—is it no unrighteousness, that in these respects thy whole life should be nothing else but a constant contradiction to the very design of his dying? a perpetual hostility, a very tilting at his cross? Is there no unrighteousness in thy obstinate infidelity, that wickedly denies belief to his glorious truths, acceptance of his gracious offers, subjection to his holy laws? No unrighteousness in thy obstinate, remorseless impenitency? thy heart that cannot repent, that melts not, while a crucified Jesus, amidst his agonies and dying pangs, cries to thee from the cross, ‘Oh sinner, enough, thy hard heart breaks mine! yield at last, and turn to God.’ Is it righteous to live as no way under law to Christ? to persist in actual rebellion against his just government, which he died, and revived, and rose again to establish over the living and the dead? yea, and that while thou pretendest thyself a Christian? In a word: is it righteous to tread under foot the Son of God, to vilify his blood and despise his Spirit? Is this the righteousness that thou talkest of? Are these thy qualifications for the everlasting blessedness?

If thou say, thou confessest thou art in thyself, in these several respects, altogether unrighteous; but thou hopest

the righteousness of Christ will be sufficient to answer for all;—

No doubt, Christ's righteousness is abundantly available to all the ends for which it was intended by the Father and him; but it shall never answer all the ends that a foolish wicked heart will fondly imagine to itself.

In short, it serves to excuse thy non-performance of, and stands instead of, thy perfect sinless obedience to the law of works; but it serves not instead of thy performance of what is required of thee, as the condition of the gospel covenant: that is, it shall never supply the room of faith, repentance, regeneration, holiness, the loving of Christ above all, and God in him; so as to render these unnecessary, or salvation possible without them. There is not one iota or tittle in the Bible, that so much as intimates an unregenerate person, an unbeliever, an impenitent or unholy person, shall be saved by Christ's righteousness; but enough to the contrary, every one knows that hath the least acquaintance with the Scriptures.

Vain man! what, is Christ divided, and divided against himself; Christ *without* against Christ *within*? His sufferings on the cross and foregoing obedience, against his Spirit and government in the soul? Did Christ die to take away the necessity of our being Christians? And must his death serve, not to destroy sin out of the world, but Christianity? Who hath taught thee so wickedly to misunderstand the design of Christ's dying? And when the Scripture so plainly tells thee, "That God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life;"<sup>1</sup> and "that he became the author of eternal salvation to them that obey him;"<sup>2</sup> yea, and "that he will come in flaming fire to take vengeance on them that know and obey him not;" what should induce thee to think thou mayst be saved by him, whether thou believest and obeyest or not?

<sup>1</sup> John iii. 16.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. v. 9.

No, if ever thou think to see God and be happy in him, thou must have a righteousness in thee resembling his; the very product, the thing wrought, in the work of regeneration. "If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness is born of him:"<sup>1</sup> whereupon follows the description of the blessedness of such righteous ones, in the beginning of the next chapter,—“They are sons,—they shall be like,” etc. So that in a word, without some sight of God here, there is no seeing him hereafter; without some likeness to him now, none hereafter. And such as are destitute of that heart-conformity to the gospel, wherein the evangelical righteousness stands, are so far from it, that we may say to them as our Saviour to the Jews, “Ye have neither heard his voice, nor seen his shape;”<sup>2</sup> that is, you have never had right notion or any the least true glimpse of him; your hearts are wholly destitute of all Divine impressions whatsoever.

8. Inf. We may further infer from this qualification of the subject of blessedness, that righteousness is no vain thing. That is not in vain that ends so well, and hath so happy an issue at last. Scripture tells us, that “the labour of the righteous tendeth to life;”<sup>3</sup> and that we may understand it of their labour as they are righteous, we are more plainly told, that “righteousness tendeth to life;”<sup>4</sup> and that to them that sow righteousness shall be a sure reward. That “the righteous shall shine as the sun in the kingdom of their Father;”<sup>5</sup> “the righteous into eternal life.”<sup>6</sup> And we here see that righteousness ends in the blessed sight of God’s glorious face, in being satisfied with the Divine likeness. Foolish sinners are justly upbraided that they spend their “labour for that which satisfies not;”<sup>7</sup> take much pains to no purpose; such are all the works of sin, toilsome, fruitless; “what fruit had ye of those things,” namely, which ye wrought when you were “free from

<sup>1</sup> 1 John ii. 29.<sup>2</sup> John v. 37.<sup>3</sup> Prov. x. 16.<sup>4</sup> Prov. xi. 19.<sup>5</sup> Matt. xiii. 43.<sup>6</sup> Ch. xxv. 46.<sup>7</sup> Isa. lv. 2.



righteousness," "whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death."<sup>1</sup> But, it follows, "being now made free from sin, and become servants to God,"—which is paraphrased above by "servants to righteousness,"—"ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life." The fruit is a continual increase of holiness, a growing more and more like God; till at last everlasting life, satisfaction with his likeness, do crown and consummate all.

You have now what to answer to the atheist's profane query, What profit is it to serve God? to what purpose to lead so strict and precise a life? You may now see to what purpose it is; and whereunto godliness, which righteousness here includes, is profitable, as having besides what it entitles to here, "the promise of that life which is to come."

There needs no more to discover anything not to be vain—inasmuch as nothing can be said to be so but in reference to an end, as being good for nothing—than the eviction of these two things;—

That it aims at a truly worthy and valuable end; and that its tendency thereto is direct and certain.

In the present case, both these are obvious enough at the first view.

For as to the former of them: all the world will agree without disputing the matter, that the last end of man, that is, which he ultimately propounds to himself, is his best good; and that he can design no further good to himself than satisfaction; nothing after or beyond that: and what can afford it, if the vision and participation of the Divine glory do not?

As to the latter: besides all that assurance given by Scripture constitution to the righteous man concerning his future reward, let the consciences be consulted of the most besotted sinners, in any lucid interval, and they will give their suffrage—Balaam, that so earnestly followed the reward of unrighteousness, not excepted,—that the way of righteous-

<sup>1</sup> Rom. vi. 20, 21.

ness is that only likely way to happiness ; and would therefore desire to die, at least, the righteous man's death, and that their latter end should be like his. So is wisdom (I might call it righteousness too ; the wicked man is the Scripture fool, and the righteous the wise man) justified not by her children only, but by her enemies also.

And sure it is meet that she should be more openly justified by her children, and that they learn to silence and repress those misgiving thoughts,—“Surely I have washed my hands in vain,”<sup>1</sup> etc.,—and “be stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as they know their labour is not in vain in the Lord.”<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Ps. lxxiii.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 58.

## CHAPTER XV.

TWO OTHER INFERENCES FROM THE CONSIDERATION OF THE SEASON OF THIS BLESSEDNESS—THE FORMER, THAT INASMUCH AS THIS BLESSEDNESS IS NOT ATTAINED IN THIS LIFE, THE PRESENT HAPPINESS OF SAINTS MUST IN A GREAT PART CONSIST IN HOPE—THE LATTER, THAT GREAT IS THE WISDOM AND SAGACITY OF THE RIGHTEOUS MAN WHO WAIVES A PRESENT TEMPORARY HAPPINESS, AND CHOOSES THAT WHICH IS DISTANT AND FUTURE.

INASMUCH as the season of this blessedness is not on this side the grave, nor expected by saints till they awake; we may further infer;—

9. Inf. That their happiness in the meantime doth very much consist *in hope*; or that hope must needs be of very great necessity and use to them in their present state for their comfort and support. It were not otherwise possible to subsist in the absence and want of their highest good, while nothing in this lower world is, as to kind and nature, suitable to their desires, or makes any colourable overture to them of satisfaction and happiness. Others, as the Psalmist observes, “have their portion in this life;” that good, which as to the species and kind of it is most grateful to them; is present, under view, within sight; and, (as the Apostle,) “Hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for it?”<sup>1</sup> But those whose more refined spirits—having received the first-fruits of the Holy Spirit of God—prompt them to groan after something beyond time

<sup>1</sup> Rom. viii. 23.

and above this sublunary sphere,—of *them* the Apostle there tells us, “that they are saved by hope.” They, as if he should say, subsist by it; they were never able to hold out, were it not for their hope; and that a hope too, beyond this life, as is the hope of a Christian; “if in this life only we had hope in Christ,”<sup>1</sup> etc. The hope of a Christian as such, is suitable to its productive cause,—the resurrection of Christ from the dead; begotten to “a lively hope by the resurrection,”<sup>2</sup> etc. Thence is it the hope of a renewed, never-dying life, the hope of a blessed immortality; whereof Christ’s resurrection was a certain argument and pledge.

Indeed the new creature is, *ab origine* and all along, a hoping creature, both in its *primum* and its *porro esse*: it is conceived, and formed, and nursed up in hope. In its production and in its progress towards perfection, it is manifestly influenced thereby. In the first return of the soul to God, hope, being then planted as a part of the holy gracious nature, now manifestly discovers itself; when the soul begins to act (as turning, after the reception of the Divine influence, is *its act*), hope insinuates itself into, or induces rather, that very act. *Returning* is not the act of a despairing, but hoping soul. It is God, apprehended as reconcilable, that attracts and wins it; while he is looked upon as an implacable enemy, the soul naturally shuns him, and comes not nigh till drawn “with those cords of a man, the bands of love.”<sup>3</sup> While it says, “there is no hope,” it says withal—desperately enough—“I have loved strangers, and after them will I go.”<sup>4</sup> But if “there be any hope in Israel concerning this thing;” if it can yet apprehend God willing to forgive,—then “let us make a covenant,”<sup>5</sup> etc.; this presently draws the hovering soul into a closure and league with him. And thus is the union continued: unstedfastness in the covenant of God is resolved into this not setting or fixing of hope in him;<sup>6</sup> or, which amounts to the same,

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 19.<sup>2</sup> 1 Pet. i. 3.<sup>3</sup> Hos. xi.<sup>4</sup> Jer. ii.<sup>5</sup> Ezra x. 2, 3.<sup>6</sup> Ps. lxxviii. 7—13.

setting of hope in God is directed as a means to steadfastness of spirit with him, and a keeping of his covenant.<sup>1</sup> *Revolting* souls are encouraged to return to the Lord upon this consideration, that salvation is *hoped* for in vain from any other;<sup>2</sup> the case being indeed the same, in all after conversions as in the first. God, as “multiplying to pardon,” and still retaining the same name, “the Lord, the Lord gracious and merciful,”<sup>3</sup>—which name, in all the severals that compose and make it up, is in his Christ,—invites back to Him the backsliding sinner and renews his thoughts of returning. And so is he afterwards under the teachings of grace led on by hope, through the whole course of religion towards the future glory. Grace appears, teaching sinners “to deny ungodliness,” etc., and in the “looking for the blessed hope, the glorious appearing of the great God,”<sup>4</sup> etc. So do they keep themselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life. Thus is the new creature formed in hope and nourished in hope. And if its eye were upon pardon at first, it is more upon the promised glory afterwards. And yet that last end hath in a degree its attractive influence upon it from the first formation of it; it is even then taught to design for glory. It is “begotten to the lively hope,” where though *hope* be taken objectively, as the apposition shows of the following words—“to an inheritance,”—yet the act is evidently connoted: for the thing hoped for is meant under that notion, as hoped for: and its whole following course is an aiming at glory; a “seeking glory, honour, immortality,”<sup>5</sup> etc. Thus is the work of sanctification carried on: “he that hath this hope purifieth himself.”<sup>6</sup> Thus are losses sustained: “the spoiling of goods taken joyfully, through the expectation of the better and enduring substance:”<sup>7</sup> the most hazardous services undertaken, even an apostleship to a despised Christ,—in the hope of eternal life which “God, that cannot lie, hath

<sup>1</sup> Ps. lxxviii. 10.<sup>2</sup> Jer. iii. 22, 23.<sup>3</sup> Exod. xxxiv. 6.<sup>4</sup> Tit. ii. 11—13.<sup>5</sup> Rom. ii. 7.<sup>6</sup> 1 John iii. 3.<sup>7</sup> Heb. x. 34.

promised ;”<sup>1</sup> all difficulties encountered and overcome, while the “helmet is the hope of salvation.”<sup>2</sup> All worldly evils are willingly endured, and all such good things quitted and forsaken, for Christ’s sake and his elects’. And if the question be asked, as it was once of Alexander, when so frankly distributing his treasures among his followers, ‘What do you reserve for yourself?’ the resolved Christian makes with him that short and brave reply, Hope. He lives upon things future and unseen. The objects any one converses with most, and in which his life is as it were bound up, are suitable to the ruling principles of life in him. “They that are after the flesh, do savour the things of the flesh ; they that are of the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.”<sup>3</sup> The principle of the fleshly life is *sense* : the principle of the spiritual life is *faith*. Sense is a mean, low, narrow, incomprehensive principle, limited to a point, this centre of earth, and τὸ νῦν, this now, of time ; it can reach no higher than terrene things, nor further than present things : so brutish is the life of him that is led by it, wholly confined to matter and time.

But the righteous live by faith. Their faith governs and maintains their life. They steer not their course according to what they see, but according to what they believe ; and their daily sustenance is by the same kind of things. Their faith influences not their actions only, but their comforts and enjoyments. They subsist by the things they believe, even invisible and eternal things ; but it is by the intervening exercise of hope, whose object is the same. The Apostle having told us from the prophet, that the “just shall live by faith,”<sup>4</sup> presently subjoins a description of that faith they live by, namely, that it is “the substance of things hoped for, and the evidence of things not seen ;”<sup>5</sup> it substantiates and realizes, evidences and demonstrates those glorious objects, so far above the reach and sphere of sense. It is constantly sent out to forage in the invisible regions for the maintenance

<sup>1</sup> Tit. i. 1, 2.<sup>2</sup> 1 Thess. v. 8.<sup>3</sup> Rom. viii. 5.<sup>4</sup> Hab. ii. 4.<sup>5</sup> Heb. xi. 1.

of this life, and thence fetches in the provisions upon which hope feeds, to the strengthening of the heart, the renewing of life and spirits. Our "inward man," saith the Apostle, "is renewed day by day; while we look," or take aim—which is next in the series of the discourse, for the intervening verse is manifestly parenthetical—"not at the things that are seen, but at the things that are not seen; for the things that are seen are temporal, but the things that are not seen are eternal."<sup>1</sup> And the word here rendered "look"<sup>2</sup> doth plainly signify the act of hope, as well as that of faith; for it doth not import a mere intuition or beholding, a taking notice, or assenting only that there are such things, but a designing or *scoping* at them (which is the very word) with an appropriative eye: as things that, notwithstanding their distance or whatsoever imaginable difficulty, are hoped to be attained to and enjoyed. And here are evidently the distinct parts of faith and hope in this business; faith, upon the authority and credit of the Divine word and promise, persuades the heart that there is such a glorious state of things reserved for saints in general,—faith can go no further, for the word of promise goes no further,—and so serves instead of eyes in the Divine light, to view those glories; or it presents them as so many substantial realities, demonstrates them, submits them to view, whence hope reaches forth to them; contends against and triumphs over all attending difficulties, and possesses them; gives the soul an early anticipated fruition of them, for its present support and relief. So that it "rejoices in the hope of the glory of God."<sup>3</sup> It might well therefore be said, "I had fainted, if I had not believed;"<sup>4</sup> or who can express how sad my case had been, if I had not believed? for there is an elegant aposiopesis in the Hebrew text, the words "I had fainted" being supplied in the translation. If I had not believed, what had become of me then; that is, inasmuch as faith

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iv. 16—18.

<sup>3</sup> Rom. v. 2; xii. 12.

<sup>2</sup> σκοπούμετων.

<sup>4</sup> Ps. xxvii. 13, 14.

feeds, as it were, those hopes which more immediately the Lord makes use of, for the strengthening his people's hearts; as it was intimated in the following words, compared with Psalm xxxi. 24. In the present case, faith ascertains the heart, of the truth of the promises, so that thus the soul states the case to itself: 'Though I have not walked to and fro in those upper regions, nor taken a view of the heavenly inheritance; though I have not been in the third heavens, and seen the ineffable glory; yet the gospel revelation, which hath brought life and immortality to light, the Word of the eternal God, who hath told me this is the state of things in the other world, cannot but be true; my faith may therefore be to me instead of eyes, and the Divine testimony must supply the place of light; both together give, methinks, a fair prospect of those far distant glorious objects which I have now in view.' Now this awakens hope, and makes it revive, and run to embrace what faith has discovered in the promise—"In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, hath promised."<sup>1</sup> It is "the word of God that causes the soul to hope;"<sup>2</sup> that is, believed, for disbelieved, it signifies nothing with it; and that not only as it contains a narration, but a promise concerning the future estate. I may without much emotion of heart hear from a traveller the description of a pleasant country where I have not been; but if the lord of that country give me, besides the account of it, an assurance of enjoying rich and ample possessions there, this presently begets a hope, the pleasure whereof would much relieve a present distressed estate; and which nothing but that of actual possession can exceed. That it is not more so with us here, admits of no excuse. Is God less to be believed than a man? Will we deny Him the privilege of being able to discover his mind, and the truth of things, credibly, which we ordinarily allow to any one that is not a convicted liar? Christ expects his disciples should very confidently assure themselves of the preparations made for

<sup>1</sup> Tit. i. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. cxix. 49.



them in another world, upon that very ground alone, that he had not told them the contrary: "Let not your hearts be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare,"<sup>1</sup> etc.; intimating to them, they ought to have that opinion of his plainness and sincerity as never to imagine he would have proselyted them to a religion that should undo them in this world, if there were not a sufficient recompense awaiting them in the other; but he would certainly have let them know the worst of their case; much more might he expect they should be confident upon his so often and expressly telling them, that so it is.

If his silence might be a ground of hope, much more his word: and surely so grounded a hope cannot but be consolatory and relieving in this sad interval, till the awaking hour.

10. Inf. Lastly, since this blessedness of the righteous is, as to the season of it, future, not expected till they awake, we may infer that it is great *wisdom and sagacity* that guides the righteous man's choice, while he waives a present and temporary, and chooses this future, expected blessedness.

It is true, that philosophy hath been wont to teach us that *choice* or election hath no place about the *end*, because that is but one, and choice always implies a competition. But that very reason evinces that, in our present state and case, choice must have place about the end. That philosophy might have suited better the state of innocent Adam; when there was nothing to blind and bribe a man's judgment, or occasion it to deliberate about the supreme end,—then it might be truly said, deliberation itself was a defection,—nor to pervert and miseline his will; and so its action, in proposing its end, would be simple intention, not choice.

But so hath the apostasy and sin of man blinded and befooled him, that he is at a loss about nothing more than

<sup>1</sup> John xiv. 1, 2.

what is the *chief good*. And though Saint Augustine<sup>1</sup> reduce Varro's 218 differing sects about it to twelve, that is enough to prove—but daily experience doth it more convincingly and sadly—a real, though most unjust competition. Therefore a sinner can never be blessed without choosing his blessedness; and therein it highly concerns him to choose aright, and that a spirit of wisdom and counsel guide his choice. While man had not as yet fallen, to deliberate whether he should adhere to God or no, was a gradual declension, the very inchoation of his fall; but having fallen, necessity makes that a virtue which was a wickedness before. There is no returning to God without considering our ways. The so much altered state of the case, quite alters the nature of the things. It was a consulting to do evil before; now to do good. And hence also, “choosing the Lord to be our God,”<sup>2</sup> becomes a necessary duty: which is to make choice of this very blessedness, that consists in the knowledge, likeness, and enjoyments of him. And now, inasmuch as this blessedness is not fully attained by the longing soul, till time expire and its eternity commence; here is a great discovery of that wisdom which guides this happy choice. This is great wisdom in *prospction*, in taking care of the future; and at how much the further distance one can provide, so much the greater reputation of wisdom is justly acquired to him; yea, we seem to place the sum of practical wisdom in this one thing, while we agree to call it *providence* under the contracted name of *prudence*. The wise man makes it at least an evidence or part of wisdom, when he tells us, “the prudent foreseeth,”<sup>3</sup> etc. The righteous man so far excels in this faculty, as that his eye looks through all the periods of time and penetrates into eternity; recommends to the soul a blessedness of that same stamp and alloy that will endure and last for ever. It will not content him to be happy for an hour or for any space that can have an end, after which it shall be possible to him to look back and re-

<sup>1</sup> De Civit. Dei, lib. xix.<sup>2</sup> Josh. xxiv.<sup>3</sup> Prov. xxii. 3.

count with himself how happy he was once : nor is he so much solicitous what his present state be, if he can but find he is upon safe terms as to his future and eternal state. “As for me,” saith the Psalmist,—he herein sorts and severs himself from them whose portion was in this life,—“I shall behold—I shall be satisfied, when I awake.”<sup>1</sup> He could not say it was well with him, but it shall be, as much as to say, ‘Let the purblind, short-sighted sensualist embrace this present world, who can see no further : let me have my portion in the world to come ; may my soul always lie open to the impression of the powers of the coming world ; and in this, so use everything as to be under the power of nothing.’ What are the pleasures of sin, that are but for a season ; or what the sufferings of this *now*, this moment of affliction, to the glory that shall be revealed, to the exceeding and eternal glory ? He considers, patient afflicted godliness will triumph at last, when riotous raging wickedness shall lament for ever. He may for a time weep and mourn, while the world rejoices ; he may be sorrowful, but his sorrow shall be turned into joy, and his joy none shall take from him.<sup>2</sup> Surely “here is wisdom ;” this is the wisdom that is from above, and tends thither. This is to be “wise unto salvation.” The righteous man is a judicious man ; he hath in a measure that judgment (wherein the Apostle prays the Philippians might abound) to “approve things that are excellent,”<sup>3</sup> and accordingly to make his choice. This is a sense little thought of by the author, wherein that sober speech of the voluptuous philosopher is most certainly true, ‘A man cannot live happily, without living wisely.’<sup>4</sup> No man shall ever enjoy the eternal pleasures hereafter, that in this acquits not himself wisely here, even in this “choosing the better part, that shall never be taken” from him. In this the plain righteous man outvies the greatest *sophists*, the scribe, the disputer, the politician, the prudent mammonist, the facetious wit, who, in

<sup>1</sup> ‘Est benè’ non potuit dicere, dicit ‘erit.’

<sup>3</sup> Phil. i. 9, 10.

<sup>2</sup> John xvi. 20—22.

<sup>4</sup> Epicurus.

their several kinds, all think themselves highly to have merited to be accounted wise: and that this point of wisdom should escape *their* notice, and be the principal thing with *him*, can be resolved into nothing else but the Divine good pleasure! In this contemplation our Lord Jesus Christ is said to have rejoiced in spirit; it even put his great comprehensive soul into an ecstasy, "Father, I thank thee, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and revealed them to babes; even so, Father, because it pleased thee!"<sup>1</sup> Here was a thing fit to be reflected on, as a piece of Divine royalty; a part worthy of the Lord of heaven and earth! And what serious spirit would it not amaze, to weigh and ponder this case a while; to see men, excelling in all other kinds of knowledge, so far excelled by those they most contemn, in the highest point of wisdom: such as know how to search into the abstrusest mysteries of nature; that can unravel or see through the most perplexed intrigues of state; that know how to save their own stake and secure their private interest in whatsoever times; yet so little seen (often, for not *many* wise) in the matters that concern an eternal felicity! It puts me in mind of—what I find observed by some—the particular madness, a *dementia quoad hoc*, as it is called; when persons, in everything else capable of sober rational discourse, when you bring them to some one thing (that in reference to which they become distempered at first) they rave and are perfectly mad. How many that can manage a discourse with great reason and judgment about other matters, who when you come to discourse with them about the affairs of practical godliness, and which most directly tend to that future state of blessedness, are as at their wits' end, know not what to say; they savour not those things. These are things not understood, but by "such to whom it is given:" and surely that given wisdom is the most excellent wisdom. Sometimes God doth, as it were, so far gratify the world as to speak

<sup>1</sup> Luke x. 21.

their own language, and call them wise that affect to be called so, and that wisdom which they would fain have go under that name. Moses, it is said, was skilled in all the wisdom of Egypt,<sup>1</sup> etc., but at other times he expressly calls those wise men fools, and their wisdom folly and madness; or annexes some disgraceful adject for distinction's sake; or applies those appellatives ironically, and in manifest derision. No doubt but any such person as was represented in the parable, would have thought himself to have done the part of a very wise man, in entertaining such deliberation and resolves as we find he had there with himself: how strange was that to his ears, "Thou fool, this night shall thy soul be required of thee."<sup>2</sup> Their wisdom is sometimes said to be foolish; or else called the wisdom of the flesh, or fleshly wisdom; said to be earthly, sensual, devilish; they are said to be wise to do evil, while to do good they have no understanding; they are brought sometimes as it were upon the stage with their wisdom, to be the matter of Divine triumph: "where is the wise?" and that which they account "foolishness" is made to confound their "wisdom." And indeed do they deserve to be thought wise, that are so busily intent upon momentary trifles, and trifle with eternal concerns? that prefer vanishing shadows to the everlasting glory? that "follow lying vanities, and forsake their own mercies?" Yea, will they not cease to be wise in their own eyes also, when they see the issue and reap the fruits of their foolish choice? when they find the happiness they preferred before this eternal one, is quite over, and nothing remains to them of it but an afflictive remembrance? that the torment they were told would follow, is but now beginning, and without end? when they hear from the mouth of their impartial Judge, "Remember, you in your lifetime had your good things," and my faithful servants their evil; now they must "be comforted, and you tormented?" when they are told, you have received the consolation; you were full, ye did laugh,

<sup>1</sup> Acts vii. 22.

<sup>2</sup> Luke xii. 20.

now you must pine, and mourn, and weep?<sup>1</sup> Will they not then be as ready to befool themselves, and say as they, 'See, those righteous ones are they whom we sometimes had in derision, and for a proverb of reproach; we fools counted their life madness, and that their end was without honour; but now, how are they numbered among the sons of God, and their lot is among the saints?'<sup>2</sup> They that were too wise before to mind so mean a thing as religion (the world through wisdom knew not God,<sup>3</sup> strange wisdom!); that could so wisely baffle conscience and put fallacies upon their own souls; that had so ingenious shifts to elude a conviction and divert any serious thought from fastening upon their spirits; that were wont so sily to jeer holiness; seemed as they meant to laugh religion out of countenance; they will now know, that a circumspect walking, a faithful redeeming of time, and improving it in order to eternity, was to do, not as fools, but as wise: and begin to think of themselves, now at last, as all wise and sober men thought of them before.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Luke vi. 24, 25.

<sup>2</sup> Wisd. v. 3, etc.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. i. 21.

<sup>4</sup> Folly is joy to him that is destitute of wisdom. —Prov. xv. 21.

## CHAPTER XVI.

THE SECOND GENERAL HEAD OF THE IMPROVEMENT OR USE OF THE DOCTRINE PROPOUNDED FROM THE TEXT, CONTAINING CERTAIN RULES OR PRESCRIPTIONS OF DUTY CONNATURAL THERETO. — 1. THAT WE SETTLE IN OUR MINDS THE TRUE NOTION OF THIS BLESSEDNESS. — 2. THAT WE COMPARE THE TEMPER OF OUR OWN SPIRITS WITH IT, AND LABOUR THEREON TO DISCERN WHETHER WE MAY LAY CLAIM TO IT OR NO.

THUS far we have the account of the truths to be considered and weighed that have dependence on the doctrine of the text.

Next follow the duties to be practised and done in reference thereto, which I shall lay down in the ensuing rules or prescriptions.

1. That we admit and settle the *distinct notion* of this blessedness in our minds and judgments; that we fix in our own souls apprehensions agreeable to the account this Scripture hath given us of it. This is a counsel leading and introductive to the rest; and which, if it obtain with us, will have a general influence upon the whole course of that practice which the doctrine already opened calls for. As our apprehensions of this blessedness are more distinct and clear, it may be expected more powerfully to command our hearts and lives. Hence it is, in great part, the spirits and conversations of Christians have so little savour and appearance of heaven in them. We rest in some general and confused notion of it, in which there is little either of efficacy or pleasure; we descend not into a particular inquiry and con-

sideration what it is. Our thoughts of it are gloomy and obscure; and hence is our spirit naturally listless and indifferent towards it, and rather contents itself to sit still in a region all lightsome round about, and among objects it hath some present acquaintance with, than venture itself forth as into a new world which it knows but little of. And hence our lives are low and carnal; they look not as though we were seeking the heavenly country; and indeed who can be in good earnest in seeking after an unknown state? This is owing to our negligence and infidelity. The blessed God hath not been shy and reserved; hath not hidden or concealed from us the glory of the other world; nor locked up heaven to us; nor left us to the uncertain guesses of our own imagination, the wild fictions of an unguided fancy, which would have created us a poetical heaven only, and have mocked us with false elysiums: but though much be yet within the vail, he hath been liberal in his discoveries to us. "Life and immortality are brought to light in the gospel." The future blessedness (though some refined heathens have had near guesses at it) is certainly apprehensible by the measure only of God's revelation of it; for who can determine, with certainty, of the effects of Divine good pleasure? "It is your Father's *good pleasure* to give you a kingdom." Who can tell beforehand what so free and boundless goodness will do, further than as He himself discovers it? The discovery is as free as the donation. The things that "eye hath not seen, and ear not heard, and which have not entered into the heart of man, God hath revealed to us by his Spirit;" and it follows, "we have received the Spirit of God, that we might know the things freely given us of God."<sup>1</sup> The Spirit is both the principle of the external revelation, as having inspired the Scriptures which foreshow this glory, and of the internal revelation also, to enlighten blind minds that would otherwise—*μὴ ὠπάξουσιν*—never be able to discover things at so great a distance, see

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. ii. 9, 12.



afar off; therefore called "the spirit of wisdom and revelation," by which "the eyes of the understanding are enlightened to know the hope of that calling, and the riches of the glory of his inheritance *among* the saints;"<sup>1</sup> as the *ev* there is most fitly to be rendered.

But this internal discovery is made by the mediation and interveniency of the external: therefore, having that before our eyes, we are to apply our minds to the study and consideration of it; and in that way to expect the free illumination of the Holy Spirit. In the meantime we must charge our ignorance and the darkness of our cloudy thoughts, touching these things, upon our carelessness, that we do not attend, or our incredulity, that we will not believe what God hath revealed concerning them: it is therefore a dutiful attention and reverential faith that must settle and fix the notion of this blessedness. If we will not regard nor give credit to what God hath discovered concerning it, we may sit still in a torpid, disconsolate darkness, which we ourselves are the authors of; or, which is no less pernicious, compass ourselves with sparks beaten out of our own forge, walk in the light of our own fire, cheat our souls with the fond dream of an imagined heaven, nowhere to be found, till we at length lie down in sorrow. How perverse are the imaginations of men in this; as in reference to the way, so in respect of the end also; for as they take upon them to fancy another way to happiness quite besides and against the plain word of God, so do they imagine to themselves another kind of happiness, such as shall gratify only their sensual desires; a Mahomedan, indeed a fool's paradise: or at best it is but a negative heaven; they many times entertain in their thoughts (of which their sense too is the only measure) a state wherein nothing shall offend or incommode the flesh; in which they shall not hunger, nor thirst, or feel want: and when they have thus stated the matter in their own thoughts, we cannot beat them out of it but that they desire to go to heaven;

<sup>1</sup> Eph. i. 17, 18.

namely, the heaven of their own making; when, did they conceive it truly and fully, they would find their hearts to abhor from it, even as hell itself. Therefore here we should exercise an authority over ourselves, and awaken conscience to its proper work and business; and demand of it, 'Is it not reasonable these divine discoveries should take place with me? Hath not God spoken plainly enough? Why should my heart any longer hang in doubt with me, or look wishly towards future glory as if it were an uncouth thing? or is it reasonable to confront my own imaginations to his discoveries?' Charge conscience with the duty it owes to God in such a case; and let his revelations be received with the reverence and resignation which they challenge; and in them study and contemplate the blessedness of awakened souls, till you have agreed with yourself fully how to conceive it. Run over every part of it in your thoughts; view the several Divine excellencies which you are hereafter to see and imitate; and think what everything will contribute to the satisfaction and contentment of your spirits. This is a matter of unspeakable consequence. Therefore, to be as clear as is possible, you may digest what is recommended to you, in this rule, into these more particular directions.

i. Resolve with yourselves, to make the Divine revelation of this blessedness the *prime measure and reason* of all your apprehensions concerning it. Fix that purpose in your own hearts, so to order all your conceptions about it, that when you demand of yourselves, 'What do I conceive of the future blessedness? and why do I conceive so?' the Divine revelation may answer both the questions. 'I apprehend what God hath revealed, and because he hath so revealed.' The Lord of heaven sure best understands it, and can best help us to the understanding of it. If it be said of the origin of this world, *πίσται νοοῦμεν*,<sup>1</sup> it may much more be said of the state of the other, we understand it by faith: *that* must inform and perfect our intellectuals in this matter.

<sup>1</sup> Heb. xi. 3.

ii. Therefore reject and sever from the notion of this blessedness, whatsoever is alien to the account Scripture gives us of it. Think not that sensual pleasure, that a liberty of sinning, that an exemption from the Divine dominion, distance and estrangedness from God—which by nature you wickedly affect—can have any ingrediency into, or consistency with, this state of blessedness.

iii. Gather up into it whatsoever you can find by the Scripture discovery to appertain or belong thereto. Let your notion of it be to your uttermost not only true, but comprehensive and full, and as particular and positive as God's revelation will warrant: especially remember it is a spiritual blessedness, that consists in the refining and perfecting of your spirits by the vision and likeness of the holy God, and the satisfying of them thereby for ever.

iv. Get the notion of this blessedness deeply imprinted in your minds, so as to abide with you, that you may not be always at a loss, and change your apprehensions every time you come to think of it. Let a once well-formed idea, a clear full state of it, be preserved entire, and be, as a lively image, always before your eyes, which you may readily view upon all occasions.

2. Rule. That having well fixed the notion of this blessedness in your minds, you seriously reflect upon yourself, and compare the temper of your spirit with it: that you may find out how it is affected thereto, and thence judge in what likelihood you are of enjoying it.

The general aversion of men's spirits to this so necessary work of self-reflection, is one of the most deplorable symptoms of lapsed, degenerated humanity. The wickedness that hath overspread the nature of man, and a secret consciousness and a misgiving, hath made men afraid of themselves, and studiously to decline all acquaintance with their own souls; to shun themselves as ghosts and spectres; they cannot endure to appear to themselves. You can hardly impose a severer task upon a wicked man, than to go retire an hour or two, and commune with himself; he knows not how to face his

own thoughts: his own soul is a devil to him, as indeed it will be in hell, the most frightful tormenting devil. Yet what power is there in man, more excellent, more appropriate to reasonable nature, than that of reflecting, of turning his thoughts upon himself? Sense must here confess itself outdone. The eye that sees other objects cannot see itself: but the mind, a rational sun, can not only project its beams, but revert them; make its thoughts turn inward. It can see its own face, contemplate itself. And how useful an endowment is this to the nature of man? If he err, he might perpetuate his error and wander infinitely, if he had not this self-reflecting power; and if he do well, never know without it the comfort of a rational self-approbation: which comfort paganish morality hath valued so highly as to account it did associate a man with the inhabitants of heaven, and make him lead his life as among the gods,—as their pagan language is: though the name of the reflecting power, conscience, they were less acquainted with, the thing itself they reckoned as a kind of indwelling Deity, as may be seen at large in those discourses of Maximus Tyrius and Apuleius, both upon the same subject, concerning the god of Socrates. And another, giving this precept, ‘Familiarize thyself with the gods,’ adds, ‘And this shalt thou do, if thou bear thy mind becomingly towards them, being well pleased with the things they give, and doing the things that may please thy *dæmon* or genius; whom,’ saith he, ‘the most high God,’ which they mean by Jupiter, ‘hath put into every man, as a derivation or extraction from himself (*ἀπόσπασμα*), to be his president and guide; namely, every one’s own mind and reason.’<sup>1</sup>

And this mind or reason in that notion of it,—as we approve ourselves to it and study to please it,—is the same thing we intend by the name of conscience.

And how high account they had of this work of self-

<sup>1</sup> Συζῆν θεοῖς. Συζῆ δὲ θεοῖς ὁ συνεχῶς δεικνὺς ἑαυτοῖς τὴν ἑαυτοῦ ψυχὴν, ἀρεσκομένην μὲν τε τοῖς ἀπονεμομένοις: ποιῶσαν δὲ ὅσα βούλεται ὁ δαίμων, ὃν ἐκάστω προστάτην, etc. . . . οὗτος δὲ ἐστὶν ἐκάστου νοῦς καὶ λόγος.—Marc. Anton. lib. v.

reflection, may appear in that they intituled the oracle to that document, "Know thyself;"<sup>1</sup> esteeming it above human discovery, and that it could have no lower than a Divine original; and therefore consecrating and writing it up in golden characters in their Delphic Temple, as Pliny informs us,<sup>2</sup> for a heavenly inspired dictate.

Among Christians that enjoy the benefit of the gospel revelation, in which men may behold themselves, as one may his natural face in a glass, how highly should this self-knowledge be prized and how fully attained! The gospel discovers at the same time the ugly deformities of a man's soul, and the means of attaining a true spiritual comeliness; yea, it is itself the instrument of impressing the Divine image and glory upon men's spirits; which when it is in any measure *done*, they become most sociable and conversable with themselves; and when it is but *in doing*, it so convincingly and with so piercing energy lays open the very thoughts of men's hearts, so thoroughly rips up and dissects the soul,<sup>3</sup> so directly turns and strictly holds a man's eye intent upon himself; so powerfully urges and obliges the sinner to mind and study his own soul; that where it hath effected anything, been any way operative upon men's spirits, they are certainly supposed to be in a good measure acquainted with themselves, whatever others are. Therefore the Apostle bids the Corinthians, if they desire a proof of the power and truth of his ministry, to consult themselves,—“examine yourselves,”<sup>4</sup>—and presently subjoins, “know ye not your own selves?” intimating, it was an insupposable thing they should be ignorant. What! Christians, and not know yourselves? Can you have been under the gospel so long, and be strangers to yourselves? None can think it. Sure it is a most reproachful thing, a thing full of ignominy and scandal, that a man should name himself a Christian, and yet be under gross

<sup>1</sup> E cœlo descendit, γινῶθι σεαυτόν.

<sup>2</sup> Hist. Mundi. The wisdom and significancy of which dedication Plato also (in ‘Alcibiad.’ 1.) takes notice of.

<sup>3</sup> Heb. iv. 12.

<sup>4</sup> 2 Cor. xiii. 5.

ignorance touching the temper and bent of his own soul. It signifies, that such an one understands little of the design and tendency of the very religion he pretends to be of, that he was a Christian by mere chance, that he took up and continues his profession in a dream. Christianity aims at nothing, it gets a man nothing, if it do not procure him a better spirit; it is an empty insignificant thing, it hath no design in it at all, if it do not design this. It pretends to nothing else. It doth not offer men secular advantages, emoluments, honours; it hath no such aim to make men in that sense rich, or great, or honourable, but to make them holy, and fit them for God. He therefore loses all his labour and reward, and shows himself a vain trifler in the matters of religion, that makes not this the scope and mark of his Christian profession and practice; and herein he can do nothing without a constant self-inspection. As it therefore highly concerns, it well becomes a Christian under the gospel, to be in a continual observation and study of himself, that he may know to what purpose he is a Christian; and take notice, what or whether any good impressions be yet made upon his spirit; whether he can gain anything by his religion. And if a man enter upon an inquiry into himself, what more important question can he put than this, 'In what posture am I as to my last and chief end? How is my spirit framed towards it?' This is the intendment and business of the gospel, to fit souls for blessedness; and therefore, if I would inquire, 'What am I the better for the gospel?' this is the sense and meaning of that very question, 'Is my soul wrought by it to any better disposition for blessedness?' Upon which the resolution of this depends, 'Am I ever likely to enjoy it, yea or no?' That which may make any heart, not deplorably stupid, shake and tremble, that such a thing should be drawn into question; but the case with the most requires it, and it must be so. It is that therefore I would fain here awaken souls to, and assist them in; that is, propound something, in pursuance of the present direction, which might both awaken them to move this great question, and help them in discussing it: both which will be

done in showing the importance of this latter ultimate question in itself, and then the subserviency of the former subordinate one towards the deciding it. These two things, therefore, I shall a little stay upon.

i. To show and urge the requisiteness of debating with ourselves, the likelihood or hopefulness of our enjoying this blessedness.

ii. To discover that the present habitude or disposedness of our spirits to it, is a very proper apt medium whereby to judge thereof.

First. As to the former of these. Methinks our business should do itself, and that the very mention of such a blessedness should naturally prompt souls to bethink themselves, 'Doth it belong to me? Have I anything to do with it?' Methinks every one that hears of it should be beforehand with me, and prevent me here. Where is that stupid soul, that reckons it an indifferent thing to attain this blessed state, or fall short of it? When thou hearest this is the common expectation of saints, to behold the face of God, and be satisfied with his likeness, when they awake; canst thou forbear to say with thyself, 'And what shall become of me when I awake? What kind of awaking shall I have? Shall I awake amidst the beams of glory or flames of wrath?' If thou canst be persuaded to think this no matter of indifferency, then stir up thy drowsy soul to a serious inquiry, how it is likely to fare with thee for ever; and to that purpose put thy conscience to it, to give a free, sincere answer to these few queries.

1. Canst thou say, thou art already certain of thy eternal blessedness? Art thou so sure, that thou needest not inquire? I know not who thou art that now readest these lines, and therefore cannot judge of thy confidence, whether it be right or wrong; only that thou mayst not answer too hastily, consider a little, that certainty of salvation is no common thing;<sup>1</sup> not among—I speak, you see, of subjective certainty—the heirs of salvation themselves. How many of God's holy ones that cannot say they are certain; yea, how few that

<sup>1</sup> Phil. ii. 12.

can say they are! That exhortation to a church of saints, "work out your salvation with fear and trembling,"—them of whom he expresseth such confidence, over whom he so glories,<sup>1</sup>—implies this to be no common thing; so doth Christ's advice to his disciples, "strive to enter in at the strait gate;" and Saint Peter's to the scattered Jews, that he saith had obtained like precious faith, etc.—"give diligence to make your calling and election sure;" with many more passages of like import. Yea, how full is the Scripture of the complaints of such, crying out of broken bones, of festering wounds, of distraction by Divine terrors. Now what shall we say in this case, when so eminent saints have left us records of the distresses and agonies of their spirits under the apprehended displeasure of God? May it not occasion us to suspend a while, and consider? Have we much more reason to be confident than they? And do we know none that lead stricter and more holy lives than we, that are yet in the dark and at a loss in judging their spiritual states? I will not say that we *must* therefore think ourselves bound to doubt, because another, possibly better than we, doth so. Unknown accidents may much vary the cases. But who would not think that reason and modesty had quite forsaken the world, to hear, where the odds is so vastly great, the vain boasts of the loose generality, compared with the humble, solicitous doubts of many serious knowing Christians? to see such trembling about their soul-concernments, who have walked with God and served him long in prayers and tears, when multitudes that have nothing whereon to bottom a confidence but pride and ignorance, shall pretend themselves certain! If drawing breath a while, thou wilt suspect thou have reason not to be peremptory in thy confidence, thou wilt sure think thyself concerned to inquire further. Urge thy soul, then, with this question again and again, Art thou yet certain, yea or no?

2. Is it a comfortable state to be uncertain, or to have

<sup>1</sup> Phil. i. 6; iv. 1.



before thee apparent grounds of a rational and just doubt? For causeless doubts may sooner vanish, when their causelessness is once discovered; and so they are less likely to keep a person that is capable of understanding his own case, under a stated discomfort. But I suppose thee, in order to the answering the foregoing query, to have in some measure considered the case, and that, with a preponderating apprehension of danger in it, thou returnest it *uncertain*. Uncertain, man! and what, wilt thou remain uncertain? Wilt thou sit still so, till thou perish? Shall thy life hang in doubt and thy soul be in jeopardy every hour, till the everlasting flames resolve the doubt, and put the matter out of question with thee? What course canst thou apply thyself to but to inquire and search further into thy own state, to avoid the torture of thy own fears, the pangs and dreadful expectation of a palpitating, misgiving heart? It is true, that inquisitive, diligent doubtfulness hath hope and comfort in it. But doubtfulness joined with a resolution of casting off all further care, is utterly desperate and disconsolate; what remains to thee in that case, but “a fearful looking for of fiery indignation?” How canst thou pass an hour in peace, while thou apprehendest it unlikely thou see the face and be satisfied with the image of God? Do not thy own thoughts represent to thee the amazing sights, the horrid images which shall for ever entertain and possess thy soul? Art thou not daily haunted with Divine horrors? When thou sayest at night, thy “bed shall refresh” thee, art thou not “terrified with dreams, and affrighted with visions?” Dost thou not “say in the morning, would to God it were evening; and in the evening say, would to God it were morning?” and while thou knowest not what else to do, meditate only changes instead of remedies? Or if thou find no such trouble invading thy mind, let me further ask:

3. Is it *reasonable* to be secure in such a state of uncertainty? Debate this matter a little while with thyself. Is it thy reason or thy sloth that makes thee sit still, and forbear to look into thy spiritual affairs? Is it any rational

consideration, or not rather the mere indisposition of a soul afraid to know its own state, that suspends thee from inquiring? What hast thou to say, that looks like a reason? Is it that it will disturb thy thoughts, interrupt thy pleasures, fill thee with anxious cares and fears, which thou art as loth to admit as burning coals into thy bosom? Is it that thou canst not endure to look upon so dreadful an object, as the appearing danger or possibility of thy being miserable to eternity? And art thou therefore resolved to shut thine eyes, and cry 'peace, peace?' This is to avoid a present inconvenience by an eternal mischief; (a gross over-straining the paradox!) for avoiding the present fear of hell, to run into it; as if because a man cannot bear the thoughts of dying, he should presently cut his own throat. Vain man! canst thou not bear the thoughts of eternal misery? How wilt thou bear the thing? And how long-lived dost thou think that peace shall be, that thou purchasest upon so dear and hard terms? Canst thou promise thyself an hour? Mayst thou not lose thy purchase and price together the next moment? Canst thou defer thy misery by forgetting it; or will thy judgment linger and thy damnation slumber, while *thou* securely lingerest and slumberest? Canst thou wink hell into nothing, and put it out of being, by putting it out of thy thoughts? Alas, man! open thy eyes when thou wilt, thou shalt find thou hast not bettered thy case by having kept them fast closed. The bitterness of death is not yet past. The horrid image is still before thee. This is not a fancied evil, which a man may dream himself into, and *eâdem operâ* with as little difficulty, dream himself out of it again. No, thy case is miserable and dangerous when thou composest thyself to sleep; if thou awakest thou wilt find it still the same; only thou didst not apprehend it before, for then thou wouldst not have slept, as the drunkard that kills a man, and after falls asleep in his drunken fit; he awakes and understands his wretched case. Would his sleeping on till the officer's arrest had awaked him have mended the matter with him?

But thou wilt possibly say, Is it not better here to have a little quiet now, than to be miserable by sad thoughts here, and miserable by actual suffering hereafter too? Is not one death enough? Why should one kill himself so often over; and hasten misery, as if it came on too slowly?

Better! man? a hard choice. Supposing thou art to be eternally miserable—if thou understandest that word eternity, the good or evil of this little inch of time will signify so little with thee, as hardly to weigh anything in the scale of a rational judgment. But what, art thou now *dreaming* while thou thus reasonest? Dost thou yet no better understand thy case? Art thou not under the gospel? Is it not the day of thy hope, and of the Lord's grace and patience towards thee? It was said that sleeping would not better thy case; but it was not said that *awaking* would not; but all that is here said is designed to the awakening of thee, that thou mayst know thy case, and endeavour a redress. Dost thou think any man in his sober wits would take all this pains thus to reason with thee, if that were the acknowledged and agreed state of thy case, that it were already taken for granted thou must perish? We might as well go preach to devils, and carry down the gospel into hell. But dost thou think the holy merciful God sent his Son and his ministers to mock men; and to treat with them about their eternal concernments when there is no hope? Were that thy case, thou hadst as good a pretence as the devil had, to complain of "being tormented before thy time." But if thou be not wilfully perverse, in mistaking the matter we are reasoning about, thou mayst understand thy reason is here appealed to in this; whether having so fair hopes before thee, as the gospel gives, of this blessedness we are discoursing of, it be reasonable from the apprehension of a mere possibility of miscarrying,—which can only be through thy wilful security and neglect,—to give up thyself to a supine negligence, and indulge that security which is so sure to ruin thee, and exchange a possible hoped heaven for a certain hell; or whether rather it be not reasonable to stir up thy soul to consider in what

posture thou art towards the attainment of this blessedness, that thou mayst accordingly steer thy course in order to it? If an accusation or a disease do threaten thy life; or a suspected flaw, thy title to thy estate, wouldst thou not think it reasonable to inquire into thy case? And is it not much more desirable, in a matter of this consequence, to be at some certainty? and prudent to endeavour it, if it may possibly be attained. Whence let me further ask:

4. Canst thou pretend it to be impossible? Hath God left thee under a necessitated ignorance in this matter, or denied thee sufficient means of knowing how it is with thee in respect of thy spiritual estate? Though he have not given thee a list or told thee the number or names of his sanctified ones, yet hath he not sufficiently described the persons, and given the characters by which they may be known? And hath he not furnished thee with a self-reflecting power, by which thou art enabled to look into thyself and discern whether thou be of them or no? Doth he not offer and afford to serious, diligent souls the assisting light of his blessed spirit to guide and succeed the inquiry? And if thou find it difficult to come to a speedy clear issue, to make a present certain judgment of thy case; ought not that to engage thee to a patient, continued diligence, rather than in a rash despairing madness to desist and cast off all? inasmuch as the difficulty, though great, is not insuperable; and the necessity and advantage incomparably greater. And—though divers other things do confessedly fall in—the principal difficulty lies in thy aversation and unwillingness. Thou art not put to traverse the creation, to climb heaven, or dig through the earth; but thy work lies nigh thee, in thy own heart and spirit; and what is so nigh or should be so familiar to thee as thyself? It is but casting thy eye upon thy own soul,—to discern which way it is inclined and bent,—thou art urged to: which is that we propounded next to discover: namely,—

Secondly. That we are to judge of the hopefulness of our enjoying this blessedness by the present habitude or dis-

posedness of our spirits thereto. For what is that righteousness which qualifies for it, but the impress of the gospel upon the minds and hearts of men? The gospel revelation is the only rule and measure of that righteousness: it must, therefore, consist in conformity thereto. And look to the frame and design of the gospel revelation, and what doth so directly correspond to it as that very habitude and disposedness of spirit for this blessedness whereof we speak? Nothing so answers the gospel as a propension of heart towards God, gratified in part now, and increasing till it find a full satisfaction; a desire of knowing him and of being like him. It is the whole design of the gospel which reveals his glory in the face of Jesus Christ, to work and form the spirits of men to this. They therefore whose spirits are thus wrought and framed, are righteous by the gospel measure, and by that righteousness are evidently entitled and fitted for this blessedness. Yea, that righteousness hath in it, or rather is, the elements, the first principles, the seed of this blessedness. There can therefore be no surer rule or mark whereby to judge our states, whether we have to do with this blessedness, may expect it yea or no, than this.

How stand we affected towards it? in what disposition are our hearts thereto? Those fruits of righteousness by which the soul is qualified to appear without offence in the day of Christ, the several graces of the sanctifying Spirit, are nothing else but so many holy principles, all disposing the soul towards this blessedness and the way to it; mortification, self-denial, and godly sorrow take it off from other objects, the world, self, and sin; repentance, that part of it which respects God, turns the course of its motion towards God, the end; faith directs it through Christ, the way; love makes it move freely; desire, earnestly; joy, pleasantly; hope, confidently; humility, evenly; fear, circumspectly; patience, constantly and perseveringly. All conspire to give the soul a right disposition towards this blessedness. The result of them all is heavenliness, a heavenly temper of spirit. For they all, one way or other, as so many lines and rays, have

respect to a blessedness in God—which is heaven—as the point at which they aim ; and the *cuspis*, the point in which they meet, in order to the touching of that objective point, is heavenliness. This is the ultimate and immediate disposition of heart for this blessedness ; the result, the *terminus productus*, of the whole work of righteousness in the soul ; by which it is said to be, as it were, *nata ad gloriam*, begotten to the eternal inheritance. Concerning this, therefore, chiefly institute thy inquiry. Demand of thyself, ‘Is my soul yet made heavenly, bent upon eternal blessedness or no?’ And here thou mayest easily apprehend of how great concernment it is to have the right notion of heaven or future blessedness, as was urged under the foregoing rule. For if thou take for it another thing, thou missest thy mark and art quite beside thy business : but if thou retain a scriptural state and notion of it, the rule thou art to judge by is sure ;—they shall have heaven whose hearts are intent upon it and framed to it. Scripture is everywhere pregnant and full of this.

The Apostle plainly intimates this will be the rule of God’s final judgment : certainly it cannot be unsafe for us to judge ourselves by the same rule. He tells us, “When God shall judge every one according to his works,”—the great business of the judgment day,—eternal life shall be the portion of them, “who by patient continuance in well-doing sought glory and honour and immortality,”<sup>1</sup> which are but other expressions of the same thing. What can be more plain? They shall have eternal life and glory that seek it ; whose hearts are towards it. Again, speaking of true Christians, *διακριτικῶς*,—that is, in a way of contradistinction from pseudo-Christians, such as he saith were enemies of the cross,—he gives us, among other, this brand of these latter, that “they did mind earthly things,” and tells us, “their end would be destruction ;” but gives us this opposite character of the other, “our conversation is in heaven.”<sup>2</sup> Our trade and business, our daily negotiations as well as the

<sup>1</sup> Rom. ii. 6, 7.

<sup>2</sup> Phil. iii. 18—20.

privileges of our citizenship, lie there, as his expression imports, and thence intimates the opposite end of such; "whence we look for a Saviour," not destruction, but salvation. And in the same context of Scripture, where they that are risen with Christ, and who shall appear with him in glory, are required to "set their mind on things above, and not on things on the earth:"<sup>1</sup> that we may understand this not to be their duty only, but their character, we are immediately told, they who follow not this counsel and mortify not their earthly members—those lusts that dispose men towards the earth and to grovel in the dust, as the graces of the Spirit dispose them heavenward and to converse with glory—"are the children of disobedience, upon whom the wrath of God cometh." The faith the just live by, "is the substance of things hoped for," etc. Such believers are confessed, avowed "strangers on earth;" and seekers of the "better, the heavenly country," whence it is said, "God will not be ashamed to be called their God;"<sup>2</sup> plainly implying, that as for low terrene spirits, that love to creep on the earth and embrace dunghills, God will be ashamed of them; he will for ever disdain a relation to them, while and as such. And if we will be determined by the express word of our great Redeemer, to whom we owe all the hopes of this blessedness; when he had been advising not to lay up treasure on earth, but in heaven, he presently adds, "where your treasure is, there will your hearts be also."<sup>3</sup> If thy treasure, thy great interest, thy precious and most valuable good, be above, that will attract thy heart, it will certainly be disposed thitherward.

Yet here it must carefully be considered, that inasmuch as this blessedness is thy end, that is, thy supreme good, as the notion of treasure also imports, thy heart must be set upon it above any other enjoyment; else all is to no purpose. It is not a faint, slight, over-mastered inclination that will serve the turn, but, as all the forementioned scriptures import,

<sup>1</sup> Col. iii. 1—4.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. xi. 1, 13, 16.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. vi. 19—21.

such as will bespeak it a man's business to seek heaven, his main work; and give ground to say of him, his heart is there. If two lovers solicit the same person, and, speaking of them in comparisons, she say, '*This* hath my heart;' is it tolerable to understand her as meaning him she loves less? So absurd would it be to understand scriptures that speak of such an intention of heart heavenward, as if the faintest desire, or coldest wish, or most lazy inconstant endeavour, were all they meant. No, it is a steady, prevalent, victorious direction of heart towards the future glory,—in comparison whereof thou despisest all things else, all temporal terrene things,—that must be the evidential ground of thy hope to enjoy it. And therefore in this deal faithfully with thy own soul, and demand of it; Dost thou esteem this blessedness above all things else? Do the thoughts of it continually return upon thee, and thy mind and heart, as it were, naturally run out to it? Are thy chiefest sollicitudes and cares taken up about it, lest thou shouldst fall short and suffer a disappointment? Dost thou savour it with pleasure? hath it a sweet and grateful relish to thy soul? Dost thou bend all thy powers to pursue and press on towards it? Urge thyself to give answer truly to such inquiries; and to consider them seriously that thou mayst do so.

Such whose spirits are either most highly raised and lift up to heaven, or most deeply depressed and sunk into the earth, may make the clearest judgment of themselves. With them that are of a middle temper, the trial will be more difficult; yet not fruitless, if it be managed with serious diligence, though no certain conclusion or judgment be made thereupon.

For the true design and use of all such inquiries and reflections upon ourselves, (which let it be duly considered,) is not to bring us into a state of cessation from further endeavours, as if we had nothing more to do,—suppose we judge the best of our state that can be thought,—but to keep us in a wakeful temper of spirit; that we may not forget ourselves in the great business we have yet before us, but go



on with renewed vigour through the whole course of renewed endeavours, wherein we are to be still conversant till we have attained our utmost mark and end. Therefore is this present inquiry directed, as introductive to the further duty, that in the following rules is yet to be recommended.

## CHAPTER XVII.

RULE 3.—DIRECTING SUCH AS UPON INQUIRY FIND, OR SEE CAUSE TO SUSPECT, A TOTAL AVERSATION IN THEMSELVES TO THIS BLESSEDNESS, TO BE SPEEDY AND RESTLESS IN THEIR ENDEAVOURS TO HAVE THE TEMPER OF THEIR SPIRITS ALTERED AND MADE SUITABLE TO IT.—DOUBTS AND OBJECTIONS CONCERNING THE ‘USE’ OF SUCH ENDEAVOURS, IN SUCH A CASE, ANSWERED.—SOME CONSIDERATIONS TO ENFORCE THIS DIRECTION PROPOUNDED AND PRESSED.

3. RULE. That if upon such reflection we find or suspect ourselves wholly disaffected and unsuitable to this blessedness, we apply ourselves to speedy incessant endeavours to get the temper of our spirits changed and fitted thereto.

The state of the case speaks itself, that there is no sitting still here. This is no condition, soul, to be rested in; unless thou art provided to encounter the terrors of eternal darkness and endure the torture of everlasting burnings. Yet am I not unapprehensive, how great a difficulty a carnal heart will make of it, to bestir itself in order to any redress of so deplorable a case. And how real a difficulty it is, to say anything that will be thought regardable to such an one! Our sad experience tells us, that our most efficacious words are commonly wont to be entertained as neglected puffs of winds; our most convictive reasonings and persuasive exhortations lost—yea, and though they are managed too in the name of the great God—as upon the deaf and dead: which is too often apt to tempt into that resolution of “speaking no more in that name.” And were it not that the dread of that great Majesty restrains us, how hard were

it to forbear such expostulations: 'Lord, Why are we commonly sent upon so vain an errand? Why are we required to speak to them that will not hear, and expose thy sacred truths and counsels to the contempt of sinful worms; to labour day by day in vain, and spend our strength for nought?' Yea, we cannot forbear to complain: 'None so labour in vain as we: of all men none so generally unprosperous and unsuccessful. Others are wont to see the fruit of their labours in proportion to the expense of strength in them: but our "strength is labour and sorrow" for the most part, without the return of a joyful fruit. The husbandman ploughs in hope, and sows in hope, and is commonly partaker of his hope: we are sent to plough and sow among rocks and thorns, and in the highway. How seldom fall we upon good ground! Where have we any increase? Yea, Lord, how often are men the harder for all our labours with them, the deader for all endeavours to quicken them! Our breath kills them whom thou sendest us to speak life to; and we often become to them a "deadly savour." Sometime, when we think somewhat is done to purpose, our labour all returns, and we are to begin again; and when the duties we persuade to, come directly to cross men's interests and carnal inclinations, they revolt and start back, as if we were urging them upon flames or the sword's point; and their own souls and the eternal glory are regarded as a thing of nought. Then heaven and hell become with them fancies and dreams; and all that we have said to them false and fabulous. We are to the most "as men that mock," in our most serious warnings and counsels; and the word of the Lord is a reproach. We sometimes "fill our mouths with arguments" and our hearts with hope, and think, sure they will now yield; but they esteem our strongest reasonings, as Leviathan doth iron and brass, but as "straw and rotten wood," and laugh at Divine threatenings as he doth at the shaking of the spear. Yea, and when we have convinced them, yet we have done nothing; though we have got their judgments and consciences on our side and their own, their lusts only reluctate

and carry all. They will now have their way though they perish. We see them perishing under our very eye, and we cry to them in thy name, O Lord! to return and live, but they regard us not. For these things sometimes "we weep in secret," and our eyes trickle down with tears; yea, we cry to thee, O Lord, and thou hearest us not; thy hand seems "shortened, that it cannot save;" it puts not on strength as in the days of old: it hath snatched souls by thousands, as firebrands out of the fire; but now thou hidest and drawest it back. "Who hath believed our report? To whom is the arm of the Lord revealed?" Meanwhile even the devil's instruments prosper more than we; and he that makes it his business to tempt and entice down souls to hell, succeeds more than we that would allure them to heaven.'

But we must speak, whether men will hear or forbear; though it concerns us to do it with fear and trembling. Oh, how solemn a business is it to treat with souls! and how much to be dreaded, lest they miscarry through our imprudence or neglect! I write with solicitude what shall become of these lines; with what effect they will be read,—if they fall into such hands,—by them whom they most concern: yea, and with some doubt, whether it were best to write on or forbear. Sometimes one would incline to think it a merciful omission, lest we add to the account and torment of many at last; but sense of duty towards all, and hope of doing good to some, must overweigh. Considering, therefore, the state of such souls I am now dealing with, I apprehend there may be obstructions to the entertainment of the counsel here recommended, of two sorts; partly in their minds, partly in their hearts; something of appearing reason, but more of real perverse will. That which I shall do in pursuance of it, will fall under two answerable heads—1. A reply to certain doubts and objections, wherein to meet with the former. 2. The proposal of some considerations, wherein to contend against the latter.

As to the first: it appears, men are grown ingeniously wicked, and have learned how to dispute themselves into

hell ; and to neglect what concerns their eternal blessedness with some colour and pretence of reason. It will therefore be worth the while to discuss a little their more specious pretences, and consider their more obvious supposable scruples, which will be found to concern either the possibility, lawfulness, advantage, or necessity of the endeavours we persuade to.

Doubt i. Is it a possible undertaking you put us upon ; or is there anything we can do in order to the change of our own hearts ? We find ourselves altogether undesirous of those things wherein you state blessedness, and they are without savour to us. If therefore the notion you give us of blessedness be right, all the work necessary to qualify us for it is yet to be done ; we yet remain wholly destitute of any principle of life, that may dispose us to such relishes and enjoyments. If the new creature, as you say, consist in a suitable temper of spirit unto such a state as this, it is as yet wholly unformed in us : and is there anything to be done by a dead man in order to life ? Can a child contribute anything to its first formation ? or a creature to its coming into being ?

Reply. If you were serious in what you say, methinks you should have little mind to play the sophisters and put fallacies upon yourselves, in a matter that concerns the life of your soul. And what else are you now doing ? For sure otherwise, one would think it were no such difficulty to understand the difference between the *esse simpliciter*—the mere being of anything—and the *esse tale* ; its being such or such by the addition of somewhat afterward to that being. Though nothing could contribute to its own being simply, yet sure when it is in being, it may contribute to the bettering or perfecting of itself, even as the unreasonable creatures themselves do : and if it be a creature naturally capable of acting with design, it may act designedly in order to its becoming so or so qualified, or the attaining of somewhat yet wanting to its perfection. You cannot be thought so ignorant, but that you know the new creature is only an additional to your former being : and though it be true, that

it can do no more to its own production than the unconceived child,—as nothing can act before it is,—doth it therefore follow that your reasonable soul, in which it is to be formed, cannot use God's prescribed means in order to that blessed change? You cannot act holily as a saint; but therefore can you not act rationally as a man? I appeal to your reason and conscience in some particulars.

Is it *impossible* to you to attend upon the dispensation of that gospel which is "God's power unto salvation," the seal by which he impresses his image, the glass through which his glory shines to the changing of souls into the same likeness? Are you not as able to go to church as the tavern; and to sit in the assembly of saints as of mockers?

Is it *impossible* to you to consult the written Word of God, and thence learn what you must be and do in order to blessedness? Will not your eyes serve you to read the Bible as well as a gazette or play-book?

Is it *impossible* to inquire of your minister, or an understanding Christian neighbour, concerning the way and terms of blessedness? Cannot your tongue pronounce these words, "What shall I do to be saved?" as well as those, 'Pray what do you think of the weather?' or, 'What news is there going?' Yet further:—

Is it *impossible* to apply your thoughts to what you meet with suitable to your case, in your attendance upon preaching, reading, or discourse? Have all such words a barbarous sound in your ear? Can you not consider what sense is carried under them; what they import and signify? Can you not bethink yourself,—do the doctrines of God and Christ, and the life to come, signify something or nothing? or do they signify anything worth the considering, or that it is fit for me to take notice of?

And yet to proceed a little further with you.

I pray you once more demand of yourselves, and put your consciences closely to it; whether, when they have told you (as no doubt they will), that such things deserve your consideration, it be impossible to you to use your considering

power thus, and employ it even about these things? Do but make this easy trial and then say, whether it be impossible. See if you cannot select one hour on purpose, wherein to sit down by yourselves alone with this resolution: 'Well, I will now spend this hour in considering my eternal concernments.' When you have obtained so much of yourself, set your thoughts on work; you will find them voluble and unfixed, very apt to revolt and fly off from things you have no mind to, but use your authority with yourself; tell your soul, or let it tell itself, 'These things concern thy life.' At least, taking this prepared matter along with thee—that thou mayst not have this pretence, thou knowest not what to think of—try if thou canst not think of these things, now actually suggested and offered to thy thoughts: as namely,—

Consider that thou hast a reasonable immortal soul, which as it is liable to eternal misery, so it is capable of eternal blessedness.

That this blessedness thou dost understand to consist only in the vision of the blessed God, in being made like to him, and in the satisfaction that is thence to result and accrue to thee.

Consider, what thy very objection supposeth, that thou findest the temper of thy spirit to be altogether indisposed and averse to such a blessedness. Is it not so? Is not this thy very case? Feel now again thy heart: try, is it not at least coldly affected towards this blessed state?

Is it not then obvious to thee to consider, that the temper of thy spirit must be changed or thou art undone? That inasmuch as thy blessedness lies in God, this change must lie in the alteration of thy dispositions and the posture of thy spirit towards him? Further,—

Canst thou not consider the power and fixedness of thy aversation from God, and with how mighty a weight thy heart is carried and held down from him? Try, lift at thy heart, see if it will be raised God-ward and heaven-ward? Dost thou not find it is as if thou wert lifting at a mountain, that

it lies as a dead weight and stirs not? Ponder thy case in this respect. And then,—

Is it not to be considered that thy time is passing away apace; that if thou let thyself alone it is likely to be as bad with thee to-morrow as this day, and as bad next day as to-morrow? And if thy time expire and thou be snatched away in this state, what will become of thee? And dost thou not therefore see a necessity of considering whatever may be most moving, and most likely to incline thy heart God-ward, of pleading it more loudly and importunately with thyself?

And canst thou not consider and reason the matter thus? ‘O my soul, what is the reason that thou so drawest back and hangest off from thy God? that thou art so unwilling to be blessed in him, that thou shouldest venture to run thyself upon eternal perdition rather? What cause hath he ever given thee to disaffect him? What is the ground of thy so mighty prejudice? Hath he ever done thee hurt? Dost thou think he will not accept a returning soul? That is to give the lie to his gospel, and it becomes not a perishing wretch so to provoke him in whom is all its hope. Is the eternal glory an undesirable thing? or the everlasting burnings tolerable? Canst thou find a way of being for ever blessed without God, or whether he will or no? or is there a sufficient pleasure in thy sinful distance from God, to outweigh heaven and hell? Darest thou venture upon a resolution of giving God and Christ their last refusal, or say thou wilt never hearken to, or have to do with them more? or darest thou venture to do what thou darest not resolve, and act the wickedness thou canst not think of? scorn eternal majesty and love, spurn and trample a bleeding Saviour?’

Commune thus a while with thyself; but if yet thou find thy heart relent nothing, thou canst yet further consider that it lies not in thy power to turn thy own heart, or else how comest thou thus to object? And hence,—

Canst thou avoid considering this is a distressed case, that



thou art in great straits? liable to perish,—yea, sure to do so, if thou continue in that ill temper of spirit,—and wholly unable to help thyself? Surely thou canst not but see this to be a most distressed case.

I put it now to thy conscience; whether being thus led on, thou canst not go thus far? See whether upon trial thy conscience give thee leave to say, ‘I am not able thus to do or think:’ and be not here so foolish as to separate the action of the first cause and the second, in judging thy ability. Thou mayst say, ‘No, I cannot think a good thought without God.’ True; so I know thou canst not move thy finger without God; but my meaning in this appeal to thy conscience is, whether upon trial thou findest not an assistance sufficient to carry thee thus far?

Possibly thou wilt say, ‘Yea, but what am I the better? I am only brought to see myself in a distressed perishing condition, and can get no further.’

I answer, it is well thou art got so far, if thou do indeed see thyself perishing, and thy drowsy soul awake into any sense of the sadness of thy case. But I intend not thus to leave thee here; therefore let me furthermore demand of thee: What course wouldst thou take in any other distress, wherein thou knowest not what to do to help thyself? Would not such an exigency, when thou findest thyself pinched and urged on every side, and every way is shut up to thee,—that thou art beset with calamities and canst no way turn thyself to avoid them,—would not such an exigency force thee down on thy knees, and set thee a crying to the God of mercy for relief and help? Would not *nature* itself prompt to this? Is it not natural to lift up hands and eyes to heaven when we know not what to do?<sup>1</sup>

Therefore, having thus far reasoned with thee about thy considering power, let me demand of thee, if thou canst not yet go somewhat further than considering; that is, in short,—

<sup>1</sup> Audio vulgus cum ad cœlum manus tendunt nihil aliud quam Deum dicunt, vulgi iste naturalis est sermo.—*Min. Fel. Octav.*

Is it *impossible* to thee to obey this dictate of nature,—I mean, represent the deplorable case of thy soul before him that made it, and crave his merciful relief? Do not dispute the matter; thou canst not but see this is a possible and a rational course, as thy case is. “Should not a people seek unto their God?” Fall down therefore low before him; prostrate thyself at the footstool of his mercy-seat. Tell him thou understandest him to be the “Father of spirits,” and the “Father of mercies;” that thou hast heard of his great mercy and pity towards the spirits of men in their forlorn, lapsed state; what a blessedness he hath designed for them; what means he hath designed to bring them to it. Tell him thou only needest a temper of spirit suitable to this blessedness he invites thee to; that thou canst not master and change thy sensual earthly heart; thou knowest he easily can. Thou art come to implore his help, that his blessed and holy Spirit may descend and breathe upon thy stupid dead soul, and may sweetly incline and move it towards him; that it may eternally rest in him; and that thou mayest not perish, after so much done in order to thy blessedness, only for want of a heart to entertain it. Tell him thou comest upon his gracious encouragement, having heard he is as ready to give his Spirit “to them that ask him,” as parents bread to their craving children rather than a stone: that it is for life thou beggest: that it is not so easy to thee, to think of perishing for ever: that thou canst not desist and give up all thy hopes: that thou shalt be in hell shortly, if he hear and help thee not.

Lastly. If thus thou obtain any communication of that holy blessed Spirit, and thou find it gently moving thy dead heart, let me once more demand of thee: Is it impossible to forbear this or that external act of sin at this time, when thou art tempted to it? Sure thou canst not say, it is impossible. What necessitates thee to it? And then certainly, thou mayest as well ordinarily withhold thyself from running into such customary sensualities, as tend to grieve the Spirit, debauch conscience, stupify thy soul, and hide God from thee.

And if thou canst do all this, do not fool thy slothful soul with as idle a conceit, that thou hast nothing to do but to sit still, expecting till thou drop into hell.

Doubt ii. 'But have I not reason to fear I shall but add sin to sin in all this; and so increase the burden of guilt upon my own soul; and by endeavouring to better my case, make it far worse?

'Two things I consider, that suggest to me this fear: the *manner*,—the *end* of the duties you put me upon, as they will be done by me, in the case wherein I apprehend myself yet to lie.

'1. *Manner*. As to the positive actions you advise to,—I have heard, the best actions of an unregenerate person are sins, through the sinfulness of their manner of doing them; though as to the matter of the thing done, they be enjoined and good. And though it be true, that the regenerate cannot perform a sinless duty neither; yet their persons and works being covered over with the righteousness of Christ, are looked upon as having no sin in them, which I apprehend to be none of my case.

'2. *End*. You put me upon these things in order to the attaining of blessedness; and to do such things with intuition to a reward, is to be—as may be doubted—unwarrantable, mercenary, and servile.'

Reply. First: as to this former reason of your doubt; methinks the proposal of it answers it. Forasmuch as you acknowledge the matter of these actions to be good, and duty, —and plain it is they are moral duties, of common perpetual concernment to all persons and times,—dare you decline or dispute against your duty?

Sure if we compare the evil of what is so, substantially, in itself, and what is so, circumstantially, only by the adherence of some undue *modus* or manner; it cannot be hard to determine which is the greater and more dreadful evil. As to the present case, shouldst thou, when the great God sends abroad his proclamation of pardon and peace, refuse to attend it, to consider the contents of it and thy own case in reference

thereto, and thereupon to sue to him for the life of thy own soul,—dost thou not plainly see thy refusal must needs be more provoking than thy defective performance? This speaks disability, but that rebellion and contempt.<sup>1</sup> Besides, dost thou not see that thy objection lies as much against every other action of thy life? The wise man tells us, “the plowing of the wicked is sin,”<sup>2</sup> if that be literally to be understood; and what! wouldst thou therefore sit still and do nothing? Then how soon would that idleness draw on gross wickedness. And would not that be a dreadful confutation of thyself, if thou who didst pretend a scruple that thou mightest not pray, read, hear, meditate, shalt not scruple to play the glutton, the drunkard, the wanton, and indulge thyself in all riot and excess? Yea, if thou do not break out into such exorbitancies, would any one think him serious that should say, it were against his conscience to be “working out his salvation,” and “striving to enter in at the strait gate;” “seeking first the kingdom of God,” etc., would not this sound strangely? And especially, that in the meantime it should never be against his conscience to trifle away his time, and live in perpetual neglects of God, in persevering atheism, infidelity, hardness of heart,—never regretted or striven against: as if these were more innocent.

And what thou sayst of the different case of the “regenerate,” is impertinent; for as to this matter, the case is not different. They that take themselves to be such, must not think that by their supposed interest in the righteousness of Christ, their real sins cease to be such, they only become pardoned sins; and shall they, therefore, sin more boldly than other men, because they are surer of pardon?

<sup>1</sup> Therefore, as to that form of expression—that such acts of unregenerate men are sins;—that is a catachrestical piece of rhetoric, which being so understood is harmless; but to use it in propriety of speech, and thence to go about to make men believe that it is a sin to do their duty, is void both of truth and sense, and full of danger unto the souls of men.

<sup>2</sup> Prov. xxi. 4.

Secondly : as to the other ground of this doubt, there can only be a fear of sinning upon this account, to them that make more sins and duties than God hath made. The doubt supposes religion inconsistent with humanity ; and that God were about to raze out of the nature of man one of the most radical and fundamental laws written there,—a desire of blessedness : and supposes it against the express scope and tenor of his whole gospel revelation. For what doth that design, but to bring men to blessedness ? And how is it a means to compass that design but as it tends to engage men's spirits to design it too ? Unless we would imagine they should go to heaven blindfold, or be rolled thither as stones that know not whither they are moved ; in which case the gospel, that reveals the eternal glory and the way to it, were an useless thing ! If so express words had not been in the Bible, as that Moses “had respect to the recompense of reward ;” yea, that our Lord Jesus himself, “for the joy set before him, endured the cross,” etc., this had been a little more colourable or more modest.

And what ! do not all men, in all the ordinary actions of their lives, act, allowably enough, with intuition to much lower ends ? even those particular ends which the works of their several callings tend to, else they should act as brutes in everything they do. And would such a one scruple, if he were pining for want of bread, to beg or labour for it for this end,—to be relieved. It is the mistaking of the *notion* of heaven that hath also an ingrediency into this doubt, if it be really a doubt. What ! is it a low thing to be filled with the Divine fulness ? to have his glory replenishing our souls ? to be perfectly freed from sin ? in everything conformed unto this holy nature and will ? That our minding our *interest* in this, or any affairs, should be the principal thing with us, is not to be thought : our supreme end must be the same with his, who made all things for himself, “of whom, through whom, and to whom are all things,” that he alone might have the glory. But subordinates need not quarrel. A lower end doth not exclude the higher, but serves it ; and

is as to it a means. God is our end, as he is to be glorified and enjoyed by us: our glorifying him is but the agnition of his glory; which we do most in beholding and partaking it; which is therefore in direct subordination thereto.

Doubt iii. But it may further be doubted, 'What if it be acknowledged, that these are both things possible and lawful; yet to what purpose will it be to attempt anything in this kind? O what assurance have I of success? Is there any word of promise for the encouragement of one in my case? Or is God under any obligation to reward the endeavours of nature with special grace? Wherefore, when I have done all I can, he may withhold his influence, and then I am but where I was, and may perish notwithstanding.'

And suppose thou perish notwithstanding! Do but yet consult a little with thy own thoughts: which is more tolerable and easy to thee, to perish as not attaining what thy fainter strugglings could not reach; or for the most direct wilful rebellion, "doing wickedly as thou couldest?" Or who shall have, thinkest thou, the more fearful condemnation? He that shall truly say, when his Master comes to judgment, 'I never had indeed, Lord, a heart so fully changed and turned to thee, as should denote me to be the subject of thy saving, pardoning mercy; but thou knowest, who knowest all things, I longed, and, with some earnestness, did endeavour it. Thou hast been privy to my secret desires and moans, to the weak strivings of a listless distempered spirit, not pleased with itself, aiming at a better temper towards thee. I neglected not thy prescribed means: only that grace which I could not challenge, thou wast pleased not to give: thou didst require what I must confess myself to have owed thee; thou didst withhold only what thou owedst me not; therefore must I yield myself a convicted guilty wretch, and have nothing to say why thy sentence should not pass:' or he that shall as truly hear from the mouth of his Judge, 'Sinner, thou wast often forewarned of this approaching day and called upon to provide for it; thou hadst "precept upon precept, and line upon line." The

counsels of life and peace were with frequent importunity pressed upon thee, but thou rejectedst all with proud contempt; didst despise with the same profane scorn the offers, commands, and threats of him that made thee; hardenedst thy heart to the most obstinate rebellion against his known laws; didst all the wickedness to which thy heart prompted thee, without restraint; declinedst everything of duty which his authority and the exigency of thy own case did oblige thee to; didst avoid as much as thou couldest to hear or know anything of my will; couldst not find one serious considering hour in a whole lifetime, to bethink thyself what was likely to become of thee, when thy place on earth should know thee no more. Thou mightest know thou wast at my mercy, thy breath in my hand, and that I could easily have cut thee off any moment of that large space of time my patience allowed thee in the world; yet thou never thoughtest it worth the while to sue to me for thy life. Destruction from the Lord was never a terror to thee. Thou wouldst never be brought upon thy knees; I had none of thy addresses; never didst thou sigh out a serious request for mercy; thy soul was not worth so much in thy account. Thy blood, wretch, be upon thy guilty head: "Depart accursed into everlasting flames," etc.'

Come now, use thy reason a while; employ a few sober thoughts about this matter; remember, thou wilt have a long eternity wherein to recognise the passages of thy life, and the state of thy case in the last judgment. Were it supposable that one who had done as the former, should be left finally destitute of Divine grace and perish, yet in which of these cases wouldst thou choose to be found at last?

But why yet shouldst thou imagine so bad an issue as that after thine utmost endeavours grace should be withheld, and leave thee to perish because God hath not bound himself by promise to thee? What promise have the ravens to be heard when they cry? 'But thou art a sinner.' True, otherwise thou wert not without promise; the promises of the first covenant would at least belong to thee. Yet expe-

rience tells the world, his unpromised mercies freely flow everywhere: "The whole earth is full of his goodness." 'Yea, but his special grace is conveyed by promise only, and that only through Christ; and how can it be communicated through him to any but those that are in him?' What then, is the first inbeing in Christ no special grace? or is there any being in him before the first, that should be the ground of that gracious communication? Things are plain enough, if we make them not intricate, or entangle ourselves by foolish subtilties. God promises sinners indefinitely pardon and eternal life for the sake of Christ, on condition that they believe on him. He gives of his good pleasure that grace whereby he draws any to Christ, without promise directly made to them, whether absolute or conditional; though he give it for the sake of Christ also. His discovery of his purpose to give such grace to some, indefinitely, amounts not to a promise claimable by any; for if it be said to be an absolute promise to particular persons, who are they? whose duty is it to believe it made to him? If conditional, what are the conditions upon which the first grace is certainly promised? who can be able to assign them?

But, poor soul! thou needst not stay to puzzle thyself about this matter. God binds himself to do what he promises; but hath he anywhere bound himself to do no more? Did he promise thee thy being, or that thou shouldst live to this day? Did he promise thee the bread that sustains thee, the daily comforts of thy life? Yea, what is nearer the present purpose, did he promise thee a station under the gospel? or that thou shouldst ever hear the name of Christ? If ever his Spirit have in any degree moved upon thy heart, inclined thee at all seriously to consider thy eternal concerns, did he beforehand make thee any promise of that?

A promise would give thee a full certainty of the issue, if it were absolute, out of hand; if conditional, as soon as thou findest the condition performed. But what! canst thou act upon no lower rate than a foregoing certainty, a pre-assurance of the event?



My friend, consider a little what thou canst not but know already, that it is hope,—built, with those that are rational, upon rational probabilities, with many, oftentimes upon none at all,—is the great engine that moves the world, that keeps all sorts of men in action. Doth the husbandman foreknow when he ploughs and sows, that the crop will answer his cost and pains? Doth the merchant foreknow, when he embarks his goods, he shall have a safe and gainful return? Dost thou foreknow, when thou eatest, it shall refresh thee? when thou takest physic, that it shall recover thy health and save thy life? Yea, further; can the covetous man pretend a promise, that his unjust practices shall enrich him? the malicious, that he shall prosper in his design of revenge? the ambitious, that he shall be great and honourable? the voluptuous, that his pleasure shall be always unmixed with gall and wormwood? Can any say they ever had a promise to ascertain them that profaneness and sensuality would bring them to heaven? that an ungodly, dissolute life would end in blessedness? *Here*, the Lord knows men can be confident and active enough without a promise, and against many an express threatening. Wilt thou not upon the hope thou hast before thee do as much for thy soul, for eternal blessedness, as men do for uncertain riches, short pleasures, an airy, soon blasted name? yea, as much as men desperately do to damn themselves, and purchase their own swift destruction?

Or canst thou pretend, though thou hast no pre-assuring promise, thou hast no hope? Is it nothing to have heard so much of God's gracious nature? Is it suitable to the reports and discoveries he hath made of himself, to let a poor wretch perish at his feet, that lies prostrate there expecting his mercy? Didst thou ever hear he was so little a lover of souls? Do his giving his Son, his earnest unwearied strivings with sinners, his long patience, the clear beams of gospel light, the amiable appearances of his grace, give ground for no better, no kinder thoughts of him? yea, hath he not expressly styled himself the "God hearing prayers," taken a name on

purpose to encourage "all flesh to come to him?"<sup>1</sup> Wilt thou dare then to adopt those profane words, "what profit is it to pray to him,"<sup>2</sup> and say, it is better to sit still, resolving to perish, than address to him or seek his favour, because he hath not by promise assured thee of the issue, and that, if he suspend his grace, all thou dost will be in vain?

How wouldst thou judge of the like resolution, if the husbandman should say, 'When I have spent my pains and cost in breaking up and preparing the earth and casting in my seed; if the sun shine not, and the rain fall not in season, if the influences of heaven be suspended, if God withhold his blessing, or if an invading enemy anticipate my harvest, all I do and expend is to no purpose; and God hath not ascertained me of the contrary by express promise; it is as good therefore sit still.' Censure and answer him and thyself both together.

Doubt iv. But thou wilt yet, it may be, say that though all this may be possibly true, yet thou canst not all this while be convinced of any need so earnestly to busy thyself about this affair. For God is wont to surprise souls by preventing acts of grace, to be found of them that sought him not, to break in by an irresistible power, which they least thought of: and to go about to anticipate his grace, were to detract from the freeness, and so from the glory of it.

Reply. But art thou not in all this afraid of charging God foolishly? When the merciful God, in compassion to the souls of men, hath given his gospel, constituted and settled a standing office to be perpetuated through all ages for the publication of it; invited the world therein to a treaty with him touching the concernments of their eternal peace; required so strictly their attendance to, and most serious consideration of, his proposals and offers; encouraged and commanded their addresses to him, set up a throne of grace on purpose,—wilt thou dare to say, all this is needless?

When God speaks to thee, is it needless for thee to hear him or regard what he saith? or when he commands thee to

<sup>1</sup> Ps. lxxv. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Job xxi. 15.

pour forth thy soul to him, wilt thou say it is a needless thing?

Dost thou not plainly see, that the peculiar appropriate aptitude of the things pressed upon thee speaks them necessary,<sup>1</sup> as means to their designed end; whence also they are fitly called ‘means of grace?’<sup>2</sup> Is not the word of God the immortal seed? Are not souls begotten by that word, to be the firstfruits of his creatures? Is it not the type, the mould, or print, by which Divine impressions are put upon the soul, the instrument by which he sanctifies? Are not the exceeding great and precious promises the *vehicula*, the ‘conveyancers’<sup>3</sup> of the Divine nature? And what can be the means to mollify and melt the obdurate heart of a sinner, to assuage its enmity, to overcome it into the love of God, to transform it into his image, but the gospel discovery of God’s own gracious and holy nature? And can it operate to this purpose without being heard or read, and understood, and considered and taken to heart? Do but compare this means God works by, with the subject to be wrought upon and the effect to be wrought, and nothing can be conceived more adequate and fitly corresponding.

But inasmuch as there hath been an enmity between God and sinners, and that therefore the whole entire means of reconciliation must be a treaty; and that a treaty cannot be managed or conceived without mutual interlocation, therefore must the sinful soul have a way of expressing its own sense to God, as well as He speaks his mind to it; which shows the necessity of prayer too: and therefore, because the peace begins on his part, though the war began on ours, he calls upon sinners to open themselves to him; “come now, let us reason together:” he invites addresses; “seek the Lord while he may be found, and call upon him while he is nigh,”<sup>4</sup> etc. And doth not the natural relation itself between the Creator and a creature require this, besides the exigency of our present case? Every creature is a supplicant; its neces-

<sup>1</sup> ‘Necessitas medii.’ <sup>2</sup> 1 Pet. i. 23; Jam. i. 18; Rom. vi. 17; John xvii. 17.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Pet. i.

<sup>4</sup> Isa. i. ; lv.

sary dependence is a natural prayer. "The eyes of all things look up," etc. It is the proper glory of a Deity to be depended on and addressed to. "Should not a people seek unto their God?"<sup>1</sup> It is an appeal to reason; is it not a congruous thing?

Further; dost thou not know thy Maker's will, made known,<sup>2</sup> infers upon thee a necessity of obeying; unless thou think the breach between God and thee is better to be healed by rebellion, and that the only way to expiate wickedness were to continue and multiply it? Is it a needless thing to comply with the will of him that gave thee breath and being, and whose power is so absolute over thee as to all thy concerns, both of time and eternity?

Again; while thou pretendest these things are needless, come now, speak out freely; what are the more necessary affairs, wherein thou art so deeply engaged that thou canst not suffer a diversion? What! is the service and gratification of thy flesh and sense so important a business, that thou canst be at no leisure for that more needless work of saving thy soul? Where is thy reason and modesty? Dost thou mind none other from day to day, but necessary affairs? Dost thou use, when thou art tempted to vain dalliances, empty discourses, intemperate indulgence to thy appetite, so to answer the temptation, 'It is not necessary?' Or art thou so destitute of all conscience and shame, to think it unnecessary to "work out thy salvation," to "strive to enter in at the strait gate" that leads to life, but most indispensably necessary to be very critically curious about what thou shalt eat, and drink, and put on; and how to spend thy time with greatest ease and pleasure to thy flesh, that it may not have the least cause to complain it is neglected?

Thy pretence, that God is wont to be "found of them that sought him not,"<sup>3</sup> to the purpose thou intendest it, is a most ignorant or malicious abuse of Scripture. The prophet is in that text foretelling the calling of the Gentiles, who, while

<sup>1</sup> Isa. viii. 19.

<sup>2</sup> 'Necessitas præcepti.'

<sup>3</sup> Isa. lxxv. 1.

they remained such, did not, it is true, inquire after God; but then he expressly first tells us, personating God, "I am sought of them that asked not for me," that is, after the gospel came among them; and then it is added, "I am found" (upon this *seeking*, plainly) "of them that sought me not," that is, who once in their former darkness, before I revealed myself in the gospel dispensation to them, sought me not: as much as to say, I am now sought of a people that lately sought me not nor asked after me, and I am found of them. But what is this to thy case; whom God hath been, in the gospel, earnestly inviting to seek after him, and thou all this while refuseth to comply with the invitation?

And suppose thou hear of some rare instances of persons suddenly snatched by the hand of grace out of the midst of their wickedness, as firebrands out of the fire; is it therefore the safest course to go on in a manifest rebellion against God, till possibly he may do so by thee also? How many thousand may have dropped into hell, since thou heardst of such an instance,—as a worthy person speaks to that purpose?<sup>1</sup> If thou hast heard of one Elijah fed by ravens and of some thousands by our Saviour's miracles, canst thou thence plead a repeal of that law to the world, "they that will not labour shall not eat?" Or is it a safer or wiser course, to wait till food drop into thy mouth from heaven, than to use a prudent care for the maintenance of thy life?

If thou say thou hearest but of few that are wrought upon in *this* way,—of their own foregoing expectation and endeavour; remember,—and let the thought of it startle thee,—that there are "but few that are saved." And therefore are so few wrought upon in this way, because so few will be persuaded to it. But canst thou say—though God hath not bound himself to the mere natural endeavours of his creature neither—that ever any took this course, and persisted with faithful diligence, but they succeeded in it?

What thou talkest of the freeness of God's grace, looks

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Baxter.

like a hypocritical pretence. Is there no way to honour his grace but by affronting his authority? but to sin, "that grace may abound?" Sure grace will be better pleased by *obedience* than by such *sacrifice*. For a miserable, perishing wretch to use God's means to help itself, doth that look like merit? Is the beggar afraid thou shouldst interpret his coming to thy door and seeking thy alms, to signify as if he thought he had deserved them? I hope thou wilt acknowledge thyself less than the least of all God's mercies, and that thou canst not deserve from him a morsel of bread; mayest thou not therefore in thy necessity labour for thy living, lest thou shouldst entrench upon the freeness of Divine bounty? With as much wisdom and reason mightest thou decline the use of all other means to preserve thy life, which thou must owe always to free mercy; to eat when thou art hungry, to take physic when thou art sick, lest thou shouldst intimate thyself to have merited the strength and health sought thereby.

Nor can I think of any rational pretence that can more plausibly be insisted on, than these that have been thus briefly discussed. And it must needs be difficult to bring any appearance of reason for the patronage of so ill a cause as the careless giving up of a man's soul to perish eternally, that is visibly capable of eternal blessedness. And certainly were we once apprehensive of the case, the attempt of disputing a man into such a resolution, would appear much more ridiculous than if one should gravely urge arguments to all the neighbourhood, to persuade them to burn their houses, to put out their eyes, to kill their children, and cut their own throats. And sure, let all imaginable pretences be debated to the uttermost, and it will appear that nothing withholdeth men from putting forth all their might in the endeavour of getting a spirit suitable to this blessedness, but an obstinately perverse and sluggish heart, despoiled and naked of all show of reason and excuse. And though that be a hard task to reason against mere will, yet that being the way to make men willing, and the latter part of the work

proposed in pursuance of this direction, I shall recommend only some such considerations as the text itself will suggest, for the stirring up and persuading of slothful, reluctant hearts; choosing those as the most proper limits, and not being willing to be infinite herein, as amidst so great a variety of considerations to that purpose, one might.

That in general which I shall propose, shall be only the misery of the unrighteous; whereof we may take a view in the opposite blessedness here described: the contradictories whereto will afford a negative,<sup>1</sup> the contraries a positive, description of this misery; so that each consideration will be double: which I shall now rather glance at than insist upon.

1. Consider then, if thou be found at last unqualified for this blessedness; how wilt thou bear it to be banished eternally from the blessed face of God? There will be those that shall behold that face in righteousness; so shalt not thou: "the wicked is driven away in his wickedness," with a—"never more see my face."

Again; what amazing visions wilt thou have! What ghastly, frightful objects to converse with, amidst those horrors of eternal darkness; when the devil and his angels shall be thy everlasting associates! What direful images shall those accursed, enraged spirits and thy own fruitful parturient imagination for ever entertain thee with, and present to thy view!

2. Is it a small thing with thee to be destitute of all those inherent excellencies which the perfected image of God, whereof thou wast capable, comprehends? View them over in that too defective account some of the former pages gave thee of them. Thou art none of those bright stars, those sons of the morning, those blessed glorified spirits, thou mightest have been. But,—

Consider, what art thou? What shalt thou for ever be? What image or likeness shalt thou bear? Alas, poor wretch,

<sup>1</sup> 'Pœna damni et sensus.'

thou art now a fiend! conformed to thy hellish partners; thou bearest their accursed likeness. Death is now finished in thee; and as thou "sowedst to the flesh," thou reapest corruption. Thou art become a loathsome carcase; the worms that never die abound in thy putrified, filthy soul. Thou hast a hell in thee. Thy venomous lusts are now grown mature, are in their full-grown state. If "a world of iniquity," a fulness of deadly poison, tempered by hell-fire, is *here* sometimes to be found in a little member,<sup>1</sup> what will there then be in all thy parts and powers!

3. Consider, how blessed a satisfaction dost thou lose! how pleasant and delightful a rest, arising both from the sight of so much glory and so peaceful a temper and constitution of spirit! Here thou mightest have enjoyed an eternal, undisturbed rest.

But for *rest* and *satisfaction*, thou hast vexation and endless torment, both by what thou beholdest, and what thou feelest within thee. Thy dreadful 'visions' shall not let thee rest. But the chiefest matter of thy disquiet and torment is in the very temper and constitution of thy soul. Thy horrid lusts are fuller of poisonous energy and are destitute of their wonted objects, whence they turn all their power and fury upon thy miserable self. Thy enraged passions would fly in the face of God, but they spend themselves in tormenting the soul that bred them. Thy curses and blasphemies, the envenomed darts pointed at heaven, are reverberated and driven back into thy own heart. And therefore,—

4. Consider, what 'awaking' hast thou? Thou awakest not into the mild and cheerful light of that blessed day, wherein the saints of the Most High hold their solemn, joyful triumph. But thou awakest into that great and terrible day of the Lord,—dost thou desire it, for what end is it to thee?—a day of darkness, and not light; a gloomy and stormy day. The day of thy birth is not a more hateful than this is a dreadful day. Thou awakest and art beset with terrors, presently apprehended and dragged before thy glorious, severe

<sup>1</sup> Jas. iii. 5.



Judge, and thence into eternal torments. O happy thou, mightest thou never awake, might the grave conceal, and its more silent darkness cover thee for ever. But since thou must awake then, how much more happy wert thou, if thou wouldest suffer thyself to be awakened now ! What, to lose and endure so much, because thou wilt not now a little bestir thyself and look about thee ? Sure thy conscience tells thee thou art urged but to what is possible, and lawful, and hopeful, and necessary. Methinks, if thou be a man, and not a stone ; if thou hast a reasonable soul about thee ; thou shouldst presently fall to work, and rather spend thy days in serious thoughts, and prayers, and tears, than run the hazard of losing so transcendent a glory, and of suffering misery, which as now thou art little able to conceive, thou wilt then be less able to endure.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

RULE 4. DIRECTING TO THE ENDEAVOUR OF A GRADUAL IMPROVEMENT IN SUCH A DISPOSEDNESS OF SPIRIT AS SHALL BE FOUND IN ANY MEASURE ALREADY ATTAINED, TOWARDS THIS BLESSEDNESS.—THAT IT IS BLESSEDNESS BEGUN WHICH DISPOSES TO THE CONSUMMATE STATE OF IT.—THAT WE ARE THEREFORE TO ENDEAVOUR THE DAILY INCREASE OF OUR PRESENT KNOWLEDGE OF GOD, CONFORMITY TO HIM, AND THE SATISFIEDNESS OF OUR SPIRITS THEREIN.

4. RULE. That when we find ourselves in any disposition towards this blessedness, we endeavour a *gradual improvement* therein, to get the habitual temper of our spirits made daily more suitable to it.

We must still remember we have not yet attained, and must therefore continue pressing forward to “this mark, for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.”<sup>1</sup> That prize (not price, as we commonly misread it in our Bibles) of which the Apostle here speaks, is, as may be seen by looking back to v. 8, 9, etc., the same with the blessedness in the text; such a knowledge of Christ, as should infer at last his participation with Him in His state of glory, or of the resurrection of the dead. This is the ultimate term, the scope or end of that high calling of God in Christ; so it is also stated elsewhere,—“who hath *called* us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus.”<sup>2</sup>

Now we should therefore frequently recount how far short

<sup>1</sup> Phil. iii. 14. Βραβεῖον.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Pet. v. 10.

we are of this glory, and stir up our souls to more vigorous endeavours in order to it.

Our suitableness to this blessedness stands in our having the elements and first principles of it in us ; it is glory only that fits for glory, some previous sights and impressions of it, and a pleasant complacential relish thereof, that frame and attemper us by degrees to the full and consummate state of it. This is that therefore we must endeavour,—

*A growing knowledge of God, conformity to him, and satisfiedness of spirit therein.*

What we expect should be one day perfect, we must labour may be, in the meantime, always growing.

1. Our knowledge of God. The knowledge of him I here principally intend, is not notional and speculative, but— which is more ingredient to our blessedness, both inchoate and perfect—that of converse, that familiar knowledge which we usually express by the name of acquaintance. See that this knowledge of him be increased daily. Let us now use ourselves much with God. Our knowledge of him must aim at conformity to him ; and how powerful a thing is converse in order hereto ! How insensibly is it wont to transform men, and mould anew their spirits, language, garb, deportment ! To be removed from the solitude or rudeness of the country to a city or university, what an alteration doth it make ! How is such a person divested by degrees of his rusticity, of his more uncomely and agrest manners ! Objects we converse with beget their image upon us ; “ They walked after vanity, and became vain,”<sup>1</sup> saith Jeremiah ; and Solomon, “ He that walketh with the wise shall be wise.”<sup>2</sup> Walking is an usual expression of converse. So to converse with the holy is the way to be holy, with heaven the way to be heavenly, with God the way to be godlike.

Let us therefore make this our present business, much to acquaint ourselves with God. We count upon seeing him face to face, of being always in his presence, beholding his

<sup>1</sup> Jer. ii. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Prov. xiii. 20.

glory ; that speaketh very intimate acquaintance indeed. How shall we reach that pitch? What! to live now as strangers to him? Is that the way? "The path of the righteous is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day."<sup>1</sup> The text shows us the righteous man's end, to behold the glory of God's face, etc. It is easy to apprehend then his *way* must needs have in it a growing *brightness*, as he comes still nearer this end. Every nearer approach to a lucid thing infers to us an increase of light from it. We should therefore be "following on to know the Lord," and we shall see his "going forth will be before us as the morning."<sup>2</sup> He will be still visiting us with renewed, increasing light,—for such is morning light, fresh and growing light; and ere long it will be perfect day. Labour we to improve our knowledge of God to such a degree of acquaintance as our present state can admit of; to be as inward with him as we can, to familiarize ourselves to him. His gospel aims at this, to make those that were "afar off nigh." Far distant objects we can have no distinct view of. He can give us little account of a person that hath only seen him afar off; so God beholds the proud afar off, that is, he will have no acquaintance with them, whereas with the humble he will be familiar; "he will dwell" (as in a family) "with them."<sup>3</sup> So the ungodly behold God till he bring them in, and make them nigh; then they are no longer strangers, but of his family and household, now thoroughly acquainted. Several notes there are of a thorough acquaintance which we should endeavour may concur in our acquaintance with God, in that analogy which the case will bear.

To know his *nature*; or, as we would speak of a man, what will please and displease him, so as to be able in the whole course of our daily conversation to approve ourselves to him; to have the skill so to manage our conversation as to continue a correspondence, not interrupted by any our

<sup>1</sup> Prov. iv. 18.<sup>2</sup> Hos. vi. 3.<sup>3</sup> Isa. lvii. 15.

offensive, displeasing demeanours : to “walk worthy of God unto all well-pleasing.” It concerns us most to study and endeavour this *practical* knowledge of the nature of God ; what trust, and love, and fear, and purity, etc., his faithfulness and greatness, his goodness and holiness, etc., do challenge from us : what may in our daily walking be agreeable, what repugnant, to the several attributes of his being.

To know his *secrets* ; to be as it were of the cabinet council ; the word used by the Psalmist hath a peculiar significancy to that purpose,—to signify, not only counsel, but a council, or the *consessus* of persons that consult together. This is his gracious vouchsafement to humble, reverential souls : “The secret of the Lord is with them that fear him ;”<sup>1</sup> such acquaintance with him is to be sought, to know the communicable secrets both of his mind and heart. Of his *mind*,—his truths, gospel mysteries, that were kept secret from ages and generations : “we have the mind of Christ.” This is great inwardness. Of his *heart* ; his love, his goodwill, his kind bosom-thoughts towards our souls.

To know his *methods*, and the course of his dispensations towards the world, his Church, and especially our own spirits. This is great knowledge of God, to have the skill to trace his footsteps, and observe, by comparing times with times, that such a course he more usually holds ; and accordingly, with great probability, collect from what we have seen and observed, what we may expect ; what order and succession there is of storms of wrath to clouds of sin ; and again of peaceful lucid intervals, when such storms have inferred penitential tears ; in what exigencies, and distresses, humble mourners may expect God’s visits and consolations : to recount in how great extremities former experience hath taught us not to despair ; and from such experience still to argue ourselves into fresh reviving hopes, when the state of things, whether public or private, outward or spiritual, seems forlorn.

<sup>1</sup> Ps. xxv. 14.

To know the proper seasons of address to him ; and how to behave ourselves most acceptably in his presence : in what dispositions and postures of spirit we are fittest for his converse, so as to be able to come to him in a good hour, “in a time when he may be found.”<sup>1</sup>

To know his *voice* : this discovers acquaintance. “The ear trieth words, as the mouth tasteth meats.”<sup>2</sup> God’s righteous ones, that are filled with the fruits of righteousness, do proportionably abound in “knowledge, and in all sense.”<sup>3</sup> They have quick, naked, unvitiated senses, to discern between good and evil ; yea, and can have the suffrage of several senses concerning the same object. They have a kind of taste in their ear. They taste the good word of God, even in his previous workings on them. Being new-born, they are intimated to have tasted in the word how gracious the Lord is. As they grow up thereby, they have still a more judicious sense, and can more certainly distinguish, when God speaks to them and when a stranger goes about to counterfeit his voice.<sup>4</sup> They can tell at first hearing, what is grateful and nutritive, what offensive and hurtful to the Divine life ; what is harmonious and agreeable, what dissonant to the gospel already received, so that an angel from heaven must expect no welcome, if he bring another.

To know his inward *motions and impulses* ; when his hand toucheth our hearts, to be able to say, “This is the finger of God,” there is something Divine in this touch. “My beloved put in his hand by the hole of the door, and my bowels were moved.”<sup>5</sup> This speaks acquaintance when the soul can say, ‘I know his very touch, the least impression from him ; I can distinguish it from thousands of objects that daily beat upon my heart.’

To understand his *looks* ; to know the meaning of his aspects and glances, of the various casts as it were of his

<sup>1</sup> Ps. xxxii. 6.

<sup>2</sup> Job xii. 11.

<sup>3</sup> Phil. i. 9. αἰσθητήρια γεγυμνασμένα ; Heb. v. ult. ; Heb. vi.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Pet. ii. 2, 3 ; 1 John x.

<sup>5</sup> Cant. v. 4.

eye. Such things intimate friends can, in a sort, talk by, with one another;<sup>1</sup> "I will guide thee by mine eye;" that implies an intelligent, teachable subject. We have now no full-eyed appearances of God; he shows himself, looks in upon us through the lattice, through a veil, or a shadow, or a glass. That measure of acquaintance with him,—to be able to discern and own him in his appearances,—is a great participation of heaven. Utter unacquaintance with God, is expressed by the denial of these two, "ye have neither heard his voice, nor seen his shape."<sup>2</sup>

Finally, which brings us home to the text, to keep our eye intently fixed on him, not to understand *his* looks only as before, but to return *our own*. Intimate acquaintance, when such friends meet, is much expressed and improved by the eye, by a reciprocation of glances or—which speaks more inwardness—more fixed views; when their eyes do even feed and feast upon each other. Thus we should endeavour to be as in a continual interview with God.

How frequent mention have we of the fixed posture of his eye towards saints. "To this man will I look;" I have found out, as much as to say, that which shall be ever the delight of mine eye; do not divert me. Towards him I will look. What he speaks of the material temple, is ultimately to be referred to that which is typified, his church, his saints, united with his Christ, "Mine eyes and my heart shall be there perpetually;" and elsewhere, "He withdraweth not his eyes from the righteous;"<sup>3</sup> he cannot—admirable grace!—allow himself to look off, to turn aside his eye: and he seems impatient of the aversion of theirs. "Let me see thy countenance," saith he, "for it is comely."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> So we apprehend God proportionably more clearly, as the idea we have of a person is more distinct, that we have of him, by the sight of his picture or face through a glass, beyond that which we have by hearing a reported description of him, though by himself unseen. This is acquaintance with God.

<sup>2</sup> John v.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Kings ix. 3; Job xxxvi. 7; Ps. xxxiii. 18, and xxxiv. 15.

<sup>4</sup> Cant. ii. 14.

Is it not much more reasonable it should be thus with us towards him? that we should be more delighted to behold real comeliness, than he with what is so only by his gracious vouchsafement and estimation? How careful should we be, that our eye may at every turn meet his; that he never look towards us, and find it in the ends of the earth, carelessly wandering from him! How well doth it become us "to set the Lord always before us;"<sup>1</sup> to have our eye ever towards the Lord!

This, you see, is the initial leading thing in this blessedness of heaven; so it must have also a prime ingrediency into our heaven on earth. It is a part of celestial blessedness; but it is not peculiar to it. The present blessedness the righteous enjoy here, is a participation of heaven. It hath something in it of everything that is ingredient into that perfect blessedness. Our present knowledge of God is often expressed by vision or sight, as we have had occasion to observe in many passages of Scripture. He hath given us such a visive power, and made it connatural to that heavenly creature begotten of him, in all the true subjects of his blessedness. "We know that we are of God," and presently it follows, "He hath given us an understanding, to know him that is true."<sup>2</sup> This new man is not born blind. The blessed God Himself is become liable to the view of his regenerate intellectual eye, clarified and filled with vigour and spirit from Himself. He therefore that hath made, that hath new-formed this eye, shall not He be seen by it? shall not we turn it upon Him? Why do not we more frequently bless our eye with that sight? This object, though of so high excellency and glory, will not hurt, but perfect and strengthen it. They are refreshing vital beams that issue from it. Sure we have no excuse that we eye God so little; that is, that we mind him no more. Why have we so few thoughts of him in a day? What! to let so much time pass, and not spare him a look, a thought? Do we intend to employ ourselves an

<sup>1</sup> Ps. xvi. 8; Ps. xxv.

<sup>2</sup> 1 John v. 19, 20.



eternity in the visions of God, and is our present aversion from him, and intention upon vanity, our best preparation thereto? This loudly calls for redress. Shall God be waiting all the day, as on purpose to catch our eye, to intercept a look, and we studiously decline him and still look another way, as of choice? and what is it but choice? Can we pretend a necessity to forget him all the day? How cheap is the expense of a look! How little would it cost us! And yet how much of duty might it express; how much of comfort and joy might it bring into us!

How great is our offence and loss, that we live not in such more constant views of God! Herein we sin and suffer both at once; things both very unsuitable to heaven. Mindfulness of God is the living spring of all holy and pleasant affections and deportments towards him; sets all the wheels a-going; makes the soul as the chariots of Amminadib. These "wheels" have their "eyes" also, are guided by a mind, by an intellectual principle. Knowing, intelligent beings,—as we also are by participation and according to our measure,—so act mutually towards one another. We cannot move towards God but with an open eye, seeing him and our way towards him. If we close our eyes, we stand still, or blindly run another course, we know not whither. All sin is darkness, whether it be neglect of good or doing of evil: its way is a way of darkness; as a course of holy motion is "walking in the light." Our shutting our eyes towards God creates that darkness; surrounds us with a darkness comprehensive of all sin. Now is everything of enjoined duty waived and any evil done, that sinful nature prompts us to. Well might it be said, "he that sinneth hath not seen God."<sup>1</sup> When we have made ourselves this darkness, we fall of course under Satan's empire, and are presently within his dominions. He is the prince of darkness, and can rule us now at his will. Perishing, lost souls are such as "in whom the god of this world hath blinded their minds." To "open their eyes, and turn them

<sup>1</sup> 1 John iii. 6.

from darkness to light," is, "to turn them" also "from the power of Satan unto God." What a hell of wickedness are we brought into, in the twinkling of an eye! We are without God in the world; as, if a man wink, though at noon-day, he hath as it were put out the sun; it is with him as if there were no such thing. When we have banished God out of our sight and forgotten him, it is with us as if there were no God. If such a state grow habitual to us, as we know every sinful aversion of our eye from God tends thereto, what wickedness is there that will not lurk in this darkness? How often in Scripture is forgetting God used as a character, yea, as a paraphrase, a full, though summary expression of sin in general! As if the wickedness, the malignity, the very hell itself of sin, were wholly included, and not connoted only, here. "Now consider this," after so dreadful an enumeration, so black a catalogue, "all that forget God:"<sup>1</sup> and as deep calleth to deep, one hell to another, "the wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the people that forget God."<sup>2</sup> That heap, that mass of wickedness, of pride, of persecution, cursing, blasphemy, deceit, and mischief, all meet in one that hath not God in all his thoughts.

But who is so hardy to look the holy God in the face, and sin against him? What an astonishment is it, when he watches over present sin or brings forth former sins out of secret darkness, and sets them in the light of his countenance? Who, that understands anything of the nature and majesty of God, dare call him for a witness of his sinning? The worst of men would find themselves under some restraint, could they but obtain of themselves to sit down sometimes, and solemnly think of God. Much more would it prove an advantage to them whom I most intend, such as sin within the nearer call and reach of mercy; that sin not to the utmost latitude. Even such as lead the strictest lives, and are seldomer found to transgress; are not their sins wont to begin with forgetting God? Did they eye God more, would

<sup>1</sup> Ps. l. 22.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. ix. 17.

they not sin less frequently and with greater regret? You his saints, that have "made a covenant with him by sacrifice," that profess the greatest love and devotedness to him, and seem willing yourselves to become sacrifices, and lay down your lives for his sake; what! is it a harder thing to give him a look, a thought? or is it not too common a thing, without necessity, and then not without injury, to withhold these from him? Let us bethink ourselves, are not the principal distempers of our spirits, and disorders yet observable in our lives, to be referred hither? As to enjoined services,—what! should we venture on omissions, if we had God in our eye? or serve him with so declining, backward hearts? Should we dare to let pass a day, in the even whereof we might write down, 'nothing done for God this day?' Or should we serve him as a hard master, with sluggish, despondent spirits? The Apostle forbids servants to serve with eye-service, as men-pleasers; meaning, they should eye men less and God more. Sure, as to him, our service is not *enough* eye-service. We probably eye men more than we should; but we do not eye him enough. Hence such hanging of hands, such feebleness of knees, such laziness and indifferency, so little of an active zeal and laborious diligence, so little "fervency of spirit in serving the Lord." Hence also such an aversion to hazardous services, such fear of attempting anything, though never so apparent important duty, that may prove costly or hath danger in it. We look not to him that is invisible.

And as to forbidden things; should we be so proud, so passionate, so earthly, so sensual, if we had God more in view? Should we so much seek ourselves and indulge our own wills and humours, drive a design with such sollicitude and intention of mind for our private interests? Should we walk at such a latitude, and more consult our own inclination than our rule, allow ourselves in so much vanity of conversation, did we mind God as we ought?

And do not we sensibly punish ourselves in this neglect? What a dismal chaos is this world, while we see not God in

it! To live destitute of a Divine presence, to discern no beam of the heavenly glory; to go up and down day by day, and perceive nothing of God, no glimmering, no appearance: this is disconsolate, as well as sinful darkness. What can we make of creatures, what of the daily events of Providence, if we see not in them the glory of a Deity; if we do not contemplate and adore the Divine wisdom, power, and goodness, diffused everywhere? Our practical atheism, and inobservance of God, makes the world become to us the region and shadow of death, states us as among ghosts and spectres, makes all things look with a ghastly face, imprints death upon everything we see, encircles us with gloomy dreadful shades and with uncomfortable apparitions. To behold the tragical spectacles always in view, the violent lusts, the rapine and rage of some, the calamitous sufferings, the miseries and ruins of others; to hear every corner resounding with the insultations of the oppressor and the mournful groans of the oppressed,—what a painful continuing death were it to be in the world without God! At the best, all things were but a vanishing scheme, an image seen in the dark; the Creation, a thing the fashion whereof were passing away: the whole contexture and system of Providence were mere confusion, without the least concinnity or order: Religion an acknowledged trifle, a mere mockery. What! to wink ourselves into so much darkness and desolation? And by sealing up our eyes against the Divine light and glory, to confirm so formidable miseries upon our own souls? How dreadfully shall we herein revenge our own folly, in nullifying Him to ourselves who is the “All in all!” Sure there is little of heaven in all this.

But if now we open our eyes upon that all-comprehending glory, apply them to a steady intuition of God, how heavenly a life shall we then live in the world! To have God always in view, as the director and end of all our actions: to make our eye crave leave of God, to consult him ere we adventure upon anything, and implore his guidance and blessing: upon all occasions to direct our prayers to him and look up: to

make our eye await his commanding look, ready to receive all intimations of his will;—this is an angelical life. To be as those ministers of his that are always ready to do his pleasure; to make our eye do him homage and express our dependence and trust; to approve ourselves in everything to him and act as always in his presence, observing still how his eye observes us; and exposing ourselves willingly to its inspection and search, contented always he should see through and through us; surely there is much of heaven in this life: so we should endeavour to live here. I cannot omit to give you this instruction in the words of a heathen: ‘We ought,’ saith he, ‘so to live as always within view, order our cogitations as if some one might or can look into the very inwards of our breast. For to what purpose is it, to hide anything from man? From God nothing can be hid; he is continually present to our spirits, and comes amidst our inmost thoughts,’<sup>1</sup> etc.

This is to walk in the light, amidst a serene, placid, mild light, that infuses no unquiet thoughts, admits no guilty fears, nothing that can disturb or annoy us.

To eye God in all our comforts, and observe the smiling aspects of his face when he dispenses them to us; to eye him in all our afflictions, and consider the paternal wisdom that instructs us in them; how would this increase our mercies and mitigate our troubles!

To eye him in all his creatures, and observe the various prints of the Creator’s glory stamped upon them; with how lively a lustre would it clothe the world, and make everything look with a pleasant face! What a heaven were it to look upon God, as filling all in all; and how sweetly would it erewhile raise our souls into some such sweet seraphic strains, “holy, holy, holy; the whole earth is full of his glory.”<sup>2</sup>

To eye him in his providences, and consider how all events are with infinite wisdom disposed into an apt subser-

<sup>1</sup> Sic certe vivendum est tanquam in conspectu vivamus, etc.—Sen. *Epist.* 83.

<sup>2</sup> Isa. vi. 2, 3.

viency to his holy will and ends ; what difficulties would hence be solved, what seeming inconsistencies reconciled ! And how much would it contribute to the ease and quiet of our minds !

To eye him in his Christ, the express image of his person, the brightness of his glory ; and in the Christian economy, the gospel revelation and ordinances, through which he manifests himself :

To behold him in the posture wherein he saves souls, “ clad with the garments of salvation,” girt with power and apparelled with love, “ travelling in the greatness of his strength, mighty to save : ”

To view him addressing himself to allure and win to him the hearts of sinners, when he discovers himself in Christ, upon that reconciling design, makes “ grace that brings salvation appear, teaching to deny ungodliness,” etc. :

To behold him entering into human flesh, pitching his tabernacle among men, hanging out his ensigns of peace, laying his trains, spreading his net, “ the cords of a man, the bands of love : ”

To see him in his Christ ascending the cross, lifted up to draw all men to him, and consider that mighty love of justice and of souls, both so eminently conspicuous in that stupendous sacrifice ; here to fix our eyes looking to Jesus, and beholding him whom we have pierced :

To see his power and glory, as they were wont to be seen in his sanctuaries ; to observe him in the solemnities of his worship, and the graceful postures wherein he holds communion with his saints, when he seats himself amidst them on the throne of grace, receives their addresses, dispenses the tokens and pledges of his love ; into what transports might these visions put us every day !

Let us, then, stir up our drowsy souls, open our heavy eyes, and turn them upon God ; inure and habituate them to a constant view of his yet veiled face, that we may not see him only by casual glances, but as those that seek his face, and make it our business to gain a thorough knowledge of him.

But let us remember that all our present visions of God must aim at a further conformity to him; they must design imitation, not the satisfying of curiosity; our looking must not therefore be an inquisitive, busy prying into the unrevealed things of God. Carefully abstain from such over-bold, presumptuous looks. But remember, we are to eye God as our pattern. Wherein he is to be so, he hath plainly enough revealed and proposed himself to us. And consider, this is the pattern both to which we ought, and to which we shall be conformed, if we make it our business; so will sense of duty and hope of success concur to fix our eye and keep it steady.

Especially, let us endeavour to manage and guide our eye aright in beholding him, that our sight of him may most effectually subserve this design of being like him; and herein nothing will be more conducive, than that our looks be qualified with *reverence* and *love*.

i. Let them be reverential looks. We shall never be careful to imitate a despised pattern, or that we think meanly of. When this is the intimate sense of our soul, 'Who is a God like unto thee in holiness! There is none holy as the Lord:' this will set our powers on work; such sights will command and over-awe our souls into conformity to him. Subjects have sometimes affected to imitate the very imperfections and deformities of their adored prince. Let us greatness our thoughts of God; look to him with a submissive, adoring eye. Let every look import worship and subjection. Who can stand before apprehended sovereign Majesty with such a temper of soul as shall signify an affront to it? This will make everything in us suitable to God, yield and render our souls susceptible of all Divine and holy impressions.

ii. Let them be friendly, and, as far as may consist with that reverence, amorous looks. It is natural to affect and endeavour likeness to them we love. Let love always sit in our eye, and inspirit it; this will represent God always amiable, will infinitely commend us to his nature and attri-

butes, and even ravish us into his likeness. The loving spouse often glories to wear her beloved husband's picture on her breast. The love of God will much more make us affect to bear his image in our hearts. His law is a true representation of him, and love is the fulfilling of that law, an exemplification of it in ourselves. Love will never enter a quarrel nor admit of any disagreement with God. His more terrible appearances will be commendable in the eye of love. "It thinks no evil;" but so interprets and comments upon his severer aspects, whether through his law or providence, as to judge all amiable, and frame the soul to an answerable deportment.

2. In this way then let us endeavour a growing conformity unto God. It hath been much, and not unnecessarily, inculcated already, that the blessedness of the righteous hereafter doth not consist merely in beholding an external objective glory, but in being also glorified. They are happy by a participated glory; by being made like God, as well as seeing his glorious likeness; whereby the constitution of their spirits is changed and reduced to that excellent, harmonious, agreeable temper, that holy composure and peaceful state, from which blessedness is inseparable.

As far as we are capable of blessedness in this world, it must be so with us here. Glory without us will not make us happy in heaven; much less will anything without us make us happy on earth. It is an idle dream of sickly crazy minds, that their blessedness consists in some external good that is separable and distant from them: which therefore, as they blindly guess, they uncertainly pursue; never aiming to become good, without which they can never know what it is to be blessed. What felicity are men wont to imagine to themselves in this or that change of their outward condition! Were their state such or such, then they were happy, and should desire no more; as the child's fancy suggests to it, if it were on the top of such a hill, it could touch the heavens, but when with much toil it hath got thither, it finds itself as far off as before. We have a shorter and more compendious



way to it, would we allow ourselves to understand it. A right temper of mind involves blessedness in itself: it is this only change we need to endeavour. We wear out our days in vanity and misery, while we neglect this work, and busy ourselves to catch a fugitive shadow that hovers about us. It can never be well till our own souls be a heaven to us, and blessedness be a domestic, a home-dwelling inhabitant there; till we get a settled principle of holy quietude into our own breasts, and become the sons of peace, with whom the peace of God may find entrance and abode; till we have that treasure within us, that may render us insensible of any dependence on a foreign good or fear of a foreign evil. Shall that be the boast and glory of a philosopher only, 'I carry all my goods with me wherever I go?' And that a virtuous, good man is liable to no hurt? Seneca thinks 'they discover a low spirit, that say, externals can add anything, though but a very little, to the felicity of an honest mind; as if,' saith he, 'men could not be content with the light of the sun without the help of a candle or a spark?'<sup>1</sup> And speaking of the constancy of the virtuous man, saith he, 'They do ill that say, such an evil is tolerable to him, such a one intolerable, and that confine the greatness of his mind within certain bounds and limits. Adversity,' he tells us, 'overcomes us, if it be not wholly overcome. Epicurus,' saith he, 'the very patron of your sloth, acknowledges yet that unhappy events can seldom disturb the mind of a virtuous person;' and he adds, 'how had he almost uttered the voice of a man! I pray,' saith he, 'speak out a little more boldly, and say he is above them altogether.'<sup>2</sup> Such apprehensions the more virtuous heathens have had of the efficacy and defensative power of moral goodness, however defective their notion might be of the thing itself. Hence Socrates, the pagan martyr, is reported to have cried out, when those persons were persecuting him to death, 'Anytus and Meletus

<sup>1</sup> Epist. 92.

<sup>2</sup> Max. Tyr. Dissert. 2, who adds, 'For a good man cannot receive detriment from an evil man.'

can kill me, but they cannot hurt me.' And Anaxarchus, the philosopher, having sharply reprov'd Nicocreon, and being by him ordered to be beaten to death with iron mallets, bids, 'Strike on, strike on; thou mayst,' saith he, 'break in pieces this vessel of Anaxarchus; but Anaxarchus himself thou canst not touch.'<sup>1</sup>

Shall Christianity here confess itself outvied? Shall we, to the reproach of our religion, yield the day to pagan morality and renew the occasion of the ancient complaint, that the faith of Christians is outdone by the heathen infidelity?<sup>2</sup> It is, I remember, the challenge of Cæcilius in Minucius. 'There is Socrates,' saith he, 'the prince of wisdom, whosoever of you Christians is great enough to attempt it, let him imitate him if he can.' Methinks we should be ambitious to tell the world in our lives, (for Christians should live great things, not speak them,<sup>3</sup>) that a greater than Socrates is here: to let them see in us our represented pattern: to show forth higher virtues than those of Socrates; even His, who hath "called us out of darkness into his glorious and marvellous light."

Certain it is, that the sacred oracles of the gospel set before us a more excellent pattern, and speak things not less magnificent, but much more modest and perspicuous. With less pomp of words they give us a much clearer account of a far more excellent temper of mind, and prescribe the direct and certain way of attaining it. Do but view over the many passages of Scripture occasionally glanced at, chap. vii.

But we grope as in the dark for blessedness; we stumble at noon-day as in the night, and wander as if we had no eyes; we mistake our business, and lay the scene of a happy state at a great distance from us; in things which we cannot reach, and which if we could it were to little purpose.

Not to speak of greater sensualists, whom at present I have less in my eye, is there not a more refined sort of persons,

<sup>1</sup> Diogen. Laert. 'Anaxarchus.'

<sup>2</sup> 'Non præstat fides quod præstitit infidelitas.'

<sup>3</sup> As this author's expression is.

that neglecting the great business of inspecting, and labouring to better and improve, their spirits, are wholly taken up about the affairs of another sphere; that are more solicitous for better times, for a better world, than better spirits; that seem to think all the happiness they are capable of on earth, is bound up in this or that external state of things? Not that the care of all public concerns should be laid aside; least of all, a just solicitude for the Church's welfare: but that should not be pretended, when our own interest is the one thing with us. And when we are *really* solicitous about the Church's interests, we should state them aright. God designs the afflictions of his people for their spiritual good, therefore that is a much greater good than their exemption from suffering these evils; otherwise his means should eat up his end, and be more expensive than that will countervail; which were an imprudence no man of tolerable discretion would be guilty of. We should desire the outward prosperity of Sion, for it is a real good; but inasmuch as it hath in it the goodness, not of an end, but only—and that but sometimes neither—of a means; not a constant but a mutable goodness; not a principal, but a lesser subordinate goodness; we must not desire it absolutely, nor chiefly, but with submissive limited desires. If our hearts are grieved to hear of the sufferings of the Church of God in the world, but not of their sins; if we more sensibly regret at any time the persecutions and oppressions they undergo, than their spiritual distempers, their earthliness, pride, cold love to God, fervent animosities towards each other; it speaks an uninstructed carnal mind. We take no right measure of the interests of religion or the Church's welfare, and do most probably mistake ourselves as much in our judging of our own; and measure theirs by our own mistaken model.

And this is the mischievous cheat many put upon their own souls, and would obtrude too often upon others too;—that overlooking the great design of the gospel, to transform men's spirits and change them into the Divine likeness, they think it is religion enough to espouse a party, and adopt an

opinion; and then vogue themselves friends to religion according to the measure of their zeal for their own party or opinion; and give a very pregnant proof of that zeal, by magnifying or inveighing against the times, according as they favour or frown upon their empty unspirited religion; it being indeed such (a secret consciousness whereof they herein bewray) as hath no other life in it than what it owes to external favour and countenance. And therefore all public rebukes are justly apprehended mortal to it; whereas that substantial religion that adequately answers the design, and is animated by the spirit of the gospel, possesses the souls of them that own it, with a secure confidence, that it can live in any times and hold their souls in life also. Hence they go on their way with a free unsolicitous cheerfulness, enjoying silently, in their own bosoms, that repose and rest which naturally results from a sound and well-composed temper of spirit. They know their happiness depends upon nothing without them;<sup>1</sup> that they hold it by a better tenure than that of the world's courtesy. They can be quiet in the midst of storms, and abound in the want of all things. They can in patience possess their own souls, and in them a vital spring of true pleasure, when they are driven out of all other possessions. They know the living sense of these words, that "the good man is satisfied from himself:" that "to be spiritually minded is life and peace:" that "nothing can harm them that are followers of the good:" that "the way to see good days, is to keep their tongue from evil, and their lips from speaking guile, to depart from evil and do good, to seek peace and pursue it."

They cannot live in bad times; they carry that about them, that will make the worst days good to them. Surely *they* can never be happy in the best times, that cannot be so in any. Outward prosperity is quite beside the purpose to a distem-

<sup>1</sup> Ἰδιῶτου στάσις καὶ χαρακτήρ, οὐδέποτε ἐξ ἑαυτοῦ προσδοκᾷ ὠφέλειαν ἢ βλάβην, ἀλλ' ἀπὸ τῶν ἕξω. Φιλοσόφου στάσις καὶ χαρακτήρ, πᾶσαν ὠφέλειαν καὶ βλάβην ἐξ ἑαυτοῦ προσδοκᾷ.—Epiet.

pered soul ; when nothing else troubles, it will torment itself. Besides, we cannot command at pleasure the benign aspects of the world, the smiles of the times ; we may wait a life's time, and still find the same adverse posture of things towards us from without. What dotage is it to place our blessedness in something to us impossible, that lies wholly out of our power ; and in order whereto we have nothing to do, but sit down and *wish* ; and either faintly hope or ragingly despair ! We cannot change times and seasons, nor alter the course of the world, create new heavens and new earth. Would we not think ourselves mocked, if God should command us these things in order to our being happy ? It is not our business, these are not the affairs of our own province—blessed be God it is not so large!—further than as our bettering ourselves may conduce thereto ; and this is that which we may do and ought, it is our proper work, in obedience and subordination to God as his instruments, to govern and cultivate our own spirits, to intend the affairs of that his kingdom in us,—where we are his authorized viceroys,—that consists “in righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.” We can be benign to ourselves, if the world be not so to us ; cherish and adorn our inward man ; that though the outward man be exposed daily to perish (which we cannot help, and therefore it concerns us not to take thought about it), the inward may be renewed day by day. We can take care that our souls may prosper ; that through our oscillant neglect, they be not left to languish and pine away in their own iniquities. They may be daily fed with the heavenly hidden manna, and with the fruits of the paradise of God ; they may enjoy at home a continual feast, and with a holy freedom luxuriate in Divine pleasures,—the joys wherewith the strangers intermeddle not,—if we be not unpropitious and unkind to ourselves.

And would we know wherein that sound and happy complexion of spirit lies, that hath so much of heaven in it ? It is a present *gradual participation* of the Divine likeness. It consists in being conformed to God ; it is, as the moralist tells

us, if one would give a short compendious model of it, such a temper of mind as becomes God ;<sup>1</sup> or to give an account of it, in His own words, who prescribes it, and who is Himself the highest pattern of this blessed frame, it is “to be transformed in the renewing of our minds, so as to be able to prove what is the good, and perfect, and acceptable will of God ;”<sup>2</sup> that is, experimentally to find it in ourselves, impressed and wrought into our own spirits, so as to have the complacential relish and savour of its goodness, excellency, and pleasantness diffused through our souls. Where remember, this was written to such as were supposed saints ; whence it must be understood of a continued progressive transformation, “a renewing of the inward man day by day,” as is the Apostle’s expression elsewhere. It is a more perfect reception of the impress of God, revealing himself in the gospel ; the growth and tendency of the new creature, begotten unto the eternal blessedness, towards its mature and most perfect state and stature in the fruition thereof.

And it is this I am now pressing,—inasmuch as some account hath been already given (according as we can now imperfectly guess at it, and spell it out), what the constitution of the holy soul is, in its glorified state, when it perfectly partakes the Divine likeness,—that when we find in ourselves any principles, and first elements of that blessed frame, we would endeavour the gradual improvement thereof, and be making towards that perfection. This, therefore, being our present work, let it be remembered wherein that participated likeness of God hath been said to consist ; and labour now the nearest approach to that pitch and state. Your measures must be taken from what is most perfect ; come now as near it as you can, and as that pagan’s advice is ; ‘If yet thou art not Socrates, however, live as one that would fain be Socrates.’<sup>3</sup> Though yet thou art not perfect, live as one that aims at it, and would be so.

<sup>1</sup> Denique ut breviter tibi formulam scribam ; talis animus sapientis viri esse debet qualis Deum deceat.—Sen. *Epist.*

<sup>2</sup> Rom. xii. 2.

<sup>3</sup> Epictet.

Only it must be considered, that the conformity to God, of our present state, is in extent larger and more comprehensive than that of our future; though it be unspeakably less perfect in degree. For there is no moral excellency (that we have any present knowledge of) belonging to our glorified state, which is not, in some degree, necessarily to be found in saints on earth. But there are some things which the exigency of our present state makes necessary to us here, which will not be so in the state of glory; repentance, faith as it respects the Mediator, in order to our future happiness, patience of injuries, pity to the distressed, etc. These things, and whatsoever else, whose objects cease, must be understood to cease with them. In short, here is requisite all that moral good which concerns both our end and way; there, what concerns our end only.

Yet is the whole compass of that gracious frame of spirit,—requisite in this our present state,—all comprehended in conformity to God. Partly, inasmuch as some of these graces, which will cease hereafter in their exercise, as not having objects to draw them forth into act, have their pattern in some communicable attributes of God, which will cease also as to their denomination and exercise; their objects then ceasing too,—as his patience towards sinners, his mercy to the miserable: partly, inasmuch as other of those graces now required in us, though they correspond to nothing in God that is capable of the same name, as faith in a Saviour, repentance of sin, (which can have no place in God,) they yet answer to something in his nature that goes under other names; and is the reason wherefore he requires such things in us. He hath in his nature that faithfulness and all-sufficient fulness that challenges our faith; and that hatred of sin, which challenges our repentance for it, having been guilty of it. His very nature obliges him to require those things from us, the state of our case being considered. So that the sum even of our present duty lies in receiving this entire impression of the Divine likeness; in some part invariably and eternally necessary to us, in some part necessary

with respect to our present state. And herein is our present blessedness also involved. If, therefore, we have any design to better our condition in point of blessedness, it must be our business to endeavour after a fuller participation of all that likeness, in all the particulars it comprehends. You can pitch your thoughts upon no part of it, which hath not an evident direct tendency to the repose and rest of your spirits. I shall commend only some few instances, that you may see how little reason or inducement, a soul conformed to the holy will of God hath to seek its comforts and content elsewhere.

*Faith* corresponds to the truth of God, as it respects Divine revelations : how pleasant is it to give up our understandings to the conduct of so safe a guide ; to the view of so admirable things as he reveals !

It corresponds to his goodness, as it respects his offers ; how delectable is it, to be filling an empty soul from the Divine fulness ! What pleasure attends the exercise of this faith towards the person of the Mediator, viewing him in all his glorious excellencies, receiving him in all his gracious communications by this eye and hand !

How pleasant is it to exercise it in reference to another world ; living by it in a daily prospect of eternity ; in reference to this world, to live without care in a cheerful dependence on him that hath undertaken to care for us !

*Repentance* is that by which we become like the holy God ; to whom our sin hath made us most unlike before. How sweet are kindly relentings, penitential tears, and the return of the soul to its God, and to a right mind !

And who can conceive the ravishing pleasures of love to God, wherein we not only imitate, but intimately unite with him, who is Love itself. How pleasant to let our souls dissolve here, and flow into the ocean, the element of love !

Our *fear* corresponds to his excellent greatness, and is not (as it is a part of the new creature in us) a tormenting servile passion, but a due respectfulness and observance of God ; and there is no mean pleasure in that holy,



awful seriousness unto which it composes and forms our spirits.

Our *humility*, as it respects him, answers his high excellency; as it respects our own inferiors, his gracious condescension. How pleasant is it to fall before him! And how connatural and agreeable to a good spirit, to stoop low, upon any occasion to do good!

*Sincerity* is a most God-like excellency; an imitation of his truth, as grounded in his all-sufficiency, which sets him above the necessity or possibility of any advantage by collusion or deceit; and corresponds to his omniscieny and heart-searching eye. It heightens a man's spirit to a holy and generous boldness; makes him apprehend it beneath him to do an unworthy, dishonest action, that should need a palliation or a concealment;<sup>1</sup> and gives him the continual pleasure of self-approbation to God, whom he chiefly studies and desires to please.

*Patience*, a prime glory of the Divine Majesty, continues a man's possession of his own soul, his liberty, his dominion of himself. He is, if he can suffer nothing, a slave to his vilest and most sordid passions at home,—his own base fear, and brutish anger, and effeminate grief; and to any man's lusts and humours besides, that he apprehends can do him hurt. It keeps a man's soul in a peaceful calm, delivers him from that most unnatural self-torment, defeats the impotent malice of his most implacable enemy, who fain would vex him, but cannot.

*Justice*,—the great attribute of the Judge of all the earth,—as such, so far as the impression of it takes place among men, preserves the common peace of the world and the private peace of each man in his own bosom, so that the former be not disturbed by doing of mutual injuries, nor the latter by the conscience of having done them.

<sup>1</sup> As that noble Roman whom his architect (about to build him a house) promised to contrive it free from all his neighbours' inspection; he replies, 'Nay, if thou have any art in thee, build my house so that all may see what I do.'—Vell. Pat. p. 32.

The *brotherly love* of fellow-Christians,—the impression of that special love, which God bears to them all,—admits them into one another's bosoms and to all the endearments and pleasures of a mutual communion.

*Love to enemies*,—the express image of our heavenly Father by which we appear his children, begotten of him,—overcomes evil by goodness, blunts the double edge of revenge; at least the sharper edge, which is always towards the author of it; secures ourselves from wounding impressions and resentments; turns keen anger into gentle pity; and substitutes mild pleasant forgiveness in the room of the much uneasier thoughts and study of retaliation.

*Mercifulness* toward the distressed, as our Father in heaven is merciful, heaps blessings upon our souls, and evidences our title to what we are to live by,—the Divine mercy.

An *universal benignity* and propension to do good to all, in imitation of the immense diffusive goodness of God, is but kindness to ourselves, rewards itself by that greater pleasure is in giving than in receiving; and associates us with God in the blessedness of this work as well as in the disposition to it, who exercises loving-kindness in the earth, because he delighteth therein.

Here are some of the *μυήματα τῆς Θελας ζωῆς*, or the things wherein consists that our *conformity to the Divine nature and will*, which is proper to our present state. And now, who can estimate the blessedness of such a soul? Can, in a word, the state of that soul be unhappy that is full of the Holy Ghost, full of love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance, those blessed fruits of that blessed Spirit? Blessedness is connaturalised unto this soul: everything doth its part, and all conspire to make it happy. This soul is a temple, a habitation of holiness. Here dwells a Deity in his glory. It is a paradise, a garden of God. Here he walks and converses daily, delighted with its fragrant fruitfulness. He that hath those "things and aboundeth, is not barren or unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ:" he is the Sun; and the

knowledge of him, the quickening beams that cherish and ripen these fruits.

But the soul that lacketh these things is a desert, a habitation of devils. Here is stupid disconsolate infidelity, inflexible obstinacy and resolvedness for hell, hatred and contempt of the Sovereign Majesty; who yet, its secret misgiving thoughts tell it, will be too hard for it at last. Here is swollen pride and giddy vain-glory, disguised hypocrisy, and pining envy, raging wrath and ravenous avarice, with what you can imagine besides, leading to misery and desolation.

You have then some prospect of a happy temper of spirit. It can now be no difficulty to you, to frame an idea of it in your thoughts, to get a notional image, or this "likeness" in the notion of it, into your minds; but that will avail you little, if you have not the real image also, that is, your spirits really fashioned and formed according thereto: if, having the knowledge of these things—as the pagan moralist's expression, before mentioned, is of virtuous rules and precepts—they become not habitual to you, and your spirits be not transfigured in them.<sup>1</sup>

But now, I treat with such as are supposed to have some such real impressions, that they may be stirred up to endeavour a further perfecting of them. In order whereto, I shall add but this twofold advice:—

1. Be very careful that this living image (such you have been formerly told it is) may grow equally in every part. See that the impression of this likeness be entire, that it be not a maimed thing; if it be, God will never own it as his production. Integrity is the glory of a Christian: to be "entire, lacking nothing." This is the soundness of heart that excludes a blushing consciousness and misgiving; exempts it from the fear of a shameful discovery. "Let

<sup>1</sup> *Philosophia hæc dividitur in scientiam, et habitum animi. Unam illam qui didicit et facienda ac vitanda præcepit nondum sapiens est, nisi in ea quæ didicit animus ejus transfiguratus est.*—Sen. (ex Agrippâ) *Ep.* 94.

my heart be sound in thy statutes," is paraphrased, "by having respect to all God's commandments;"<sup>1</sup> to which is opposite, that being "partial in the law,"<sup>2</sup> spoken of by the prophet by way of complaint concerning the priests of that time: a thing hateful in the eye of God, and as uncomfortable to ourselves, as to be without a leg or an arm.

And see that it be preserved entire by a proportional and uniform growth, that fresh life and motion may daily appear in every limb of this heavenly new creature. How odious a deformity is it, when a show of moral virtues excludes godliness! And how much more odious (inasmuch as there is more impudent falsehood in it and more dishonourable reflection upon God) when, under a high pretence of godliness, any shall allow themselves in visible immorality! What! to be oppressive, envious, contentious, deceitful, proud, turbulent, wrathful, morose, malicious, fretful, and peevish, and yet a Christian? What serious person, that shall have no fairer representation of Christianity than such do give, would not be ready to say rather, *Sit anima mea cum philosophis*, If this be Christian religion, give me honest paganism? A Christian that hath received the proper, uniform, entire impress of the gospel of Christ, is the most meek, mild, calm, harmless, quiet thing in the world. Never mention so venerable a name, if you will not be very jealous of the honour of it. Will you give God occasion to charge you, 'Wretch, I never had had this dishonour, if thou hadst never been called a Christian; thou art a Christian to no purpose, or to very bad; it does thee no good, and it injures me?'

But—which is more directly considerable as to our present purpose—the neglect and consequent decay of any gracious principle, infers a languor, a consumption and enfeeblement of all. Any such perverse disposition doth not affect that part only, is not only an impairment to the contrary gracious principle, but, as a cancer in some exterior part of the body, it gradually creeps up till it invade the vitals. Can the love

<sup>1</sup> Ps. cxix. 6, 80.

<sup>2</sup> Mal. ii. 9.

of God live and grow in an unquiet, angry, uncharitable breast? Consider Jam. i. 26; 1 John iii. 17.

2. Be constantly intent upon this business of spiritual growth. Mind it as a design, make a solemn purposed business of it, your great daily business. You do not till your ground by chance, as a casual thing; but you do it industriously and of set purpose. The Apostle, speaking of his own method of pursuing conformity to Christ, tells us, he did in comparison count all things else loss and dog's meat; he threw everything else aside.<sup>1</sup> Then next he recounts with himself, how far short he was; "not as if I had already attained,"<sup>2</sup> etc.—where by the way he intimates, that to stand still, and give over further endeavours, implies that gross absurdity, as if we thought ourselves to have attained already, to be already perfect; are we not ashamed to seem so conceited of ourselves?—and then, still as he did attain in this pursuit, he "forgot what was behind;"<sup>3</sup> and held on his course with fresh and constant vigour, still reaching forth and pressing onward towards his designed mark.

In this great business we, alas! seem to dream. He that hath been observed ten or twenty years ago to be proud and covetous, or passionate, still remains so, and we apprehend not the incongruity of it. What! always learning, and yet never come to the knowledge of the truth, as it is in Jesus; to the putting off the old man, and putting on the new? Who would meddle with any profession upon such terms, to be always doing, and yet to do nothing? Surely it must be imputed to this,—we design not, we do not seriously intend the perfecting of holiness, to make a real progress in our way and work, and to get still nearer heaven, as we draw nearer to the end of our days on earth. We too contentedly confine ourselves within certain limits, and aim not, as we should, at a spiritual excellency. This is the temper of many that have long trodden the path of at least an external religion; they will go but their own pace, and that within a self-prescribed round or

<sup>1</sup> Phil. iii. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Ver. 9, 10, 12.

<sup>3</sup> Ver. 13.

circle. They perform their stated task of religious exercises, and shun the grosser vices of the time; and resolve never to go higher: much like the character that was once given of a great man, that 'he followed not the more eminent virtues, and yet that he hated vice.'<sup>1</sup> And it is a true censure that a barbarian is said to have given of that middle temper, that dull indifferency: 'What is equally distant from being the matter either of praise or punishment, is upon no terms to be accounted a virtue.'<sup>2</sup>

At least, we drive not on a design of growth and self-improvement in our spiritual states with that constancy we ought; we are off and on; our spirits are not steadily intent; we are "unstable as water," how can we "excel?"<sup>3</sup> God hath not put us, sure, upon so fruitless a task, wherein our utmost labour and diligence shall profit nothing. Therefore strive more vigorously and pray with more earnest importunity. Consider, and plead it with God, that he hath set before thee the hope of such a state wherein thou art to be perfectly like him; and shalt thou, that must hereafter be like God, be now like a clod of earth? Thou art now a child begotten of him; and though thou art yet in the minority, yet may not somewhat be spared out of so fair an estate hereafter designed for thee, as that thou mayst now live worthy of such a Father, and suitable to thy expected inheritance?

3. And now, a contented satisfied temper of spirit, as I have told you, results from the other two; and will therefore follow of course upon growing knowledge of God and conformity to Him, as the latter of these also doth upon the former. Yea, it is a part of our conformity to God; but a

<sup>1</sup> Tiberius. 'Neque enim eminentes virtutes sectabatur et rursum vitia oderat.'—Tacit. *Annal.*

<sup>2</sup> Thespesian. Πάν γὰρ ὁ τιμῆς τε, καὶ τιμωρίας ἴσον ἀφέστηκεν, οὐπω ἀρετή.—Philostr. *in Vit. Apollon. Tyan.*

<sup>3</sup> Gen. xlix. 4.

part consequent to the impression of the things mentioned under the former head, as knowledge also is a part previous and antecedent thereto. It is in the state of glory, we see, something superadded. The *likeness* impressed is presupposed; *satisfaction* follows thereupon. The case is so too in our present state; contentment is spoken of as a thing consequent and superadded; "godliness with contentment," a satisfied contented spirit, when it is the result of godliness, of the Divine image impressed, is indeed great gain. Yet as to this, I shall only say these two things.

i. Be distinct and explicit in the proposal of it as an end. Religion doth not brutify men, but make men more rational. Its business is to guide them to blessedness. It must therefore pitch their eyes upon it, as the mark and end they are to aim at, and hold them intent there. It is ingenuous, and honourable to God, that we should expressly avow it. We come to him for satisfaction to our spirits, not knowing whither else to apply ourselves. We turn our eyes upon him, we lay open our souls to receive impressions from him, for this very end. This is an explicit acknowledgment of him as God, our highest sovereign good.

ii. Actually apply and accommodate Divine visions and communications to this purpose. Say, 'O my soul, now come solace thyself in this appearance of God; come, take thy allowed pleasure in such exertions of God, as thou dost now experience in thyself.' Recount thy happiness; think how great it is, how rich thou art; on purpose that thy spirit may grow more daily into a satisfied, contented frame. Often bethink thyself, 'What is the great God doing for me, that he thus reveals and imparts himself to my soul? O how great things do those present pledges presignify to me!' that thou mayst still more and more like thy portion, and account it fallen in pleasant places, so as never to seek satisfaction in things of another kind; though thou must still continue expecting and desiring more of the same kind.

And remember to this purpose, there cannot be a greater participation of the misery of hell beforehand than a discontented spirit, perpetually restless and weary of itself; nor of the blessedness of heaven than in a well-pleased, satisfied, contented frame of spirit.



## CHAPTER XIX.

RULE V. DIRECTING TO RAISE OUR DESIRES ABOVE THE 'ACTUAL' OR 'POSSIBLE' ATTAINMENTS OF THIS OUR PRESENT, AND TERMINATE THEM UPON THE FUTURE CONSUMMATE STATE OF BLESSEDNESS. THE RULE EXPLAINED AND PRESSED BY SUNDRY CONSIDERATIONS.—RULE VI. THAT WE ADD TO A DESIROUS PURSUIT, A JOYFUL 'EXPECTATION' OF THIS BLESSEDNESS: WHICH IS PURSUED IN CERTAIN SUBORDINATE DIRECTIONS.

RULE 5. That notwithstanding all our present or possible attainments in this imperfect state on earth, we direct fervent vigorous *desires* towards the perfect and consummate state of glory itself; not designing to ourselves a plenary satisfaction and rest in anything on this side of it.

That is, that "forgetting what is behind," we reach forth not only to what is immediately before us, the next step to be taken; but that our eye and desire aim forward at the ultimate period of our race, terminate upon the eternal glory itself; and that not only as a *measure*, according to which we would some way proportion our present attainments, but as the very *mark*, which itself we would fain hit and reach home to; and that this be not only the habitual bent and tendency of our spirits, but that we keep up such desires in frequent and, as much as is possible, continual exercise.

Yea, and that such actual desires be not only faint and sluggish wishes, but full of lively efficacy and vigour, in some measure proportionable to our last end and highest good; beyond and above which we neither esteem nor expect any other enjoyment.

Whatsoever we may possibly attain to here, we should still

be far from projecting to ourselves a state of rest on this side consummate glory, but still urge ourselves to a continual ascent ; so as to mount above, not only all enjoyments of any other kind, but all degrees of enjoyment in this kind that are beneath perfection.

Still it must be remembered this is not the state of our final rest. The mass of glory is yet in reserve ; we are not yet so high as the highest heavens.

If we gain but the top of Mount Tabor, we are apt to say, "It is good to be here," and forget the longer journey yet before us, loth to think of a further advance ; when, were our spirits right,—how far soever we may suppose ourselves to have attained,—it would be matter of continual joy to us to think, high perfections are still attainable ; that we are yet capable of greater things than what we have hitherto compassed ; our souls can yet comprehend more. Nature intends what is most perfect in every creature ; methinks the Divine nature in the new creature should not design lower, or cease aspiring till it have attained its ultimate perfection, its culminating point ; till grace turn into glory.

Let us therefore, Christians, bestir ourselves ; let us open and turn our eyes upon the "eternal glory." Let us view it well, and then demand of our own souls, why are our desires so faint and slothful ? Why do they so seldom pierce through the intervening distance, and reach home to what they professedly level at ; so rarely touch this blessed mark ? How can we forbear to be angry with ourselves, that so glorious an end should not more powerfully attract ; that our hearts should not more sensibly find themselves drawn, and all the powers of the soul be set on work, by the attractive power of that glory ?

It certainly concerns us not to sit still under so manifest a distemper. But if the proposal of the object,—the discourse, all this while, of this blessed state,—do not move us to make some further trials with ourselves, see what urging and reasoning with our souls, what rubbing and chafing our hearts will do. And there is a twofold trial we may

in this kind make upon our spirits : what the sense of *shame* will work with us ; whether our hearts cannot be made sensible to suppose how vile and wretched a temper it is to be undesirous of glory : and then what sense of *praise* can effect ; or what impression it may make upon us to consider the excellency and worth, the high reasonableness, of that temper and posture of soul, which I am now persuading to,—a continual desirousness of that blessed glorious state.

1. As to the former. Let us bethink ourselves ; can we answer it to God or to our own souls, that we should indulge ourselves in a continual negligence of our eternal blessedness ? A blessedness consisting in the vision and participation of the Divine glory ?

Have we been dreaming all this while, that God hath been revealing to us this glorious state, and setting this lovely prospect before our eyes ? Did it become us, not to open our eyes while he was opening heaven to us and representing the state which he designed to bring us to ? Or will we say, we have seen it and yet desire it not ? Have we been deaf and dead while he hath been “ calling us unto eternal glory ? ” have all our senses been bound up all this while ? Hath he been speaking all along to senseless statues, to stocks and stones, while he expected reasonable living souls should have received the voice, and have returned an obedient complying answer ? And what answer could be expected to such a call, a call to his glory, below this, ‘ We desire it, Lord ; we would fain be there.’

And if we say we have not been all this while asleep, we saw the light that shone upon us, we heard the voice that called to us ; wherewith shall we then excuse ourselves that our desires were not moved, that our souls were not presently in a flame ? Was it then that we thought all a mere fiction ; that we durst not give credit to his word, when it brought us the report of the everlasting glory ? Will we avow this ? Is this that we will stand by ? Or what else have we left to say ? Have we a more plausible reason to allege, that the discovery of such a glory moved us not to desire it, than that

we believed it not? Sure this is the truth of our case. We should feel this heavenly fire always burning in our breasts, if our infidelity did not quench the coal. If we did believe, we could not but desire. But doth not the thoughts of this shake our very souls, and fill us with horror and trembling? We that should be turned into indignation, and ready to burn ourselves with our own shame, and all about us, if one should give us the lie,—that *we* should dare to put the lie upon the eternal truth; upon Him whose word gave stability and being to the world, who made and sustains all things by it! That awful word—that word that shivers rocks, and melts down mountains, that makes the animate creation tremble, that can in a moment blast all things, and dissolve the frame of heaven and earth, which in the meantime it upholds: is that become with us fabulous, lying breath? Those God-breathed oracles, those heavenly records, which discover and describe this blessed state, are they false and foolish legends? Must that be pretended at last (if men durst) that is so totally void of all pretences? What should be the gain or advantage accruing to that eternal, all-sufficient Being, what accession should be made to that infinite self-fulness, by deluding a worm? Were it consistent with his *nature*, what could be His design to put a cheat upon poor mortal dust? If thou dare not impute it to *him*, such a deception had a beginning; but what author canst thou imagine of it, or what end? Did it proceed from a good man or a bad? Could a good and honest mind form so horribly wicked a design, to impose an universal delusion and lie upon the world in the name of the true and holy God? Or could a wicked mind frame a design so directly levelled against wickedness? Or is there anything so aptly and naturally tending to form the world to sobriety, holiness, purity of conversation, as the discovery of this future state of glory? And since the belief of future felicity is known to obtain universally among men, who could be the author of so *common* a deception? If thou hadst the mind to impose a lie upon all the world, what course wouldst thou take?

How wouldst thou lay the design? Or why dost thou in this case imagine what thou knowest not how to imagine? And dost thou not without scruple believe many things of which thou never hadst so unquestionable evidence? Or must that faith, which is the foundation of thy religion and eternal hopes, be the most suspected shaking thing with thee; and have, of all other, the least stability and rootedness in thy soul? If thou canst not excuse thy infidelity, be ashamed of thy so cold and sluggish desires of this glorious state.

And doth it not argue a low sordid spirit, not to desire and aim at the perfection thou art capable of; not to desire that blessedness which alone is suitable and satisfying to a reasonable and spiritual being? Bethink thyself a little; how low art thou sunk into the dirt of the earth? How art thou plunged into the miry ditch, that "even thine own clothes" might "abhor thee?" Is the Father of spirits thy Father? Is the world of spirits thy country? Hast thou any relation to that heavenly progeny? Art thou allied to that blessed family, and yet undesirous of the same blessedness? Canst thou savour nothing but what smells of the earth? Is nothing grateful to thy soul, but what is corrupted by so vicious and impure a tincture? Are all thy delights centred in a dunghill, and the polluted pleasures of a filthy world better to thee than the eternal visions and enjoyments of heaven? What! art thou all made of earth? Is thy soul stupified into a clod? Hast thou no sense with thee of anything better and more excellent? Canst thou look upon no glorious thing with a pleased eye? Are things only desirable and lovely to thee, as they are deformed? O consider the corrupted distempered state of thy spirit, and how vile a disposition it hath contracted to itself! Thine looks too like the mundane spirit; the "spirit of the world." The Apostle speaks of it *διακριτικῶς*, by way of *distinction*; "We have not received the spirit of the world, but the spirit that is from God; that we might know," or see—and no doubt it is desire that animates that eye; it is not bare speculative intuition and no more—"the things freely given

us of God.”<sup>1</sup> Surely he whose desire doth not guide his eye to the beholding of those things, hath received the spirit of the world only; a spirit that conforms him to this world, makes him think only thoughts of this world, and drive the designs of this world, and speak the language of this world; a spirit that connaturalizes him to the world, makes him of a temper suitable to it; he breathes only worldly breath, carries a worldly aspect, is of a worldly conversation. O poor low spirit, that such a world should withhold thee from the desire and pursuit of such glory! Art thou not ashamed to think what thy desires are wont to pitch upon, while they decline and waive this blessedness? Methinks thy very *shame* should compel thee to quit the name of a saint or a man; to forbear numbering thyself with any that pretend to immortality, and go seek pasture among the beasts of the field, with them that live that low animal life that thou dost, and expect no other.

And when thou so fallest in with the world, how highly dost thou gratify the pretending and usurping god of it, the great fomenter of the sensual worldly genius: “the spirit” itself “that works in the children of disobedience,”<sup>2</sup> and makes them follow the course of the world, holds them fast bound in worldly lusts, and “leads them captive at his will;” causes them, after his own serpentine manner, to creep and crawl in the dust of the earth. He is most intimate to this apostate world; informs it, as it were, and actuates it in every part; is even one great soul to it. “The whole world lies in that wicked one;”<sup>3</sup> as the body, by best philosophers, is said to be in the soul. The world is said to be convicted when he is judged.<sup>4</sup> He having fallen from a state of blessedness in God, hath involved the world with himself in the same apostasy and condemnation; and labours to keep them fast in the bands of death. The great Redeemer of souls makes this his business, “to loose and dissolve the work of

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. ii. 12. εἰδῶμεν.

<sup>3</sup> 1 John v. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Eph. ii. 2, 3.

<sup>4</sup> John xvi.

the devil.”<sup>1</sup> With that wicked one thou compliest against thy own soul and the Redeemer of it, while thou neglectest to desire and pursue this blessedness. This is thy debasement and his triumph; thy vile succumbency gives him the day and his will upon thee. He desires no more than that he may suppress in thee all heavenly desires, and keep thee thus a slave and a prisoner, confined in thy spirit to this low dark dungeon, by thy own consent. While thou remainest without desire after heaven, he is secure of thee, as knowing then thou wilt take no other way but what will bring thee unto the same eternal state with himself in the end. He is jealous over thee, that thou direct not a desire, nor glance an eye heavenward: while thou dost not so, thou art entirely subject, and givest as full obedience to him, as thy God requires to himself in order to thy blessedness. But is it a thing tolerable to thy thoughts, that thou shouldst yield that heart-obedience to the devil against God?

And this being the state of thy case, what more significant expression canst thou make of the contempt of Divine goodness? O the love that thou neglectest, while the most glorious issue and product of it is with thee an undesired thing! Yea, this the thing itself speaks, were there no such competition. What! that when eternal love hath conceived, and is travailing to bring forth such a birth; that when it invites thee to an expectation of such glory shortly to be revealed, the result of so deep counsels and wonderful works, this should be the return from thee, ‘I desire it not!’ Is this thy gratitude to the Father of glory, the requital of the kindness, yea, and of the blood of thy Redeemer? If this blessedness were not desirable for itself, methinks the Offerer’s hand should be a sufficient endearment. But thou canst not so divide or abstract; it consists in beholding and bearing his glorious likeness who invites thee to it; and therefore in the neglect of it, thou most highly affrontest him.

Yea, further; is it not a monstrous unnaturalness towards

<sup>1</sup> 1 John iii. 8.

thyself as well as impiety towards God, not to desire that perfect final blessedness? Doth not everything naturally tend to its ultimate perfection and proper end? What creature would not witness against thee, if thou neglect, in thine own capacity and kind, to aim at thine? Surely thou canst not allow thyself to think anything beneath this, worthy to be owned by thee, under that notion of thy highest good and thy last end. But that thy spirit should labour under an aversion towards thy highest good, towards thy blessedness itself, is not that a dismal token upon thee? If thou didst disaffect and nauseate the things in which thy present life is bound up and without which thou canst not live, wouldst thou not think thy case deplorable? What dost thou think will become of thy soul, whose everlasting life is bound up in that very good which thou desirest not; which cannot live that life without that good, nor with it, if thou hast no desire to it? O the eternal resentments thy soul will have of this cruelty! To be withheld from that wherein its life lies! Wouldst thou not judge him unnatural that should kill his brother, assassinate his father, starve his child? What shall be said of him that destroys himself? How may that soul lament that ever it was thine; and say, 'Oh that I had rather been of any such lower kind, to have animated a fly, to have inspirited a vile worm, rather than to have served a reasonable beast, that by me *knew* the good it would never follow and did not desire!' But if thou hast any such desires in a low degree, after this blessedness, as thou thinkest may entitle thee to the name thou bearest, of a saint, a Christian; is it not still very unnatural to pursue a good, approved by thy stated judgment as best in itself and for thee, with so unproportionable, so slothful desires? For the same reason thou dost desire it at all, thou shouldst desire it much; yea, and still more and more, till thou attain it and be swallowed up into it. Thy best and last good thou canst never desire too much.

And let it be considered by thee, that the temper thou thinkest thyself innocent of—an habitual prevalent disaffect-



tion to the true blessedness of saints—may for aught thou knowest be upon thee, while it appears thou art so very near the borders of it, and it appears not with such certainty that thou partakest not in it. It is not so easy a matter, critically to distinguish and conclude of the lowest degree *in hypothesi*, or with application to thy own case, of that desire which is necessary to qualify thee for the enjoyment of this blessedness. And is it not a matter both of shame and terror, that thou shouldst desire thy blessedness so faintly as not to know whether thou truly desire it at all? It is true, that a certainty, amongst such as may be sincere, is very little common; but whence proceeds it but from their too common indulged sloth, out of which all this is designed to awaken thee? And the commonness whereof doth as little detract from the reproach and sinfulness, as from the danger of it. It is but a poor defence, for what is intrinsically evil in itself, that it is common.

But further, as the case is, this is so reproachful a thing, even in common estimate,—not to desire heaven and eternal glory, or to desire it with very cold and careless desires,—that there are few will profess it or own it to be their temper; much fewer that will undertake to excuse or justify it. It is so evilly thought of, that among merely sober and rational men, it can never find an advocate or any that will afford it patronage. The generality pretend a desire of going to heaven and being with God. If any be so observant of themselves as to know and so ingenuous as to confess it otherwise with them, they complain of it as their fault, and say they would fain have it redressed, but are far from assuming that confidence to defend or plead for it. Consider then; wilt thou persist in such a temper and disposition of mind as all men condemn, and be guilty of so odious a thing as shall be censured and blamed by the common concurrent vote and judgment of mankind? Thou wouldst be ashamed to stand forth and profess openly to men, that thou desirest an earthly felicity more than a blessedness in heaven; or at least, that thou art so indifferent, and the scales hang so even with thee,

that thou canst hardly tell, which way they incline most : and art thou not ashamed that this should be thy usual temper, how much soever thou conceal it from the notice and observation of the world ?

Moreover, how can it escape thy serious reflection that if thou pretend it otherwise with thee, it is but to add one sin to another, and cover thy carnality with hypocrisy and dissimulation ? Yea, while thou continuest in that temper of spirit,—not to desire this blessedness as thy supreme end,—the whole of thy religion is but an empty show, an artificial disguise ; it carries an appearance and pretence as if thou wast aiming at God and glory, while thy heart is set another way, and the bent of thy soul secretly carries thee a counter-course. Hath not religion an aspect towards blessedness ? What mean thy praying, thy hearing, thy sacramental communion, if thou have not a design for eternal glory ? What makest thou in this way, if thou have not thy heart set towards this end ?

Nor is it more dishonest and unjust than it is foolish and absurd, that the disposition and tendency of thy soul should be directly contrary to the only design of the religion thou professt and dost externally practise. Thy profession and desires are nothing but self-contradiction. Thou art continually running counter to thyself ; outwardly pursuing what thou inwardly declinest. Thy real end, which can be no other than what thou really desirest and settest thy heart upon, and thy visible way, are quite contrary : so that while thou continuest the course of religion in which thou art engaged, having taken down from before thine eyes the end which thou shouldst be aiming at, and which alone religion can aptly subserve, thy religion hath no design or end at all ; none at least which thou wouldst not be ashamed to profess and own. Indeed this temper of heart I am now pleading against, an undesirousness or indifferency of spirit towards the eternal glory, renders religion the vainest thing in the world. For whereas all the other actions of our lives have their stated proper ends, religion hath in this case none at all ; none to

which it hath any designation in this nature, or any aptness to subserve. This monstrous absurdity it infers,—and how strange is it, that it should not be reflected on!—that whereas if you ask any man of common understanding, what he doth this or that action for, especially if they be stated actions, done by him in an ordinary course, he can readily tell you, ‘For such and such an end:’ but ask him why he continues any practice of religion, he cannot say, in this case, for what.

For can any man imagine what other end religion naturally serves for, but to bring men to blessedness; which being no other thing than what hath been here described, such as are found not to desire it really and supremely as their end, can have no real attainable end of their being religious at all. To drive on a continued course and series of actions, in a visible pursuit of that which they desire not, and have no mind to, is such a piece of folly, so fond and vain a trifling, that, as I remember Cicero reports Cato to have said concerning the soothsayers of his time, ‘He did wonder they could look in one another’s faces and not laugh,’ being conscious to each other’s impostures, and the vanity of their profession; so one would as justly wonder, that the generality of carnal men, who may shrewdly guess at the temper of one another’s minds, do not laugh at each other, that they are jointly engaged in such exercises of religion, to the design whereof the common and agreed temper of their spirits do so little correspond! As if all were in very good earnest for heaven, when each one knows for himself, and may, possibly with more truth than charity, suppose of the rest, that if they might always continue in their earthly stations, they had rather never come there; and therefore that they desire it not *supremely*, and so not as their end at all. Consider it, then, that thy no-desire of this blessed state quite dispirits thy religion, utterly ravishes away its soul, leaves it a dead, foolish, vain thing, renders it an idle impertinency, not a mean to a valuable end. This desire is the life of religion; all duties and exercises of piety are, without it, but empty formalities, solemn pieces of pageantry; every service

done to God but the sacrifice of a fool, if not animated by the desire of final blessedness in him, and be not part of our way thither; a means designed to the attainment of it; which nothing can be that we are not put upon by the virtue of the desired end. Without this, religion is not itself. A continuance in well-doing is as it were the body of it; and therein a "seeking honour, glory, and immortality," the soul and spirit. The desire of a heavenly country must run through the whole course of our earthly pilgrimage: it were otherwise a continued error, an uncertain wandering, no steady tending towards our end: so that thou art a mere vagrant, if this desire do not direct thy course towards thy Father's house. And methinks all this should make thee even ashamed of thyself, if thou canst not find this desire to have a settled residence and a ruling power in thy soul. Then,—

2. Sense of praise should signify something too, as the Apostle, "Whatsoever things are pure, lovely, etc. If there be any virtue, any praise, think of these things." And hath not the eternal glory those characters upon it, of purity and loveliness beyond all things? Is it not a laudable and praiseworthy thing, to have a heart and mind set upon that?

The blessed God puts a note of excellency upon this temper of spirit: "But they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God,"<sup>1</sup> etc. This renders them a people "worthy of him who hath called them to his kingdom and glory;"<sup>2</sup> fit for him to own a relation to. Had they been of low terrene spirits, he would have accounted it a shame to him, to have gone under the name and cognizance of their God. But inasmuch as they desire the heavenly country, have learned to trample this terrestrial world, cannot be contained within this lower sphere, nor satisfy themselves in earthly things; they now discover a certain excellency of spirit, in respect whercof God is not ashamed to own a relation to them, before

<sup>1</sup> Heb. xi. 16.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Thess. ii. 12.

all the world to be called their God; to let men see what account he makes of such a spirit.

Yea, this is the proper genuine spirit and temper of a saint, which agrees to him as he is such. He is begotten to the eternal inheritance. A disposition, and therein a desire, to it is in his very nature, the new nature he hath received, implanted there from his original. He is born spirit of Spirit, and by that birth is not entitled only, but adapted and suited also, to that pure and spiritual state of blessedness. That "grace," by the "appearance" whereof men are made Christians, teaches also, instructs to this very thing, "to look for this blessed hope, the glorious appearance of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ;" that which you know consummates that blessedness: "for when Christ, who is their life, shall appear, then shall they also appear with him in glory;" by the participation of the Divine nature, their spirits escape and get up above this corrupt impure world. That new nature is a holy flame that carries their hearts upwards towards heaven.

Further, such desires appear hence to be of Divine original, an infusion from the blessed God himself,—*that nature* is from him immediately in which they are implanted. The Apostle, speaking of his earnest panting desire, "to have mortality swallowed up of life," presently adds, "he that wrought us to the selfsame thing is God."<sup>1</sup>

They are *obedient* desires; the soul's present *answer* to the heavenly call,<sup>2</sup> by which God calls it to his kingdom and glory. This glory is, as hath been formerly noted, the very term of that calling.<sup>3</sup> "The God of all grace hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus."<sup>4</sup> The glorified state is "the mark, the prize of the high calling of God in Christ."<sup>5</sup> It is the matter of the Apostle's thanksgiving unto God, on the behalf of the Thessalonians, that "they were called by his gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. v. 4, 5.<sup>2</sup> Heb. iii. 1.<sup>3</sup> 1 Thess. ii. 12.<sup>4</sup> 1 Pet. v. 10.<sup>5</sup> Phil. iii. 14.

Lord Jesus Christ.”<sup>1</sup> When the soul desires this glory, it obediently answers this call. This is a compliance and subjection of heart to it. How lovely and becoming a thing is this, when God touches the heart with a stamp and impress of glory and it forthwith turns itself to that very point, and stands directly bent towards the state of glory; is not wayward or perverse, but herein yields itself to God, and complies with the Divine pleasure.

Such desires have much in them of a *childlike ingenuity*. To desire the sight of a father's face; when this is the intimate sense of the soul,—Show me the Father, and it suffices; to desire the fullest conformity to his nature and will, to be perfect as that heavenly Father is perfect, what doth better become a child?

They are *generous* desires; they aim at perfection, the highest that created nature is capable of; not contented to have had some glances of Divine glory, some strokes and lines of his image, but aspiring to full-eyed visions, a perfect likeness.

They are *victorious* desires; they, as it were, ride in triumph over the world and every sublunary thing; they must be supposed to have conquered sensual inclinations, to have got the mastery over terrene dispositions and affections. With what holy contempt and scorn of every earthly thing doth that lofty soul quit this dirty world and ascend, that is powerfully carried by its own desire towards that blessed state? The desire of such a knowledge of Christ as might transform into his likeness, and pass the soul through all degrees of conformity to him, till it attain the resurrection of the dead and become like a risen glorified Jesus; such a desire, I say, if it make all things seem as loss and dung in comparison,—even a formal, spiritless religion itself,—will it not render this world the most despicable dunghill of all the rest? Try such a soul if you can, tempt it down to enjoy a flattering, kind world, or to please it when angry and unkind. When desires after this glory are once awakened into an

<sup>1</sup> 2 Thess. ii. 14.

active lively vigour, when the fire is kindled and the flame ascends, and this refined spirit is joyfully ascending therein, see if you can draw it back and make it believe this world a more regardable thing. Why should not all those considerations make thee in love with this blessed frame of spirit, and restless till thou find thyself incapable of being satisfied with anything but Divine likeness?

Rule 6. That while we cannot as yet attain the *mark* and *end* of our desires, we yield not to a comfortless despondency in the way, but maintain in our hearts a lively joy, in the hope that hereafter we shall attain it.

We are not all this while persuading to the desire and pursuit of an unattainable good. Spiritual desires are also rational, and do therefore involve hope with them; and that hope ought to infer and cherish joy. Hopeless desire is full of torment, and must needs banish joy from that breast which it hath got the possession of. It is a disconsolate thing, to desire what we must never expect to enjoy, and are utterly unlikely ever to compass. But these desires are part of the new creature, which is not of such a composition as to have a principle of endless trouble and disquiet in itself. The Father of mercies is not so little merciful to his own child, to lay it under a necessity, from its very natural *constitution*, of being for ever miserable by the desire of that which it can never have. It had been very unlike the workmanship of God, to make a creature to which it should be necessary to *desire* and impossible to *enjoy* the same thing.

No: but as he hath given holy souls, as to the present case, great incentives of desire, so doth he afford them proportionable encouragement of hope also; and that hope intervening, can very well reconcile desire and joy, and lodge them together in the same bosom: so that as it is a thing capable of no excuse, to hear of this blessedness and not desire it; so it would be, to desire and not expect it, to expect it and not rejoice in it, even while we are under that expectation. And it must be a very raised joy that shall answer to the expectation of so great things. If one should

give a stranger to Christianity an account of the Christian hopes, and tell him what they expect to be and enjoy ere long; he would sure promise himself to find so many angels dwelling in human flesh, and reckon, when he came among them he should be as amidst the heavenly choir, every one full of joy and praise. He would expect to find us living on earth as the inhabitants of heaven, as so many pieces of immortal glory lately dropped down from above, and shortly again returning thither. He would look to find, everywhere in the Christian world, incarnate glory sparkling through the overshadowing vail, and wonder how this earthly sphere should be able to contain so many great souls.

But when he draws nearer to us and observes the course and carriage of our lives; when he sees us walk as other men and considers the strange disagreement of our daily conversation to our so great avowed hopes, and how little sense of joy and pleasure we discover ourselves to conceive in them; would he not be ready to say, 'Sure some or other, willing only to amuse the world with the noise of strange things, have composed a religion for these men, which they themselves understand nothing of. If they do adopt and own it for theirs, they understand not their own pretences; they are taught to speak some big words, or to give a faint or seeming assent to such as speak them in their names; but it is impossible they should be in good earnest, or believe themselves in what they say and profess.'

And what reply then should we be able to make? For who can think that any who acknowledge a God and understand at all what that name imports, should value at so low a rate, as we visibly do, the eternal fruition of His glory, and a present sonship to Him, the pledge of so great a hope?

He that is born heir to great honours and possessions, though he be upon great uncertainties as to the enjoyment of them,—for how many interveniences may prevent him!—yet when he comes to understand his possibilities and expectancies, how big doth he look and speak! What grandeur.



doth he put on! His hopes form his spirit and deportment. But is it proportionably so with us? Do our hopes fill our hearts with joy, our mouths with praise, and clothe our faces with a cheerful aspect, and make a holy alacrity appear in all our conversations? But let not the design of this discourse be mistaken. It is not a presumptuous confidence I would encourage, nor a vain ostentation, nor a disdainful overlooking of others whom we fancy ourselves to excel. Such things hold no proportion with a Christian spirit. His is a modest humble exultation, a serious severe joy; suitable to his solid stable hope. His spirit is not puffed up and swollen with air, it is not big by an inflation or a light and windy tumour; but it is really filled with effectual pre-apprehensions of a weighty glory. His joy accordingly exerts itself with a steady lively vigour, equally removed from vain lightness and stupidity, from conceitedness and insensibleness of his blessed state. He forgets not that he is less than the least of God's mercies, but disowns not his title to the greatest of them. He abases himself to the dust, in the sense of his own vileness; but in the admiration of Divine grace, he rises as high as heaven. In his humiliation he affects to equal himself with worms, in his joy and praise with angels. He is never unwilling to diminish himself, but afraid of detracting anything from the love of God or the issues of that love.

But most of all he magnifies, as he hath cause, this its last and most perfect issue. And by how much he apprehends his own unworthiness, he is the more rapt up into a wonderful joy that such blessedness should be his designed portion.

But now, how little do we find in ourselves of this blessed frame of spirit! How remote are we from it! Let us but inquire a little into our own souls: are there not too apparent symptoms with us of the little joy we take in the forethoughts of future blessedness? For,—

First, how few thoughts have we of it. What any delight in, they remember often. It is said of the same person, that

“his delight is in the law of the Lord,” and that “in his law he doth meditate day and night.”<sup>1</sup> And when the Psalmist professes his own delight in God’s statutes, he adds, “I will not forget thy word.”<sup>2</sup> Should we not be as unapt to forget heaven, if our delight were there? But do not days pass with us, wherein we can allow ourselves no leisure to mind the eternal glory, when yet vanities throng in upon us without any obstruction or check.

And—what is consequent hereupon—how seldom is this blessed state the subject of our discourse! How often do Christians meet, and not a word of heaven! O heavy carnal hearts! Our home and eternal blessedness in this appears to be forgotten among us. How often may a person converse with us, ere he understand our relation to the heavenly country. If exiles meet in a foreign land, what pleasant discourse have they of home! They suffer not one another to forget it. Such was their remembrance of Sion, who sat together bemoaning themselves by the rivers of Babylon, “a making mention of it,” as the phrase is often used. And methinks even as to this remembrance it should be our own common resolution too. ‘If we forget thee, O Jerusalem: if we forget to make mention of thee, O thou city of the living God; let our right hand forget her cunning; our tongue shall sooner cleave to the roof of our mouth.’ And so it would be, did we prefer that heavenly Jerusalem above our chief joy.

Again, how little doth it weigh with us. It serves not to outweigh the smallest trouble. If we have not our carnal desire in everything gratified, if anything fall out cross to our inclinations, this glory goes for nothing with us. Our discontents swallow up our hopes and joys, and heaven is reckoned as a thing of nought. If when outward troubles afflict or threaten us, we could have the certain prospect of better days, *that* would sensibly revive and please us. Yea, can we not please ourselves with very uncertain groundless

<sup>1</sup> Ps. i. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. cxix. 16.

hopes of this kind, without promise or valuable reason? But to be told of a recompense at the resurrection of the just, of a day when "we shall see the face of God, and be satisfied with his likeness;" this is insipid and without savour to us, and affords us but cold comfort. The uncertain things of time signify more with us than the certain things of eternity. Can we think it is all this while well with us? Can we think this a tolerable evil, or suffer with patience such a distemper of spirit? Methinks it should make us even weary of ourselves, and solicitous for an effectual speedy redress.

The redress must be more in our own doing, striving with our souls and with God for them, than in what *any man can say*. Most of the considerations under that foregoing rule, are with little variation applicable to this present purpose. I shall here annex only some few subordinate directions, which may lead us into this blessed state of life and give us some joyful foretastes of the future blessedness, according as our spirits shall comply with them. But expect not to be cured by prescriptions without using them; or that heavenly joy can be the creature of mortal unregarded breath; we can only prescribe means and methods through which God may be pleased to descend, and in which thou art diligently to insist and wait. And because I cannot well suppose thee ignorant where much is said to this purpose, I shall therefore say little.

1. Possess thy soul with the apprehension, that thou art not at liberty in this matter, but that there is a certain spiritual delectation, which is incumbent on thee as indispensable duty. Some whose moroser tempers do more estrange them from delights, think themselves more especially concerned to banish everything of that kind from their religion, and fancy it only to consist in sour and righteous severities. Others seem to think it arbitrary and indifferent; or that, if they live in a continual sadness and dejection of spirit, it is only their infelicity, not their fault; and apprehend not the obligation that is upon them by a Divine law,

otherwise to manage and order their spirits. But what then? Are such words thought to be spoken at random: "Her ways are ways of pleasantness;"<sup>1</sup> "the Lord is the portion of mine inheritance;" "the lines are fallen to me in pleasant places," or, *in the midst of pleasantnesses*, as the expression hath been noted to signify? Do such precepts carry no sense with them: "Delight thyself in the Lord;" "rejoice in the Lord alway: and again I say, Rejoice;"<sup>2</sup> with many more? Do all passages of this kind in Scripture stand for cyphers, or were they put in them by chance? Is there such a thing as an aptitude to delectation in our natures; and doth the sanctification thereof entitle the joy of saints to a place among the "fruits of the Spirit;"<sup>3</sup> and yet is the exercise of it to have no place in their hearts and practice? Do not think you are permitted so to extinguish or frustrate so considerable a principle of the Divine life. Know, that the due exercise of it is a part of the order and discipline of God's family; that it is a constitution of the Divine goodness and wisdom, both to cherish his *own*, and invite in *strangers* to him; yea, that is the scope and aim of the whole gospel revelation, that what is discovered to us of the word of life was purposely written to draw souls into fellowship with the Father and the Son, that their "joy might be full:"<sup>4</sup> that the ministers of this gospel are therefore styled the "helpers of their joy."<sup>5</sup> Therefore, though here it be not required nor allowed, that you should indulge a vain trifling levity or a sensual joy, or that you should rejoice you know not why, imitating the laughter of a fool; or inopportunately, when your state admits it not or when the Lord calls to mourning; yet settle however this persuasion in your hearts, that the serious, rational, regular, seasonable exercise of delight and joy is matter of duty, to be charged upon conscience from the authority of God, and is an integral part in the religion of Christians. And then sure you will

<sup>1</sup> Prov. iii. 17.<sup>2</sup> Ps. xxxvii. 4; Phil. iv. 4.<sup>3</sup> Gal. v. 22.<sup>4</sup> 1 John i. 4.<sup>5</sup> 2 Cor. i. 24.

not think any object more proper and suitable for it to be exercised upon, than the foreseen state of blessedness, which is in itself a "fulness of joy; the joy of our Lord:"<sup>1</sup> and is, in the pre-apprehensions of it, a more considerable matter of joy than our present state affords us besides; and without relation whereto, we have no rational joy at all.

2. Keep faith in exercise; both in that act of it which persuades the soul of the truth of the gospel revelation, and that act of it which unites it to God through the Mediator. The Apostle prays on the behalf of his Roman Christians, that they might be "filled with joy and peace in believing;"<sup>2</sup> and we are told, how effectually, as to this, it supplied the place of sight. Such as had not *seen* Christ, which was the privilege of many other Christians of that time, yet "believing, did rejoice with joy unspeakable and glorious."<sup>3</sup>

Faith directly tends, in that double office before mentioned, to excite and foment this joy. As it assents to the truth of the gospel revelation, it realizes the object, is the substance and evidence of the invisible glory.<sup>4</sup> As it unites the soul with God through Christ, in a fiducial and obediencial closure, it ascertains our interest therein, and is our actual acceptance of our blessedness itself; for when we take God through Christ to be our God, what is it but to accept him as our eternal and satisfying portion; whom we are after fully to enjoy, in the vision and participation of his glorious excellencies and infinite fulness? which two acts of faith we have mentioned together in one text,—they were "persuaded" of the promises, and "embraced" them; the former respecting the truth of the promise, the latter the goodness of the thing promised. And hereupon they confessed themselves—as it follows—pilgrims and strangers on earth; which abdication of the earth as none of their country, could not be, but that through their faith they had a joyous pre-apprehension of that better state. That confession

<sup>1</sup> Ps. xvi. ; Matt. xxv.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Pet. i. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. xv. 13.

<sup>4</sup> Heb. xi. 1.

did manifestly involve in it a lively joy, springing from the sight and embrace of that more taking distant good which the promise presented them with; whence they could not think it enough to be such to themselves, in their own thoughts and the temper of their minds; but they cannot forbear, so overcoming were their sights and tastes, to give it out, to speak, and look, and live, as those that were carried up in their spirits above this earth, and who did even disdain to own themselves in any other relation to it, than that of foreigners and strangers.

Set thy faith on work, soul, and keep it a work, and thou wilt find this no riddle; it will be so with thee too. We have much talk of faith among us, and have the name often in our mouths, but how few are the real lively believers! Is it to be thought that such blessedness should not more affect our hearts; nay, would it not ravish away our very souls, did we thoroughly believe it? And were it our present daily work, to renew the bonds of a vital union with the blessed God in whom we expect to be blessed for ever, could that be without previous gusts of pleasure? It is not talking of faith, but living by it, that will give us the experience of heavenly delights and joys.

3. Take heed of going in thy practice against thy light; of persisting in a course of known or suspected sin, that states thee in a direct hostility and rebellion against Heaven and can never suffer thee to think of eternity and the other world with comfort, will fill thy mind with frightful apprehensions of God, render the sight of his face the most terrible thing to thy thoughts thou canst imagine, and satisfaction with his likeness the most impossible thing. Let a good understanding and correspondence be continued between God and thee,—which is not possible, if thou disobeyest the dictates of thy conscience, and takest the liberty to do what thou judgest God hath forbidden thee,—that this may be thy rejoicing, “the testimony of a good conscience; that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not according to fleshly wisdom, but the grace of God, thou hast had thy conversa-

tion.”<sup>1</sup> Take God for a witness of thy ways and walkings; approve thyself to his jealous eye; study to carry thyself acceptably towards him, and unto all well-pleasing. Let that be thy ambition, to stand right in his thoughts, to appear gracious in his eyes. “Hold fast thine integrity,” that thy “heart may not reproach thee as long as thou livest.” If “iniquity be in thy hand, put it away;” then shalt thou “lift up thy face without spot and without fear.” Be a faithful subject of that kingdom of God,—and here conscience rules under him,—which consists first “in righteousness,” and then “in peace and joy in the Holy Ghost.” Thou wilt, so, daily behold the face of God in righteousness and with pleasure; but wilt most of all please thyself to think of thy final appearance before him, and the blessedness that shall ensue.

4. Watch and arm thyself against the too forcible strokes and impressions of sensible objects. Let not the savour of such low vile things corrupt the palate of thy soul. A sensual earthly mind and heart cannot taste heavenly delights: “They that are after the flesh do savour the things of the flesh; they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.” Labour to be thoroughly mortified toward this world and the present state of things.<sup>2</sup> Look upon this scene and pageant as passing away;<sup>3</sup> keep natural appetites under restraint,—the world and the lusts of it pass away together: sensuality is an impure thing: heavenly refined joy cannot live amidst so much filth. Yea, and if thou give thy flesh liberty too far in things that are, *in specie*, lawful, it will soon get advantage to domineer and keep thy soul in a depressing servitude. Abridge it then, and cut it short, that thy mind may be enlarged and at liberty, may not be thronged and prepossessed with carnal imaginations and affections. ‘Let thy soul’ (if thou wilt take this instruction from a heathen) ‘look with a constant erect mind into the undefiled light, neither darkened nor borne down towards the

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. i. 12.<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. vii. 31.<sup>3</sup> 1 John ii. 17.

earth; but stopping its ears, and turning its eyes and all other senses back upon itself; and quite abolishing out of itself, all earthly sighs, and groans, and pleasures, and glories and honours, and disgrace; and having forsaken all these, choose for the guides of its way, true reason and strong love, the one whereof will show it the way, the other make it easy and pleasant.'<sup>1</sup>

5. Having voided thy mind of what is earthly and carnal, apply and turn it to this blessed theme. The most excellent and the vilest objects are alike to thee, while thou mindest them not. Thy thoughts possibly bring thee in nothing but vexation and trouble, which would bring in as soon joy and pleasure, didst thou turn them to proper objects. A thought of the heavenly glory is as soon thought as of an earthly cross. We complain the world troubles us; then what do we there? Why get we not up, in our spirits, into the quieter region? What trouble would the thoughts of future glory be to us? How are thoughts and wits set on work for this flesh! But we would have our souls flourish as the lilies, without anything of their own care. Yea, we make them toil for torture, and not for joy, revolve an affliction a thousand times before and after it comes, and have never done with it, when eternal blessedness gains not a thought.

6. Plead earnestly with God for his Spirit. This is "joy in the Holy Ghost;" or whereof he is the Author. Many Christians, as they must be called, are such strangers to this work of imploring and calling in the blessed Spirit, as if they were capable of adopting these words, "We have not so much as heard whether there be a Holy Ghost." That name is with them as an empty sound. How hardly are we convinced of our necessary dependence on that "free Spirit," as to all our truly spiritual operations? This Spirit is the very earnest of our inheritance. The foretastes and first-fruits we have here of the future blessedness, the joy and pleasure, the complacential relishes we have of it beforehand,

<sup>1</sup> Max. Tyr. in dissert. *Περὶ τοῦ τίς ὁ Θεὸς κατὰ Πλάτωνα.*



are by the gracious vouchsafement and work of this blessed Spirit. The things "that eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, and which have not entered into the heart of man," are revealed by this Spirit. Therefore doth the Apostle direct his prayer on the behalf of the Ephesians, to the Father of this glory, "that he would give them this spirit of wisdom and revelation . . . to enlighten the eyes of their understanding, that they might know the hope of his calling, and the riches of the glory of his inheritance in," or among, "the saints."<sup>1</sup> And its revelation is such as begets an impression, in respect whereof it is said also, to seal up to the day of redemption. Therefore pray earnestly for this Spirit; not in idle dreaming words of course, but as being really apprehensive of the necessity of prevailing. And give not over till thou find that sacred fire diffusing itself through thy mind and heart, to enlighten the one and refine the other, and so prepossess both of this glory, that thy soul may be all turned into joy and praise. And then let me add here, without the formality of a distinct head, that it concerns thee to take heed of "quenching that Spirit," by either resisting or neglecting its holy dictates; or, as the same precept is otherwise given, of "grieving the Spirit:" he is by name and office the Comforter. The primitive Christians, it is said, walked in the fear of God, and "in the comfort of the Holy Ghost." Is it equal dealing, to grieve him whose business it is to comfort thee? Or canst thou expect joy where thou causest grief? "Walk in the Spirit;" adore its power. Let thy soul do it homage within thee. Wait for its holy influences, and yield thyself to its ducture and guidance; so wilt thou go as "the redeemed of the Lord," with "everlasting joy upon thy head," till thou enter that presence, "where is fulness of joys and pleasures for evermore."

Nor do thou think it improper or strange, that thou shouldst be called upon to rejoice in what thou dost not yet possess. Thy hope is instead of fruition; it is an anticipated

<sup>1</sup> Eph. i.

enjoyment. We are commanded to “rejoice in hope;”<sup>1</sup> and saints have professed to do so, to “rejoice even in the hope of the glory of God.”<sup>2</sup> Nor is it unreasonable that should be thy present highest joy. For though yet it be a distant thing, and indistinctly revealed, the excellency of the object makes compensation for both, with an abundant surplusage: as any one would much more rejoice to be assured by a great person, of ample possessions he would make him his heir to, —though he knew not distinctly what they should be,—than to see a shilling, already his own, with his own eyes.

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xii. 12.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. v. 2.

## CHAPTER XX.

THE ADDITION OF TWO RULES, THAT MORE SPECIALLY RESPECT THE YET 'FUTURE' SEASON OF THIS BLESSEDNESS, AFTER THIS LIFE; NAMELY :—  
RULE 7. THAT WE PATIENTLY WAIT FOR IT UNTIL DEATH.—RULE 8. THAT WE LOVE NOT TOO MUCH THIS PRESENT LIFE.

THERE are yet two more rules to be superadded that respect the season of this blessedness,—“when we awake;” that is, not till we go out of time into eternity, not till we pass out of the drowsy darkness of our present state; till the night be over with us, and the vigorous light of the everlasting day do shine upon us. Hence therefore it will be further necessary :—

Rule 7. That while the appointed proper season of this blessedness is not yet come, that is, till God shall vouchsafe to translate us from our present earthly state, we compose our spirits to a patient expectation of it.

Upon a twofold account, the exercise of *patience* is very requisite in the present case; namely, both in respect of this very expectation itself, and also in respect of the concomitant miseries of this expecting state. In the former respect, an absent good is the matter of our patience; in the latter, present and incumbent evil. It falls more directly in our way, to speak to the exercise of patience upon the former account; yet as to the latter, though it be more collateral as to our present purpose, it cannot be unseasonable briefly to consider that also.

I. First, therefore, the very expectation itself of this blessed-

ness renders patience very requisite to our present state. Patience hath as proper and necessary an exercise in expecting the good we want and desire, as in enduring the evil that is actually upon us. The direction, it must be remembered, intends such only as apprehend and desire this blessedness as their greatest good, whose souls are transported with earnest longings fully to enjoy what they have foretasted. I am apprehensive enough, that others need it not. There is no use of *patience* in expecting what we desire not.

But as to those who desire it most, and who therefore are most concerned in this advice, it may possibly become a doubt,—how, since there is sin in our present ignorance of God and unlikeness to him, this can be the matter of any patience.

We must therefore know, that as our knowledge of God and conformity to him are both our duty and blessedness,—the matter both of our endeavour and of God's vouchsafement,—so our ignorance of him and unlikeness to him, are both our sin and our misery; which misery, though God hath graciously removed it in part, yet also he continues it upon us in part,—as our sad experience tells us,—by his just and wise dispensation, which we cannot except against.

Now, therefore, looking upon the defect of our knowledge of God and likeness to him, under the former notion, though we are to reflect upon ourselves with great displeasure and indignation; yet looking on them in the latter notion, we are to submit to the righteous dispensation of God with a meek, unrepining patience.

By this patience, therefore, I mean not a stupid succumbency under the remaining disease and distemper of our spirits in this our present state; a senseless indifferency and oscitant cessation from continual endeavours of further redress; but a silent and submissive veneration of Divine wisdom, and justice, and goodness, that are sweetly complicated in this procedure with us, with a quiet peaceful expectation of the blessed issue of it.

This being premised, I shall briefly show, that we have

need of patience, and that we have *reason* for it, in this present case.

1. That we have need of it,—supposing our souls are intent upon glory, that we are in earnest in this pursuit,—will appear upon sundry accounts.

First, the greatness of the thing we expect; to “behold the face” of God, to be “satisfied with his likeness.” What serious heart, apprehensive of its own concerns, can without much patience hold out under such an expectation? How do lovers that expect the marriage-day, tell the hours and chide the sun that it makes no more haste: but how can that soul contain itself, that expects the most intimate fruition of the Lord of glory?

Again; consider the continual representation and frequent inculcations of this glory. Its vigorous powerful beams are, by often repeated pulsations, continually beating upon such souls as are intent towards it. Life and immortality are brought to light in the gospel; and they are obliged by command and inclination to attend its discoveries. The eye that is once smitten, looks again and again; it is not satisfied with seeing; and every renewed look meets with still fresh rays of glory; they have frequent foretastes and pre-libations, which still give life to new desires. To lie under the direct stroke of the “powers of the world to come,” this requires much patience,—to sustain the burden of such an expectation. Life itself were otherwise a bitter and a wearisome thing; and the want of such foretastes—for, alas! they are not constant—makes desire sometimes more restless, and expectation more bitter and grievous.<sup>1</sup>

Moreover, consider the nature and spring of these desires that work in heavenly souls towards this glory. They are of a Divine nature and original; “He that hath wrought us to this selfsame thing is God.”<sup>2</sup> Observe the tenor

<sup>1</sup> *Canerem tibi angelicâ voce thronorum; quàm mirificâ, semper in patriâ dulcedine repleamur; nisi vererer, nè fortè, posthâc, tantæ dulcedinis hujus comparatione, tota tibi in terris vita non solùm amarissima, verum etiam amaritudo ipsa penitus videatur.*—M. Ficin. *Epist.*

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. v. 5.

of this proposition; God is not the subject of predication, but the predicate. The action is not predicated of God, as it would in this form of words, 'God hath wrought us,' etc.; but God is predicated of this agent, as much as to say, 'This is the work of a Deity;' none but God could be the Author of such desires. That a soul should be acted towards glory by the alone power of an Almighty hand,—here needs a Divine patience to sustain it, and make it strong and able to endure such a motion, where there is Divine power to act and move it forward. The frame could not hold else; it must dissolve. The Apostle therefore praying for the Thessalonians, that God "would direct their hearts into the love of himself," which could not but inflame their souls with a desire of a perfect vision and enjoyment, presently adds, "and into the patient waiting for of Christ:"<sup>1</sup> where we cannot by the way but reflect upon the admirable constitution and equal temper of the new creature, as to the *principles* that are ingredient into the composition of it,—fervent desires allayed with meek submission, mighty love with strong patience. If we consider it in *actu signato*, or in its abstract idea, this is its temperament; and of these there is a gradual participation wherever you find it actually existing. God had otherwise formed a creature, the prime of his creatures, so as by its most intrinsical constituent principles to be a torment to itself.

Lastly, the tiresome nature of expectation in itself is not least considerable. It carries, it is true, pleasure—if it be hoping expectation—with it; but not without a great admixture of pain. It brings a kind of torture to the mind, as a continued exertion or stretching forth of the neck, by which it is expressed,<sup>2</sup> doth to the body. Therefore it is most significantly said by the wise man, "Hope deferred maketh the heart sick."<sup>3</sup> All these, I say, together discover the truth of what the Apostle tells us, "We have need of patience, that when we have done the will of God, we may inherit the promise."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 2 Thess. iii. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. viii. 19.

<sup>3</sup> Prov. xiii. 12.

<sup>4</sup> Heb. x. 36.

2. And as we have need of it, so we have also reason for it upon many accounts. It is no piece of rigorous severity to be put upon the exercise of some patience; to be kept awhile in a waiting posture for the completion of this blessedness. For,—

First, the thing you expect is sure. You have not to do in this matter with one who is inconstant or likely to change. If such an one should make us large promises, we should have some cause never to think ourselves secure till we had them made good to us. But since we “live in the hope of eternal life, which God, who cannot lie,”<sup>1</sup> and who we know “is faithful, hath promised,”<sup>2</sup> we may be confident, and this confidence should quiet our hearts. What a faithful friend keeps for us, we reckon as safe in his hands as in our own. “He that believes makes not haste.” And impatient haste argues an unbelieving jealousy and distrust. Surely there is an end, and thy expectation will not be cut off.

And then, it is a happiness that will recompense the most wearisome expectation. It were good sometimes to consider with ourselves, what is the object of our hope; are our expectations pitched upon a valuable good, that will be worth while to expect? So the Psalmist, “What wait I for?” and he answers himself, “My hope is in thee.”<sup>3</sup> Sure then that hope will not make ashamed. It were a confounding thing to have been a long time full of great hopes that at last dwindle into some petite trifle; but when we know beforehand the business is such as will defray itself, bear its own charges, who would not be contented to wait?

Nor will the time of expectation be long; “when I shall awake,” “when he shall appear.” Put it to the longest term; it was said sixteen hundred years ago, to be but a little while; three times over in the shutting up of the Bible, he tells us, “I come quickly.” He seems to foresee he

<sup>1</sup> Tit. i. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. x. 23.

<sup>3</sup> Psalm xxxix. 7.

should be something impatiently expected; and at last, "Surely I come quickly," as much as to say, 'What, will you not believe me?' "Be patient," saith the Apostle, "to the coming of the Lord:" and presently he adds, "be patient, stablish your hearts, for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh."<sup>1</sup>

Yea, and amidst the many troubles of that short time of expectation many present comforts are intermixed. Heaven is open to us. We have constant liberty of access to God. He disdains not our present converse. We may have the constant pleasure of the exercise of grace, the heavenly delights of meditation, the joy of the public solemnities of worship, the communion and encouragement of fellow-Christians, the light of that countenance whereof we expect the eternal vision, the comforts of the Holy Ghost, the continual prospect of glory, all the way thither. What cause have we of impatience or complaint?

Further; saints of all ages have had their expecting time. We are required to be followers of them who through faith and patience have inherited the promises. Our Saviour himself waited a life's time for his glorification. "I have," saith he, "glorified thee on earth; I have finished the work thou gavest me to do! And now, Father, glorify me with thine own self."

And while we are waiting, if it be not our fault, our glory will be increasing. We may be glorifying God in the mean time, which is the end of our beings; we need not live here to no purpose.

Again; we were well enough content, till God more clearly revealed that other state, to live always as we do. It is not now ingenuous to be impatiently querulous about the time of our entering into it. It is his free vouchsafement; we never merited such a thing at his hands. It is not commendable among men, to be over-quick in exacting debts, even where there was an antecedent right, much less where

<sup>1</sup> Jas. v. 7, 8.



the right only shall accrue by promise not yet sueable ; would it not shame us to have God say to us, " Have patience with me, and I will pay you all ? "

And our former state should be often reflected on. If you had promised great things to a wretch lately taken off the dunghill, and he is every day impatiently urging you to an untimely accomplishment, would you not check his over-bold haste by minding him of his original ? It becomes not base and low-born persons to be transported with a preposterous over-hasty expectation of high and great things.

And if God bear with the sinfulness of our present state,<sup>1</sup> is it not reasonable we should bear with the infelicity of it to his appointed time ?

Besides that, we should much injure ourselves by our impatience ; embitter our present condition, increase our own burthen, dissipate our strength, retard our progress towards the perfection we profess to aim at : for " patience must have its perfect work," that we may be perfect.

And others, that have had as clear apprehensions and vigorous desires, at least, of the future state of glory as we can with modesty pretend to, have yet herein moderated themselves so as to intend their present work with composed spirits. Take that one instance of the blessed Apostle, " who, whilst in this earthly tabernacle he groaned," being burthened, to be clothed with glory and " to have mortality swallowed up of life," being sensible enough, that " during his abode or presence in the body, he was absent from the Lord ; " yet notwithstanding the fervour and vehemency of these longings, with the greatest calmness and resignation imaginable as to the termination or continuance of his present state, he adds, that " though he had rather be absent from the body, to be present with the Lord,"<sup>2</sup> it was yet his chief ambition, as the word he uses signifies, " whether present or absent," (as if in comparison of that, to be present or absent were indifferent, though otherwise, out of that comparison, he had told

<sup>1</sup> Jas. i.<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. v. 9. φιλοτιμούμεθα.

us he would be absent rather), to be "accepted,"<sup>1</sup> to appear grateful and well-pleasing in the eye of God; such that He might delight and take content in, as his expression imports. As if he had said, 'Though I am not unapprehensive of the state of my case,—I know well I am kept out of a far more desirable condition while I remain in this tabernacle,—yet, may I but please and appear acceptable in the sight of God, whether I be sooner dismissed from this thralldom or longer continued in it, I contend not.' His burden here that so sensibly pressed him, was not a present evil so much as an absent good. He was not so burthened by what he felt and could not remove, as by what he saw and could not enjoy. His groans accordingly were not brutal, as those of a beast under a too heavy load; but rational, the groans of an apprehensive spirit panting after an alluring inviting glory which he had got the prospect of, but could not yet attain. And hence the same spiritual reason which did exercise, did also, at once, moderate his desires; so that, as he saw there was reason to desire, so he saw there was reason his desires should be allayed by a submissive ingenuous patience, till they might have a due and seasonable accomplishment. And that same temper of mind we find in him when he professes to be in a "strait between two, having a desire to be dissolved, and to be with Christ,"<sup>2</sup> which he thought to be far better, and yet apprehended his longer abode in the world to be needful for the service of the church; whereupon he expresses his confidence, "that he should abide longer," and therein discovers how well contented he was it should be so.

Therefore, as in reference to this very expectation itself, there is great need of patience; so the exercise of it in this case hath nothing harsh or unreasonable in it, or which the spirit of a saint may not well comport with.

II. And for the exercise of patience upon the latter account,—the concomitant miseries of this our present expecting state: I need not insist to show how needful it is, this being

<sup>1</sup> εὐάρεστοι.

<sup>2</sup> Phil. i. 23.

that which our own sense will sufficiently instruct us in. We are not to expect the future state of blessedness in a state of present ease and rest, in a quiet friendly world, in a calm and peaceful region, under placid and benign influences from men and times; but amidst storms and tempests, and troubles on every side, under frowns and displeasure, threats and dangers, harsh and rough severities, ill and ungentle usages, flouts and scorns, wrongs and injurious dealings, wants and pressures in many kinds. When the world is once forsaken by us, it grows angry; if we disclaim it, and avow ourselves not to be of it, become confessed strangers and pilgrims in it, set ourselves seriously and visibly to mind and design something above and beyond it, discover ourselves to be of them that are "called out of it,"—from the same principle that it loves its own, it will hate us; when once God calls us his sons, the "world will not know us."<sup>1</sup> We see in this context we are discoursing from, what the Psalmist's condition was, whilst as yet he remained under this blessed expectation; he found "the men of time," whose "portion was in this life," to be deadly enemies, wicked oppressors, proud insulters; they were to him as greedy lions, as a bloodthirsty sword. His cries to be delivered from them, show what he met with at their hands, or thought he had reason to fear. Nor can so raging enmity and hate ever cease to meditate mischiefs and cruelties. The same principle still remains in all the Serpent's brood, and will still be putting forth itself in suitable practices, which cannot but infer to the contrary seed continual trouble and matter of complaint.

And, in short, whatever is here the matter of your complaint, ought to be the matter of your patience. Whence it cannot be doubted the matter of it will be very copious, so as to require the *all* of patience,—as the Apostle speaks,—which his addressing this solemn request to God on behalf of these Colossian Christians plainly intimates. He prays

<sup>1</sup> 1 John iii. 1.

that "they may be strengthened with all might, according to the glorious power of God, unto *all* patience,"<sup>1</sup> etc. Patience is the Christian's suffering power, it is passive fortitude, an ability to suffer; and so apprehensive he is of their great need of a full and ample supply of this power, that he prays that they might be strengthened in this kind with "might," with "all might," that they might be even almighty sufferers; strengthened with a might "according" and corresponding "to the glorious power of God himself:" such as might appear the proper impress and image of Divine power, whereof the Divine power might be both the principle and the pattern, (for the patience whereby God bears the wrongs done to him is called the power too: "Let the power of the Lord be great as thou hast spoken, saying, The Lord is long-suffering, forgiving," etc.) and this "unto all patience," where patience is put for an act of this power, or must be understood of patience in exercise,—*actual* bearing.

Nor are we to look upon the expressions of this prayer as so many hyperbolical strains or rhetorical schemes of speech. He prays according to the apprehension he had of the necessity of suffering Christians.

And yet how much soever the need is, the reason is not less; it is a thing as possible as it is necessary; yea, there is more in the power of the cause, than to work this single effect. I mean it not only of the efficient cause mentioned before, but of the objective or final—as having such a superabundant sufficiency in its kind also—hinted in the close of the following verse. He doth not utter vain and groundless wishes, when he prays, that to that all of patience they might add joyfulness too, and giving of thanks; no, the matter (as if he had said) will bear it, even the inheritance of the saints in light,—the very expectation objective, I am speaking of. It hath enough in it to induce, not only patience, but joy; not a contented bearing only, but giving

<sup>1</sup> Col. i. 11.

of thanks too, to him that hath made you meet for that inheritance.<sup>1</sup>

True it is indeed, that the very need we have of patience and the gain that would accrue by it, is itself a reason why we should labour to frame our spirits to it; for if such evils must be undergone, how much better is it to bear them alone, than to have the disease of a wounded impatient spirit to bear also as an additional burthen. The law of patience is certainly a most indulgent merciful law, a gracious provision, as much as can be made by a law, for the quiet and ease of our spirits, under the sharpest and most afflictive sufferings,—as might at large be shown, were it suitable to fall into a discourse of patience in itself considered, and to treat of that rest and pleasure, that liberty of spirit, that possession and dominion of one's own soul, which it carries in it. But that were too much a digression. It only falls directly here in our way to consider, that as we have many grievances and pressures to undergo, while we are expecting the future blessedness, which render the exercise of patience very requisite, so there is enough of weight and worth in that very expectation, that is, in what we expect, to outweigh them all, and to render the exercise thereof highly reasonable upon that account. "I reckon," saith the Apostle, "that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory that shall be revealed in us."<sup>2</sup> 'Thus,' saith he, 'I reckon, that is, it is my stated settled judgment, not a sudden rash thought. When I have reasoned the matter with myself, weighed it well, considered the case, turned it round, viewed it exactly on every side, balanced advantages and disadvantages, pondered all things which are fit to come into consideration about it, this is the result, the final determination, that which I conclude and judge at last,'—judgment is the last product and issue of the most exquisite inquiry and debate, the ultimate and most perfect act of reason,—'that the sufferings of this now of time are

<sup>1</sup> Col. i. 12.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. viii. 18.

of no value; things not fit, as it were, to be mentioned the same day with the glory to be revealed,' etc. It can therefore be no hard law, no unreasonable imposition, that shall oblige us to the exercise of patience under such sufferings, in the expectation of so transcendent glory. For, consider,—

First, these sufferings are but from men; for the sufferings of which the Apostle here speaks, are such as wherein we suffer together with Christ, that is, for his name and interest, on behalf of the Christian cause: but this glory is from God. How disproportionable must the effects be of a created and increased cause!

Again, these sufferings reach no further than the bone and flesh, "Fear not them that kill the body, and after they have done that, can do no more," etc. But this glory reaches unto, and transforms the soul. How little can a clod of earth suffer in comparison of what an immortal spirit may enjoy!

And further, there is much mixture in our present sufferings: the present state of suffering saints is not a state of total misery; there are, as it were, rays of glory interlaced with their present afflictions: but there will be nothing of affliction mingled with their future glory.

Yea, and what may not only convince, but even transport us too, these sufferings are but temporary, nay, but momentary;<sup>1</sup> this glory eternal. What heart is big enough to comprehend the full sense of these words, "Our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory." How might I dwell here upon every syllable, light affliction, weighty glory, exceeding weight, affliction for a moment, eternal weight of glory!

Oh then, how unworthy is it of the Christian name and hopes that we should have an impatient resentment of this method God follows with us, as he did with our great Redeemer and Lord; that we should suffer first, and then

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iv. 17.

enter into glory ! Heaven were a poor heaven if it would not make us savers. It were high time for us to give over the Christian profession, if we do not really account that its reward and hope do surmount its reproach and trouble ; or do think its cross more weighty than its crown. Is the price and worth of eternal glory fallen ? It hath been counted worth suffering for. There have been those in the world that would not accept deliverance from these sufferings, "that they might obtain the better resurrection." Are we grown wiser ? Or would we indeed wish God should turn the tables, and assign us our good things here, and hereafter evil things ? Ungrateful souls ! how severe should we be to ourselves, that we should be so apt to complain for what we should admire and give thanks ! What ! because purer and more refined Christianity in our time and in this part of the world hath had public favour and countenance, can we therefore not tell how to frame our minds to the thoughts of sufferings ? Are tribulation and patience antiquated names, quite out of date and use with us, and more ungrateful to our ears and hearts, than heaven and eternal glory are acceptable ? And had we rather, if we were in danger of suffering on the Christian account, run a hazard as to the latter than adventure on the former ? Or do we think it impossible we should ever come to the trial, or be concerned to busy ourselves with such thoughts ? Is the world become so stable and so unacquainted with vicissitudes, that a state of things less favourable to our profession can never revolve upon us ? It were, however, not unuseful to put such a case by way of supposition to ourselves. For every sincere Christian is in affection and preparation of his mind a martyr. He that loves not Christ better than his own life cannot be his disciple. We should at least inure our thoughts more to a suffering state, that we may thence take some occasion to reflect and judge of the temper of our hearts towards the name and cause of Christ. It is easy suffering, indeed, in idea and contemplation ; but something may be collected from the observation, how we can relish, and comport with, such thoughts. It is as training in order to fight ; which

is done often upon a very remote supposition that such occasions may possibly fall out.

Therefore, what now do we think of it if our way into the kingdom of God shall be through many tribulations? If, before we behold the smiles of His blessed face, we must be entertained with the less pleasing sight of the frowning aspect and visage of an angry world? If we first bear the image of a crucified Christ, ere we partake of the likeness of a glorious God? What! do we regret the thoughts of it? Do we account we shall be ill dealt with, and have a hard bargain of it? Oh, how tender are we grown, in comparison of the hardiness and magnanimity of primitive Christians! We have not the patience to think of what they had the patience to endure. We should not yet forget ourselves, that such a thing belongs to our profession; even in this way to testify our fidelity to Christ, and our value of the inheritance purchased by his blood, if he call us thereunto. We must know it is a thing inserted into the religion of Christians, and, with respect to their condition in this world, made an essential thereto. He cannot be a Christian that doth not "deny himself, and take up the cross." How often, when the active part of a Christian's duty is spoken of, is the passive part studiously and expressly annexed? "Let us run *with patience* the race that is set before us."<sup>1</sup> The good ground "brought forth fruit *with patience*;"<sup>2</sup> "eternal life is for them that by a *patient* continuance in well-doing seek after it."<sup>3</sup> Yea, and hence the word of Christ is called the word of his *patience*.<sup>4</sup> And the style wherein the beloved disciple speaks of himself and his profession is this: "I John, a companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and *patience* of Jesus Christ."<sup>5</sup> Do we mean to plead prescription against all this? Or have we got an express exemption? Have we a discharge to show, a manumission from all the suffering part of a Christian's duty? and is it not a discharge

<sup>1</sup> Heb. xii. 1.<sup>2</sup> Luke viii. 15.<sup>3</sup> Rom. ii. 7.<sup>4</sup> Rev. iii. 10.<sup>5</sup> Chap. i. 9.



also from being Christians as much? Will we disavow ourselves to belong to that noble society of them that through faith and patience inherit the promises? Surely we are highly conceited of ourselves, if we think we are too good to be numbered among them of whom the "world was not worthy;" or we design to ourselves a long abode here, while we so much value the world's favour and a freedom from worldly trouble; or eternity is with us an empty sound, and the future blessedness of saints an airy thing, that we should reckon it insufficient to counterpoise the sufferings of a few hasty days that will so soon have an end. It is a sad symptom of the declining state of religion, when the powers of the world to come are so over-mastered by the powers of this present world, and objects of sense so much outweigh those of faith. And is not this apparently the case with the Christians of the present age? Do not your thoughts run the same course with theirs that meditated nothing but sitting "on the right and left hand" of Christ in an earthly dominion, while they never dreamt of "drinking of his cup," or being "baptized with his baptism?" How many vain dreamers have we of golden mountains and I know not what earthly felicity, whose pretended prophecies about a supposed near approaching prosperity to the Church on earth, gain easier belief, or are more savoury and taking with too many, than all that the sacred oracles discover about its glorious state in heaven? Hence are our shoulders so unfitted to Christ's yoke, like the unaccustomed heifer, and the business of suffering will not enter into our hearts. Methinks the belief and expectation of such a state hereafter, should make us even regardless of what we see or suffer here; and render the good or evil things of time as indifferent to us. Yet neither plead I for an absolute stoical apathy, but for *patience*. A great follower of that sect acknowledges, 'It is not a virtue to bear what we feel not, or have no sense of.'<sup>1</sup> Stupidity under Providence is not a Christian temper; as that moralist says

<sup>1</sup> Sen. de Constant. sapientis.

of the wise man, 'It is not the hardness of stone or iron that is to be ascribed to him.'

But lest any should run into that more dangerous mistake, to think that by the patience we have been all this while persuading to, in the expectation of the blessedness yet to come, is meant a love of this present world, and a complacential adherence of heart to the earth,—which extreme the terrene temper of many souls may much incline them to,—it will be necessary upon that account to add, in reference also to the yet future expected season of this blessedness, this further and concluding instruction, namely ;

Rule 8. That, however we are not to repine at our being held so long in this world in an expecting state, yet we let not our souls cleave too close to their terrestrial stations, nor be too much in love with the body, and this present low state of life on earth.

For evident it is, that notwithstanding all the miseries of this expecting state, the most are yet loth to leave the world, and have hearts sordidly hankering after present things. And surely there is much difference between being patient of an abode on earth, and being fond of it. Therefore since the true blessedness of saints consists in such things as we have shown, and cannot be enjoyed till we awake ; not within the compass of time and this lower world ; it will be very requisite to insist here a while in the prosecution of this last rule. And what I shall say to it, shall be by way of *caution* and *enforcement*.

1. For caution : that we misapprehend not that temper and disposition of spirit, we are in this thing to endeavour and aim at. And it especially concerns us to be cautious about the *inducements* and *degree* of that desire of leaving this world, or contempt of this present life, which we either aspire to or allow ourselves in.

First, inducements. Some are desirous, others at least content, to quit the world upon very insufficient, or indeed wicked considerations.

i. There are who desire it merely to be out of the way of

present troubles, whereof they have either too impatient a sense or an unworthy and impotent fear.

Many times the urgency and anguish of incumbent trouble impresses such a sense, and utters itself in such language as that, "Now, O Lord, take, I beseech thee, my life from me, for it is better for me to die than to live;"<sup>1</sup> or that, "My soul chooseth strangling, and death rather than life:"<sup>2</sup> makes men "long for death, and dig for it as for hid treasure; rejoice and be exceeding glad when they can find the grave."

Yea, and the very fear of troubles that are but impendent and threatening, makes some wish the grave a sanctuary, and renders the "clods of the valley sweet" unto their thoughts. They lay possibly so humoursome and fanciful stress upon the mere circumstances of dying, that they are earnest to die out of hand to avoid dying so and so; as the poet would fain persuade himself it was not death he feared, but shipwreck.<sup>3</sup> It would not trouble them to die, but to die by a violent hand, or to be made a public spectacle; they cannot endure the thoughts of dying *so*. Here is nothing commendable or worthy of a Christian in all this. It were a piece of Christian bravery to dare to live in such a case, even when there is a visible likelihood of dying a sacrifice in the midst of flames. How much this glory was affected in the earlier days of Christianity is sufficiently known: though, I confess, there were excesses in that kind, altogether unimitable. But if God call a man forth to be his champion and witness, to lay down a life in itself little desirable, in a truly worthy cause, the call of his Providence should be as the sound of the trumpet to a truly martial spirit; it should fill his soul with a joyful courage and sense of honour, and be complied with cheerfully, with that apprehension and resentment a stout soldier would have of his general's putting him upon some very hazardous piece of service; namely, he would say, 'My general hath not' (as the moralist expresses his sense for

<sup>1</sup> Jonah iv. 3.

<sup>2</sup> Job vii. 15.

<sup>3</sup> Demite naufragium, mors mihi munus erit.—Ovid.

him) ‘deserved ill of me, but it appears he judged well.’<sup>1</sup> It should “be counted all joy to fall into such trials;”<sup>2</sup> that is, when they become our lot by a providential disposition, not by a rash precipitation of ourselves. And as it is a wickedness inconsistent with Christianity, to be of that habitual temper, to choose to desert such a cause for the saving of life; so it is a weakness very reproachful to it, to lay down one’s life in such a case with regret, as unwilling in this kind to glorify him who laid down his for us. We are no more to die to ourselves, than to live to ourselves. Our Lord Jesus hath purchased to himself a dominion over both states of the living and dead, and “whether we live, we must live to him; or die, we must die to him.”<sup>3</sup> It is the glory of a Christian to live so much above the world, that nothing in it may make him either fond of life or weary of it.

ii. There are others who are at least indifferent and careless how soon they die, out of either a worse than paganish infidelity, disbelieving the concernments of another world; or a brutish stupidity, not apprehending them; or a gross conceited ignorance, misunderstanding the terms of the gospel, and thinking themselves to be in a good condition as to eternity, when the case is much otherwise with them.

Take heed thy willingness to die be from no such inducements, but a mere desire of being with God, and of attaining this perfection and blessedness which he hath engaged thee in the pursuit and expectation of. And then, having made sure it be right as to the rise and principle, be careful it be not undue in point of degree; that is, a cold intermittent velleity is too little on the one hand, and a peremptory precipitant hastiness is too much on the other. The middle and desirable temper here is a complacential submission to the Divine will in that affair, with a preponderating inclination on our part towards our eternal home, if the Lord see good. For we have two things to attend in this business, and by which our

<sup>1</sup> Imperator de me non malè meruit, sed benè judicavit.—Sen.

<sup>2</sup> Jas. i. 2.

<sup>3</sup> Rom. xiv. 8.

spirits may be swayed this way or that ; that is, the goodness of the object to be chosen, and the will of God which must guide and overrule our choice ; the former whereof we are permitted to eye in subordination to the latter, and not otherwise.

Now our apprehension of the desirableness and intrinsic goodness of the object ought to be such,—we are infidels else, if we have not that account of it,—that nothing we can eye under the notion of a good to us, may be reckoned so eligible as that,—namely, our final and complete blessedness in the other world ; which, because we know we cannot enjoy without dying, death also must be judged more eligible than life ; that is, our blessedness must be judged eligible for itself, and death as requisite to make it present. So that the entire object we are discoursing of being present blessedness, —consider it in comparison with anything else that can be looked upon by us as a good which we ourselves are to enjoy, it ought to be preferred and chosen out of hand, inasmuch as nothing can be so great a present good to us as that. And this ought to be the proper habitual inclination of our spirits, their constant frame and bent, as they respect only our interest and welfare.

But considering God's dominion over us, and interest in our lives and beings, and that as well ingenuity as necessity binds us to be subject to his pleasure, we should herein patiently suffer ourselves to be overruled thereby ; and not so abstractly mind our own interest and contentment in this matter, as if we were altogether our own, and had no Lord over us. Plato, who abounds in discourses of the desirableness of dying, and of the blessed change it makes with them that are good, yet hath this apt expression of the subjection we ought to be in to the Divine pleasure as to this matter, 'that the soul is in the body as soldiers in a garrison, from whence they may not withdraw themselves without his order and direction who placed them there :'<sup>1</sup> and expostulates thus ;

<sup>1</sup> In Phæd. Vid. et Plotin. *περι ἐξαγωγῆς*. Ennead. i.

‘If,’ saith he, ‘a slave of yours should destroy his own life without your consent, would you not be displeased; and if there had been any place left for revenge, been apt enough to that too?’ So he brings in Socrates discoursing; and discovers himself herein to have had more light in this matter, touching that subordinate interest only men have in their own lives and the unlawfulness of self-murder, as he had in other things too, than most heathens of the more refined sect ever arrived to.

If therefore God would give us leave to die, we should upon our own account be much more inclined to choose it; but, while he thinks fit to have it deferred, should yield to his will with an unrepining submission: only it ought not to rest at all on our part, or that as to ourselves we find anything more grateful to us in this world, that we are willing to stay a day longer in it. That for our own sakes we should affect a continuance here, would argue a terrene sordid spirit. But then such should be our dutiful filial love to the Father of our spirits, that in pure devotedness to his interests, we would be content to dwell, if he would have it so, a Methuselah’s age in an earthly tabernacle for his service; that is, that we may help to preserve his memorial in a lapsed world, overrun with atheism and ignorance of its Maker; and win him hearts and love to our uttermost among his apostate disloyal creatures; and in our capacities be helpful to the encouragement of such as he continues in the world for the same purposes. This is the very temper the Apostle expresses,<sup>1</sup> when in that strait. Which way the poise of his own spirits inclined him in the consideration of his own interest, and what was simply more eligible to him, he expresses with high emphasis; ‘to be with Christ,’ saith he, ‘is more, more desirable to me,’ for there are two comparatives in the Greek text; and therefore he professes his own desire in order thereto,—to be dissolved; but that private desire was not so peremptory and absolute, but he could make it yield and

<sup>1</sup> Phil. i.

give place to his duty towards God and his Church ; as it follows. So we know it is possible that respects to a friend may overweigh a man's own particular inclination, and the inclination remain notwithstanding, but is subdued only ; otherwise, had any reason or argument that did respect *myself* persuaded me to change it, I should then follow but my own proper inclination still, and so my friend hath nothing to thank me for.

So it ought to be with us here. Our inclination should preponderate towards a present change of our state ; only our devotedness to his interest and pleasure, whose we are, should easily overrule it. This is the lovely temper of a gracious spirit as to this thing,—that to die might be our choice, and to live in the meantime submitted to as our duty.

As an ingenuous son whom his father hath employed abroad in a foreign country, though duty did bind him cheerfully therein to comply with his father's will and the necessity of his affairs ; yet, when his father shall signify to him, that now he understands no necessity of his longer continuance there and therefore he may if he please return, but he shall have leave to follow his own inclination ;—it is not hard to conjecture, that the desire of seeing a father's face would soon determine the choice of such a son that way.

But how remote are the generality of them that profess themselves God's children from that pious ingenuity ! We have taken root in the earth, and forgotten our heavenly originals and alliances. We are as inhabitants here, not pilgrims ; hardly persuaded to entertain with any patience the thoughts of leaving our places on earth, which yet, do we what we can, shall shortly know us no more.

In short then : that vile temper of spirit against which I professedly bend myself in the following discourse, is when men, not out of any sense of duty towards God or solicitude for their own souls, but a mere sordid love to the body and affixedness of heart to the earth and terrene things, cannot endure the thoughts of dying. And that which I persuade

to is, that having the true prospect of the future blessedness before our eyes, and our hearts possessed with the comfortable hope of attaining to it, we shake off our earthly inclinations, and expect with desire and joy the time of our dismissal hence, that we may enjoy it; which is the design of what was promised in the next place, namely,—

2. The enforcement of this instruction. Suffer we therefore ourselves to be reasoned with about this matter; and let us consider whether we can in good earnest think such an aversation as we discover to our blessed translation hence, an excusable, a tolerable temper; or whether it be not highly reasonable, that we should entertain the thoughts, at least with more content and patience, if not with more fervent desire, of our departure hence, and introduction into that other state.

Let me demand of thee, Dost thou thus regret the thoughts of death, as being unwilling to die at all, or as being unwilling to die as yet? Is it the thing itself, or only the circumstance of time that thou exceptest against? It is likely thou wilt say that which will seem more plausible, and so fix only on the latter; and that thou wilt not profess to desire an eternity on earth, but only more time. Well, let that for the present be supposed, as it is a more modest, so to be a true account of thy desires. Yet what is the reason of this moderation with thee herein; and that thou so limitest thyself? Is it that thou believest the blessedness of the other state will prove better than anything thou canst enjoy here; and that thou art not willing eternally to be deprived of? But dost thou not think it is *now* better also? And what canst thou pretend, why what is now the best and most desirable good, should not be now chosen and desired out of hand? Or is it that thou thinkest it unbecomes thee to cross the supreme will of him that made thee, who hath determined, that all men once shall die? And then, how knowest thou but he hath also determined concerning thee, that thou shalt die the next day or hour? and it is only a present willingness to die, in subordination to the Divine



will, or upon supposition of it, thou art persuaded to. Why, art thou not afraid, lest thy present unwillingness should cross his present will? Dost thou not think that sovereign power is as sufficient to determine of the circumstance, as the thing itself? And art thou not ashamed to pretend an agreement with God about the thing itself, and yet differ with him about a circumstance? Shall that be a ground of quarrel between him and thee?

But while thou only professest that more modest desire of more time in the world, what security canst thou give, that when that desire hath been liberally gratified, it shall be at length laid down and tumultuate no more? What bounds wilt thou fix to it, which thou darest undertake it shall not pass? Art thou sure, when thou shalt have lain at the world's breast ten or twenty years longer, thou wilt then imagine thyself to have drawn it dry; or that then thou shalt begin to nauseate the world and wish for heaven? Or hast thou not reason from thy former experience to suspect that the longer thou dwellest on earth, the more terrene thou wilt grow; and that if thou be indisposed to leave it this day or year, thou wilt be more so the next; and so thy desire become boundless and infinite, which is to desire to be here always,—the thing which thou seemedst so unwilling to own?

And if that prove at last the true state of thy case, art thou then a Christian or art thou a man, that thou harbourest in thy breast so irreligious and irrational, yea, so sordid a wish?

What! wish eternally to be affixed to a clod of earth? Is that at length become thy god? Or wilt thou say, He is thy god whom thou never desirest to enjoy? Or that thou hast already enough of him, but not of the world, and yet that he is thy God? Or wouldst thou overturn the laws of nature, and subvert the most sacred Divine constitutions, abortive the designs of eternal wisdom and love, evacuate and nullify the great achievements of thy merciful and mighty Redeemer, only to gratify a sensual, brutish humour?

But evident it is, thou dost only in vain disquiet thyself; thou canst not disturb the settled order of things. Eternal laws are not repealable by a fond wish. Thou settest that dreadful thing, DEATH, at nothing the further distance by thine abhorreny of it. It will overtake thee whether thou wilt or no; and methinks thine own reason should instruct thee to attemper and form thyself to what thou canst not avoid, and possess thee with such thoughts and desires as those of that discreet pagan; 'Lead me, O God,' saith he, 'whither thou wilt, and I will follow thee willingly; but if I be rebellious and refuse, I shall follow thee notwithstanding.'<sup>1</sup> What we cannot decline, it is better to bear willingly, than with a regret that shall be both vain and afflictive.

And what hast thou hitherto met with in the world, that should so highly endear it to thee? Examine and search more narrowly into thy earthly comforts; what is there in them to make them self-desirable, or to be so for their own sakes? What is it to have thy flesh indulged and pleased? to have thy sense gratified? thy fancy tickled? What so great good, worthy of an immortal reasonable spirit, canst thou find in meats and drinks, in full barns and coffers, in vulgar fame and applause, that should render these things desirable for themselves?

And if there were any real felicity in these things for the present, whilst thou art permitted to enjoy them, yet dost thou not know that what thou enjoyest to-day thou mayst lose to-morrow, and that such other unthought-of evils may befall thee as may infuse a bitterness into all thou enjoyest; which causes immediately the enjoyment to cease, while the things themselves remain, and will be equal to a total loss of all?

And thus, as the moralist ingenuously speaks, 'Thou wilt continually need another happiness to defend the former, and new wishes must still be made on the behalf of those which have already succeeded.'<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Epictet.

<sup>2</sup> Sen. de Brev. Vit.

But canst thou indeed think it worth the while, that the Maker of the universe should create a soul, and send it down into the world, on purpose to superintend these trivial affairs, —to keep alive a silly piece of well-figured earth while it eats and drinks, to move it to and fro in chase of shadows, to hold it up while others bow the knee and do it homage,—if it had not some higher work to mind in reference to another state? Art thou contented to live long in the world to such purposes? What low, worthless spirit is this, that had rather be so employed than in the visions of his Maker's face; that chooses thus to entertain itself on earth, rather than partake the effusions of Divine glory above; that had rather creep with worms than soar with angels: associate with brutes than with the "spirits of just men made perfect?" Who can solve the phenomenon, or give a rational account why there should be such a creature as man upon the earth, abstracting from the hopes of another world? Who can think it the effect of an infinite wisdom, or account it a more worthy design than the representing of such a scene of actions and affairs by puppets on a stage? For my part, upon the strictest inquiry, I see nothing in the life of man upon earth, that should render it, *for itself*, more the matter of a rational election—supposing the free option given him in the first moment of his being—than presently again to cease to be the next moment.

Yea, and is there not enough obvious in every man's experience, to incline him rather to the contrary choice; and, supposing a future blessedness in another world, to make him passionately desirous, with submission to the Divine pleasure, of a speedy dismissal into it? Do not the burthens that press us "in this earthly tabernacle" teach our very sense, and urge oppressed natures into involuntary groans, while as yet our *consideration* doth not intervene? And if we *do* consider, is not every thought a sting, making a much deeper impression than what only toucheth our flesh and bones? Who can reflect upon his present state, and not presently be in pangs? The troubles that follow *humanity* are many and great, those that follow *Christianity* more numerous and

grievous. The sickness, pains, losses, disappointments, and whatsoever afflictions that are, in the Apostle's language, human, or "common to men,"<sup>1</sup> (as are all the external sufferings of Christians, in nature and kind, though they are liable to them upon an account peculiar to themselves; which there the Apostle intimates,) are none of our greatest evils; yet even upon the account of them, have we any reason to be so much in love with so unkind a world? Is it not strange our very Bridewell should be such a heaven to us? But these things are little considerable in comparison of the more spiritual grievances of Christians, as such; that is, those that afflict our souls while we are, under the conduct of Christ, designing for a blessed eternity; if we indeed make that our business, and do seriously intend our spirits in order thereto. The darkness of our beclouded minds! The glimmering ineffectual apprehension we have of the most important things! The inconsistency of our shattered thoughts, when we would apply them to spiritual objects! The great difficulty of working off an ill frame of heart, and the no less difficulty of retaining a good! Our being so frequently tossed as between heaven and hell, when we sometimes think ourselves to have even attained, and hope to descend no more; and all on a sudden, "plunged in the ditch so as that our own clothes might abhor us," fall so low into an earthly temper, that we can like nothing heavenly or divine; and because we cannot, are enforced justly most of all to dislike ourselves! Are these things little with us? How can we forbear to cry out of the depths, to the Father of our spirits, that he would pity and relieve his own offspring? Yea, are we not weary of our crying, and yet more weary of holding in? How do repelled temptations return again, and vanquished corruptions recover strength! We know not when our work is done. We are miserable that we need to be always watching, and more miserable that we cannot watch, but are so often surprised and overcome of evil. We say sometimes with ourselves, we

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. x. 13.

will seek relief in retirement, but we cannot retire from ourselves; or in converse with godly friends, but they sometimes prove snares to us and we to them; or we hear but our own miseries repeated in their complaints. Would we pray? How faint is the breath we utter! How long is it ere we can get our souls possessed with any becoming apprehensions of God, or lively sense of our own concernments! Would we meditate? We sometimes go about to compose our thoughts, but we may as well essay to hold the winds in our fist. If we venture forth into the world, how do our senses betray us, how are we mocked with their impostures! Their nearer objects become with us the only realities, and eternal things are all vanished into airy shadows. Reason and faith are laid asleep, and our sense dictates to us what we are to believe and do, as if it were our only guide and lord. And what! are we not yet weary? Is it reasonable to continue in this state of *our own choice*? Is misery become so *natural* to us, so much our element, that we cannot affect to live out of it? Is the darkness and dirt of a dungeon more grateful to us than a free open air and sun? Is this flesh of ours so lovely a thing, that we had rather suffer so many deaths in it, than one in putting it off and mortality with it? While we carry it about us, our souls impart a kind of life to it, and it gives them death in exchange. Why do we not cry out more feelingly, "O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from this body of death?" Is it not grievous to us to have so cumbersome a yoke-fellow; to be tied, as Mezentius is said to have done, the living and the dead together?

Do we not find the distempers of our spirits are mostly from these bodies we are so in love with, either as the proper springs, or as the occasion of them? From what cause is our drowsy sloth, our eager passions, our aversion to spiritual objects, but from this impure flesh; or what else is the subject about which our vexatious cares or torturing fears, our bitter griefs are taken up day by day?

And why do we not consider, that it is only our love to it that gives strength and vigour to the most of our temptations,

as wherein it is most immediately concerned; and which makes them so often victorious, and thence to become our after-afflictions? He that hath learned to mortify the inordinate love of the body, will he make it the business of his life to purvey for it? Will he offer violence to his own soul, to secure it from violence? Will he comply with men's lusts and humours for its advantage and accommodation; or yield himself to the tyranny of his own avarice for its future, or of his more sensual lusts for its present, content? Will it not rather be pleasing to him that his outward man be exposed to perish, while his inward man is renewed day by day? He to whom the thoughts are grateful of laying it down, will not—though he neglect not duty towards it—spend his days in its continual service, and make his soul a hell by a continual provision for “the flesh and the lusts” of it. That is cruel love that shall enslave a man, and subject him to so vile and ignoble a servitude. And it discovers a sordid temper to be so imposed upon. How low are our spirits sunk, that we disdain not so base a vassalage!

God and nature have obliged us to live in bodies for a time, but they have not obliged us to measure ourselves by them; to confine our desires and designs to their compass, to look no further than their concerns, to entertain no previous joys in the hope of being one day delivered from them. No such hard law is laid upon us. But how apt are we to become herein a most oppressive law to ourselves; and not only to lodge in filthy earthen cottages, but to love them, and confine ourselves to them, loth so much as to peep out. It is the apt expression of a philosopher, upbraiding that base low temper, ‘The degenerate soul,’ saith he, ‘buried in the body, is as a slothful creeping thing, that loves its hole, and is loth to come forth.’<sup>1</sup>

And methinks, if we have no love for our better and more noble self, we should not be altogether unapprehensive of an obligation upon us, to express a dutiful love to the Author of

<sup>1</sup> Ἡ δὲ δειλὴ ψυχὴ κατορωυγμένη ἐν σώματι, ὡς ἐρπετὸν κωθὸς εἰς φωλεὸν, φιλεῖ τὸν φωλεὸν, etc.—Max. Tyr. *Diss.* 41.

our beings. Doth it consist with the love we owe to him, to desire always to lurk in the dark, and never come into his blessed presence? Is that our love, that we never care to come nigh him? Do we not know, "that while we are present in the body, we are absent from the Lord?" Should we not therefore be willing "rather to be present with the Lord, and be absent from the body?"<sup>1</sup> Should we not put on a confidence, a holy fortitude (as it is there expressed, *we are confident*, or of good courage, and thence *willing*, etc.), that might carry us through the grave to him: as is the brave speech of that last-mentioned philosopher, 'God will call thee ere long; expect his call. Old Age will come upon thee, and show thee the way thither; and Death,—which he that is possessed with a base fear laments and dreads as it draws on; but he that is a lover of God expects it with joy, and with courage meets it when it comes.'<sup>2</sup>

Is our love to God so faint and weak that it dares not encounter death, nor venture upon the imaginary terrors of the grave to go to him? How unsuitable is this to the character which is given of a saint's love!<sup>3</sup> And how expressly are we told that he who loves his life better than Christ, or that even hates it not for his sake,—as certainly he cannot be said to do that is not willing to part with it to enjoy him,—cannot be his disciple? If our love to God be not supreme, it is none; or not such as can denominate us lovers of him; and will we pretend to be so, when we love a putid flesh and this base earth better than him? And have we not professedly, as a fruit of our avowed love to him, surrendered ourselves? Are we not his devoted ones? Will we be his, and yet our own? Or pretend ourselves dedicated to his holy pleasure, and will yet be at our own dispose; and so dispose of ourselves too, as that we may be most ungrateful to him and most incapable of converse with him? How doth this love of a perishing life and of a little animated clay

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. v. 6, 8.

<sup>2</sup> Δειλὸς ὀδύρεται, etc.—Max. Tyr. *Diss.* 1.

<sup>3</sup> Cant. viii.

stop all the effusions of the love of God, suspend its sweet and pleasant fruits, which should be always exerting themselves towards him? Where is their love, obedience, joy, and praise, who are through the fear of death all their lives subject to bondage, and kept under a continual dismal expectation of an unavoidable dissolution? But must the great God lose his due acknowledgments because we will not understand wherein he deals well with us? Is his mercy therefore no mercy? As we cannot nullify his truth by our unbelief, so nor his goodness by our disesteem. But yet consider; doth it not better become thee to be grateful than repine, that God will one day unbind thy soul and set thee free, knock off thy fetters, and deliver thee out of the house of thy bondage? Couldst thou upon deliberate thoughts judge it tolerable, should he doom thee to this earth for ever? 'He hath, however, judged otherwise,' as the pagan emperor and philosopher excellently speaks, 'who is the Author both of the first composition of thy present being, and now of the dissolution of it; thou wert the cause of neither, therefore depart and be thankful, for he that dismisseth thee, dealeth kindly with thee.'<sup>1</sup> If yet thou understandest it not, yet remember, it is thy Father that disposes thus of thee: how unworthy is it to distrust his love! What child would be afraid to compose itself to sleep in the parent's bosom? It expresses nothing of the duty and ingenuity, but much of the frowardness and folly of a child. They sometimes cry vehemently in the undressing; but should their cries be regarded by the most indulgent parent? or are they fit to be imitated by us?

We have no excuse for this our frowardness. The blessed God hath told us his gracious purposes concerning us, and we are capable of understanding him. What if he had totally hidden from us our future state; and that we knew nothing, but of going into an eternal silent darkness? The authority of a Creator ought to have awed us into a silent

<sup>1</sup> M. Aurel. Ant. de Vit. suâ, l. 12. ἔπιθι ἴλεως· ὁ ἀπολύων ἴλεως.



submission. But when we are told of such a glory, that it is but drawing aside the fleshly vail and we presently behold it, methinks the blessed hour should be expected, not with patience only, but with ravishing joy.

Did we hear of a country in this world where we might live in continual felicity, without toil, or sickness, or grief, or fear, who would not wish to be there, though the passage were troublesome? Have we not heard enough of heaven to allure us thither? Or is the eternal truth of suspected credit with us? Are God's own reports of the future glory unworthy our belief or regard?

How many, upon the credit of his word, are gone already triumphantly into glory! that only "seeing the promises afar off, were persuaded of them, and embraced them;" and never after owned themselves under any other notion than of "pilgrims on earth," longing to be at home in their most desirable "heavenly country."<sup>1</sup> We are not the first that are to open heaven; the main body of saints is already there; it is, in comparison of their number, but a scattering remnant that are now alive upon the earth. How should we long to be associated to that glorious assembly! Methinks we should much more regret our being so long left behind.

But if we should desire still to be so, why may not all others as well as we? and as much expect to be gratified as we? And then we should agree in desiring that our Redeemer's triumph might be deferred, that his body might yet remain incomplete, that he might still be debarred of the long-expected fruit of the travail of his soul, that the name of God might be still subjected to the blasphemy and reproach of an atheistical world, who have long ago said with derision, "Where is the promise of his coming?" Would we have all his designs to be still unfinished, and so mighty wheels stand still for us, while we sport ourselves in the dust of the earth and indulge our sensual inclination, which sure this bold desire must argue to be very predominant in us? And take heed it argue not its habitual prevalency!

<sup>1</sup> Heb. xi. 13, 16.

At least, if it discover not our present sensuality, it discovers our former sloth and idleness. It may be we may excuse our averseness to die by our unpreparedness, that is, one fault with another; though that be beside the case I am speaking of. What then have we been doing all this while? What! were the affairs of thy soul not thought of till now? Take then thy reproof from a heathen, that it may convince thee the more: 'No one,' saith he, 'divides away his money from himself, but yet men divide away their very life. . . . But doth it not shame thee,' he after adds, 'to reserve only the relics of thy life to thyself, and to devote that time only to a good mind, which thou canst employ upon no other thing? How late is it to begin to live, when we should make an end; and defer all good thoughts to such an age as possibly few do ever reach to. The truth is,' as he speaks, 'we have not little time, but we lose much; we have time enough were it well employed; therefore we cannot say we receive a short life, but we make it so; we are not indigent of time, but prodigal. What a pretty contradiction is it to complain of the shortness of time, and yet do what we can to precipitate its course; to hasten it by that we call pastime? If it have been so with thee, art thou to be trusted with more time?'<sup>1</sup>

But as thy case is, I cannot wonder that the thoughts of death be most unwelcome to thee; who art thou that thou shouldst desire the day of the Lord? I can only say to thee, Hasten thy preparation, have recourse to Rules 2nd and 3rd, and accordingly guide thyself till thou find thy spirit made more suitable to this blessedness; that it become savoury and grateful to thy soul, and thy heart be set upon it. Hence thou mayst be reconciled to the grave, and the thoughts of death may cease to be a terror to thee.

And when thou art attained so far, consider thy great advantage in being willing and desirous to die upon this further account,—that thy desire shall now be pitched upon

<sup>1</sup> Sen.

a thing so certain. Thine other desires have met with many a disappointment. Thou hast set thy heart upon other things; and they have deceived thy most earnest thirsty expectations. Death will not do so. Thou wilt now have one certain hope; one thing in reference whereto thou mayst say, 'I am sure.' Wait a while, this peaceful sleep will shortly seize thy body and awaken thy soul. It will calmly period all thy troubles, and bring thee to a blessed rest.

But now, if only the mere terror and gloominess of dying trouble thy thoughts, this of all other seems the most inconsiderable pretence against a willing surrender of ourselves to death. Reason hath overcome it, natural courage, yea, some men's atheism; shall not faith? Are we not ashamed to consider what confidence and desire of death some heathens have expressed? Some that have had no pre-apprehension or belief of another state,—though there were very few of them,—and so no hope of a consequent blessedness to relieve them, have yet thought it unreasonable to disgust the thoughts of death. What wouldst thou think if thou hadst nothing but the sophisms of such to oppose to all thy dismal thoughts? I have met with one<sup>1</sup> arguing thus—'Death, which is accounted the most dreadful of all evils, is nothing to us,' saith he, 'because while we are in being, death is not yet present, and when death is present we are not in being; so that it neither concerns us, as living nor dead; for while we are alive, it hath not touched us, when we are dead we are not. . . . Moreover,' saith he, 'the exquisite knowledge of this, that death belongs not to us, makes us enjoy this mortal life with comfort; not by adding anything to our uncertain time, but by taking away the desire of immortality.' Shall they comfort themselves upon so wretched a ground, with a little sophistry and the hope of extinguishing all desire of immortality; and shall not we, by cherishing this blessed hope of enjoying shortly an immortal glory?

<sup>1</sup> Epicurus in Gassend. Synt.

Others of them have spoken magnificently of a certain contempt of this bodily life, and a not only not fearing but desiring to die, upon a fixed apprehension of the distinct and purer and immortal nature of the soul, and the preconceived hope of a consequent felicity. I shall set down some of their words, added to what have been occasionally mentioned,—amongst that plentiful variety wherewith one might fill a volume,—purposely to shame the more terrene temper of many Christians.

‘The soul,’ saith one of them, ‘is an invisible thing, and is going into another place, suitable to itself, that is noble, and pure, and invisible; even into Hades, indeed to the good and wise God, whither also my soul shall shortly go, if he see good. But this,’—he saith in what follows,—‘belongs only to such a soul as goes out of the body pure, that draws nothing corporeal along with it, did not willingly communicate with the body in life, but did even fly from it, and gather up itself into itself, always meditating this one thing.’<sup>1</sup>

‘A soul so affected, shall it not go to something like itself, Divine?—And what is Divine is immortal and wise; whither when it comes, it becomes blessed, free from error, ignorance, fears, and wild or enormous loves, and all other evils incident to men.’

One<sup>2</sup> writing the life of that rare person Plotinus, says, that he seemed as if he were in some sort ashamed that he was in body; which,—however it would less become a Christian, yet—in one that knew nothing of an incarnate Redeemer, it discovered a refined, noble spirit.

The same person speaks almost the language of the

<sup>1</sup> Plato in Phædone, from whom I adjoin what, to them that understand it, is more elegant in his own language; *ὃν ἂν ἴδης ἀγανακτοῦντα μέλλοντα ἀποθανεῖσθαι, οὐκ ἔρ ἦν φιλόσοφος ἀλλὰ τις φιλοσάματος*. Ibid. *Ἀγρίων ἐρώτων*.

<sup>2</sup> Porphyrius. Plotinus Ennead. 7. lib. vi., whom though a just admirer of him would fain have men reckon to have been a Christian, because he writes much against the pseudo-Christian Gnostics, nothing against Christianity, yet it appears not he ever made profession of it. Ennead 1. lib. vii.

Apostle concerning his being rapt up into the third heaven, and tells of such an alienation of the soul from the body: 'that when once it finds God,'—whom he had before been speaking of under the name of the τὸ καλόν, or 'The Beauty,'—'shining in upon it, it now no longer feels its body, or takes notice of its being in the body; but even forgets its own being, that it is a man or a living creature, or anything else whatsoever; for it is not at leisure to mind anything else, nor doth it desire to be: yea, and having sought him out, he immediately meets it, presenting itself to him. It only views him instead of itself . . . and would not now change its state for anything, not if one could give it the whole heaven in exchange.'

And elsewhere discussing whether life in the body be good and desirable, yea or no, he concludes it to be good; 'not as it is an union of the soul and body, but as it may have that virtue annexed to it, by which what is really evil may be kept off. But yet, that death is a greater good. That life in the body is in itself evil; but the soul is by virtue stated in goodness; not as enlivening the body with which it is compounded, but as it severs and sejoins itself from it;' meaning, so as to have as little communion as possibly it can with it. To which purpose is the expression of another: 'That the soul of a happy man so collects and gathers up itself out from the body while it is yet contained in it . . . and that it was possessed of that fortitude, as not to dread its departure from it.'<sup>1</sup>

Another gives this character of a good man; 'that as he lived in simplicity, tranquillity, purity, not being offended at any that they believed him not to live so; he also comes to the end of his life, pure, quiet, and easy to be dissolved,<sup>2</sup> disposing himself without any constraint to his lot.'

Another is brought in speaking thus; 'If God should grant me to become a child again, to send forth my renewed infant cries from my cradle, and having even run out my race, to begin it again, I should most earnestly refuse it;

<sup>1</sup> Marin. Proclus.<sup>2</sup> εὐλυτος.—M. Aur. Ant.

for what profit hath this life? and how much toil! . . . Yet I do not repent that I have lived, because I hope that I have not lived in vain. And now I go out of this life, not as out of my dwelling-house, but my inn. O blessed day! when I shall enter into that council and assembly of souls, and depart from this rude and disorderly rout and crew,'<sup>1</sup> etc.

I shall add another (of a not much unlike strain and rank, as either being not an open, or no constant, friend to Christianity<sup>2</sup>), that discoursing 'Who is the heir of Divine things?' saith, 'He cannot be, who is in love with this animal sensitive life; but only that purest mind that is inspired from above, that partakes of a heavenly and Divine portion, that only despises the body,' etc., with much more of like import.

Yea, so have some been transported with the desire of immortality, that (being wholly ignorant of the sin of self-murder) they could not forbear doing violence on themselves.

Among the Indians, two thousand years ago, were a sort of wise men, as they were called, that held it a reproach to die of age or a disease, and were wont to burn themselves alive, thinking the flames were polluted if they came amidst them dead.<sup>3</sup>

The story of Cleombrotus<sup>4</sup> is famous, who, hearing Plato discourse of the immortality of the soul by the seaside, leapt from him into the sea, that he might presently be in that state; and it is storied,<sup>5</sup> that Nero refused to put Apollonius to death, though he were very much incensed against him, only upon the apprehensions he had that he was very desirous to die; because he would not so far gratify him.

I only make this improvement of all this; Christian principles and rules do neither hurry nor misguide men, but the *end*, as we have it revealed, should much more powerfully and constantly attract us. Nothing is more unsuitable to Christianity our *way*, nor to that blessedness the *end* of it, than a terrene spirit. They have nothing of the true light and

<sup>1</sup> Cato in Cic. *de Senect.*

<sup>2</sup> Philo Judæus.

<sup>3</sup> Q. Curt. lib. viii.

<sup>4</sup> Cicero. *Quæst. Tuscul.*

<sup>5</sup> *Scil. Domitianus, aliquoties sic dictus.* Philostr. in Vit. Apoll. Tyanæi.

impress of the gospel now, nor are they ever like to attain the vision of the blessed face of God and the impress of his likeness hereafter, that desire it not above all things, and are not willing to quit all things else for it.

And is it not a just exprobaton of our earthliness and carnality, if mere philosophers and pagans should give better proof than we of a spirit erected above the world, and alienated from what is temporary and terrene? Shall their Gentilism outvie our Christianity? Methinks a generous indignation of this reproach should inflame our souls, and contribute somewhat to the refining of them to a better and more spiritual temper.

Now, therefore, O all you that name yourselves by that worthy name of Christians; that profess the religion taught by him that was not of the earth, earthly, but the Lord from heaven; you that are "partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the great Apostle and High Priest of your profession," who only took our flesh that we might partake of his Spirit, bore our earthly that we might bear his heavenly image, descended that he might cause us to ascend. Seriously bethink yourselves of the scope and end of his apostleship and priesthood. He was sent out from God to invite and conduct you to him, to bring you into the communion of his glory and blessedness. He came upon a message and treaty of peace; to discover his Father's love and win yours; to let you know how kind thoughts the God of love had conceived to you-wards; and that, however you had hated him without cause, and were bent to do so without end, he was not so affected towards you: to settle a friendship, and to admit you to the participation of his eternal glory. Yea, he came to give an instance, and exemplify to the world in his own person, how much of heaven he could make to dwell in mortal flesh; how possible he could render it, to live in this world as unrelated to it; how gloriously the Divine life could triumph over all the infirmities of frail humanity: and so leave men a certain proof and pledge, to what perfections human nature should be improved by his grace and Spirit, in all them that should

resign themselves to his conduct, and follow his steps; that heaven and earth were not so far asunder, but he knew how to settle a commerce and intercourse between them; that a heavenly life was possible to be transacted here, and certain to be gloriously rewarded and perfected hereafter.

And having testified these things, he seals the testimony, and opens the way for the accomplishment of all by his death. Your heavenly Apostle becomes a Priest and a Sacrifice at once: that no doubt might remain among men, of his sincerity in what, even dying, he ceased not to profess and avow; and that by his own propitiatory blood a mutual reconciliation might be wrought between God and you, that your hearts might be won to him, and possessed with an ingenuous shame of your ever having been his enemies; and that his displeasure might for ever cease towards you, and be turned into everlasting friendship and love; that, eternal redemption being obtained, heaven might be opened to you, and you finally be received to the glory of God,—your hearts being bent thitherward and made willing to run through whatsoever difficulties of life or death to attain it. Do not think that Christ came into the world and died to procure the pardon of your sins, and so translate you to heaven, while your hearts should still remain cleaving to the earth. He came and returned, to prepare a way for you, and then call, not drag you thither; that by his precepts, and promises, and example, and spirit, he might form and fashion your souls to that glorious state; and make you willing to abandon all things for it. And lo! now the God of all grace is calling you by Jesus Christ unto his eternal glory. Direct then your eyes and hearts to that mark, “the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.” It is ignominious, by the common suffrage of the civilized world, not to intend the proper business of our calling. It is *your* calling to forsake this world and mind the other; make haste then to quit yourselves of your entanglements, of all earthly dispositions and affections. Learn to live in this world as those that are not of it; that expect every day, and wish, to leave it; whose hearts are gone already.



It is dreadful to die with pain and regret; to be forced out of the body; to die a violent death, and go away with an unwilling, reluctant heart. "The wicked is driven away in his wickedness." Fain he would stay longer, but cannot. "He hath not power over the spirit, to retain the spirit, nor hath he power in death." He must away whether he will or no; and indeed much against his will. So it cannot but be, where there is not a previous knowledge and love of a better state; where the soul understands it not, and is not effectually attempered and framed to it.

O get then the lovely image of the future glory into your minds. Keep it ever before your eyes. Make it familiar to your thoughts. Imprint daily there these words, "I shall behold thy face, I shall be satisfied with thy likeness." And see that your souls be enriched with that *righteousness*, have inwrought into them that holy rectitude, that may dispose them to that blessed state. Then will you die with your own consent, and go away, not driven, but allured and drawn. You will go, as "the redeemed of the Lord, with everlasting joy upon your heads;" as those that know whither you go, even to a state infinitely worthy of your desires and choice, and where it is best for you to be. You will part with your souls, not by a forcible separation, but a joyful surrender and resignation. They will dislodge from this earthly tabernacle, rather as putting it off than having it rent and torn away.

Loosen yourselves from this body by degrees, as we do anything we would remove from a place where it sticks fast. Gather up your spirits into themselves. Teach them to look upon themselves as a distinct thing. Inure them to the thoughts of a dissolution. Be continually as taking leave. Cross and disprove the common maxim, and let your hearts, which they use to say are wont to die last, die first. Prevent death, and be mortified towards every earthly thing beforehand; that death may have nothing to kill but your body; and that you may not die a double death in one hour, and suffer the death of your body and of your *love* to it both at once; much less that *this* should survive to your greater and even incurable misery.

Shake off your bands and fetters, the terrene affections that so closely confine you to the house of your bondage. And lift up your heads in expectation of the approaching jubilee, the day of your redemption; when you are to go out free, and enter into the glorious liberty of the sons of God; when you shall serve, and groan, and complain no longer. Let it be your continual song and the matter of your daily praise, that the time of your happy deliverance is hastening on; that ere long you shall be absent from the body, and present with the Lord; that he hath not doomed you to an everlasting imprisonment within those close and clayey walls, wherein you have been so long shut up from the beholding of his sight and glory. In the thoughts of this, while the outward man is sensibly perishing, let the inward revive and be renewed day by day. 'What prisoner would be sorry to see the walls of his prison-house,' so a heathen speaks,<sup>1</sup> 'mouldering down, and the hopes arriving to him of being delivered out of that darkness that had buried him, of recovering his liberty, and enjoying the free air and light. What champion, inured to hardship, would stick to throw off rotten rags, and rather expose a naked, placid, free body, to naked, placid, free air? The truly generous soul,'—so he a little above,—'never leaves the body against its will.'

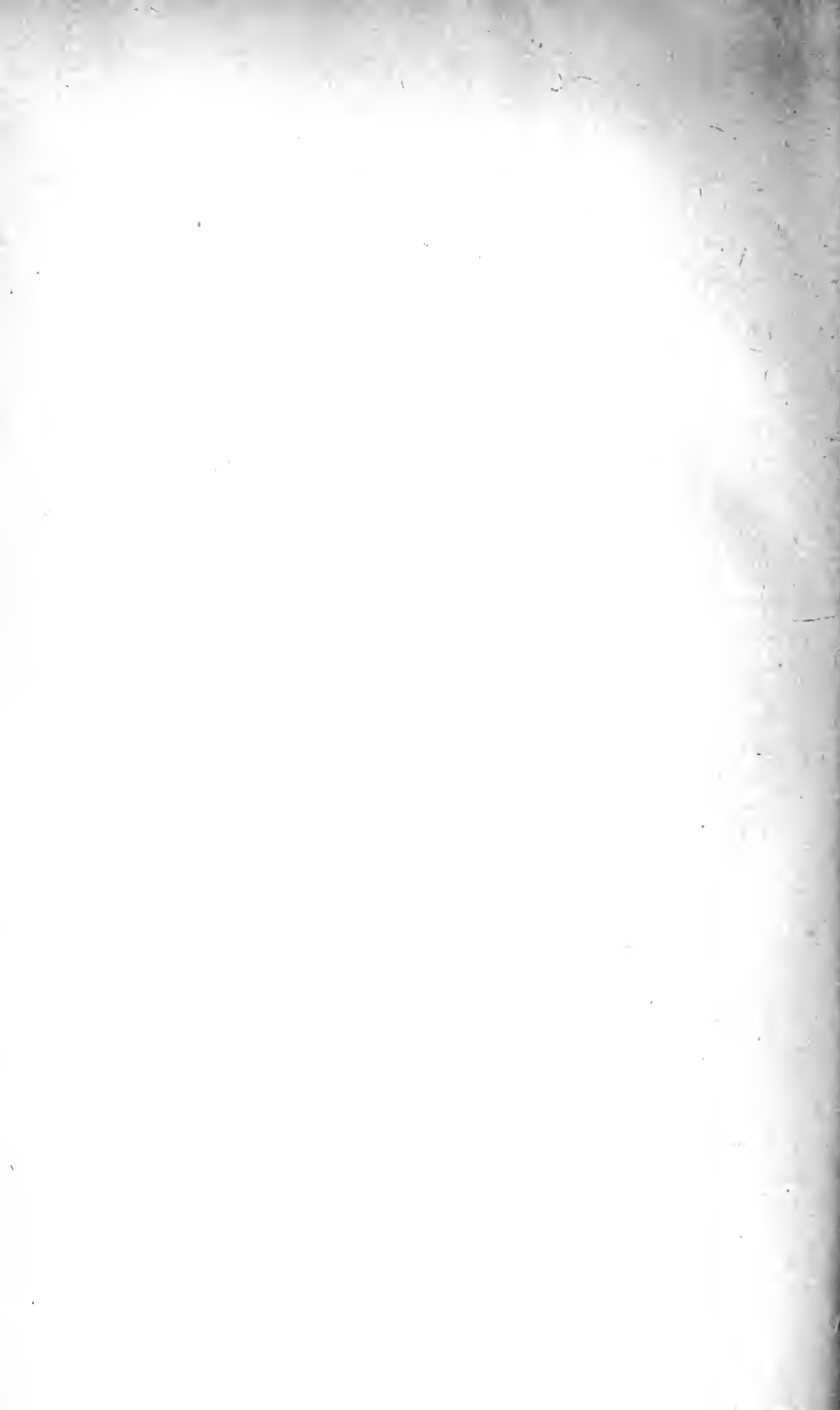
Rejoice that it is the gracious pleasure of thy good God, thou shalt not always inhabit a dungeon, nor lie amidst so impure and disconsolate darkness; that he will shortly exchange thy filthy garments for those of salvation and praise. The end approaches. As you turn over these leaves, so are your days turned over. And as you are now arrived to the end of this book, God will shortly write *finis* to the book of your life on earth, and show you your names written in heaven, in the book of that life which shall never end.

<sup>1</sup> Max. Tyr. *Dissert.* xli.

THE  
VANITY OF THIS MORTAL LIFE;

OR, OF

MAN CONSIDERED ONLY IN HIS PRESENT MORTAL STATE.



TO THE DESERVEDLY HONOURED

JOHN UPTON, ESQ., OF LUPTON,

WITH THE MANY SURVIVING BRANCHES FORMERLY SPRUNG OUT OF THAT RELIGIOUS  
FAMILY, AND THE WORTHY CONSORTS OF ANY OF THEM.

---

SINCE it is the lot of the following pages to be exposed to public view, there is somewhat of justice in it, to yourselves or me, that the world do also know wherein divers of you have contributed thereto ; that if anything redound hence to public advantage, it may be understood to be owing in part to you ; or if it shall be reckoned a useless trouble, in this way to represent things so obvious to common notice, and whereof so much is already said, all the blame of the publication be not imputed, as it doth not belong, to me only.

But I must here crave your excuse, that on this account, I give you a narrative of what, for the most part, you already know, and may possibly not delight to remember : both because it is now become convenient that others should know it too, and not necessary to be put into a distinct preface ; and because to yourselves the review of those less pleasing passages may be attended with a fruit which may be some recompence for their want of pleasure.

Therefore give the reader leave to take notice, and let it not be grievous to you that I remind you, that after this your near relation,<sup>1</sup> whose death gave the occasion of the ensuing meditations, had from his youth lived between twenty and thirty years of his age in Spain, your joint importunity had at length obtained from

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Anthony Upton, the son of John Upton, Esq., of Lupton.

him a promise of returning ; whereof when you were in somewhat a near expectation, a sudden disease in so few days landed him in another world, that the first notice you had of his death or sickness, was by the arrival of that vessel, clad in mourning attire, which, according to his own desire in his sickness, brought over the deserted body to its native place of Lupton ; that thence it might find a grave, where it first received a soul ; and obtain a mansion in the earth, where first it became one to a reasonable spirit.

A little before this time, the desire of an interview among yourselves (which the distance of your habitations permitted not to be frequent) had induced divers of you to appoint a meeting at some middle place, whereby the trouble of a long journey might be conveniently shared among you. But before that agreed resolution could have its accomplishment, this sad and most unexpected event intervening, altered the place, the occasion, and design of your meeting ; but effected the thing itself, and brought together no less than twenty, the brothers and sisters of the deceased, or their consorts, besides his many nephews and nieces and other relations, to the mournful solemnity of the interment. Within the time of our being together upon this sad account, this passage of the psalmist here insisted on came into discourse among us ; being introduced by an occasion which though then, it may be, unknown to the most of you, was somewhat rare and not unworthy observation,—namely, that one of yourselves having been some time before surprised with an unusual sadness, joined with an expectation of ill tidings upon no known cause, had so urgent an inculcation of those words, as not to be able to forbear the revolving them much of the former part of that day in the latter part whereof the first notice was brought to that place of this so near a relation's decease.

Certain months after, some of you with whom I was then conversant in London, importuned me to have somewhat from me in writing upon that subject : whereto I at length agreed, with a cautionary request, that it might not come into many hands, but might remain (as the occasion was) among yourselves. Nor will I deny it to have been some inducement to me to apply my thoughts to that theme, that it had been so suggested as was said. For such presages and abodings as that above mentioned, may reason-

ably be thought to owe themselves to some more steady and universal principle than casualty or the party's own imagination ; by whose more noble recommendation,—that such a gloomy premonition might carry with it not what should only afflict, but also instruct and teach,—this subject did seem offered to our meditation.

Accordingly therefore, after my return to the place of my abode, I hastily drew up the substance of the following discourse ; which, a year ago, I transmitted into their hands who desired it from me, without reserving to myself any copy. Hereby it became difficult to me presently to comply—besides divers considerations I might have against the thing itself—with that joint request of some of you, in a letter which my removal into another kingdom occasioned to come long after to my hands, that I would consent these papers might be made public. For, as I have reason to be conscious to myself of disadvantages enough to discourage any undertaking of that kind ; so I am more especially sensible that so cursory and superficial a management of a subject so very important,—though its private occasion and design at first might render it excusable to those few friends for whom it was meant,—cannot but be liable to the hard censure, not to say the contempt, of many whom discourses of this kind should more designedly serve. And therefore, though my willingness to be serviceable in keeping alive the apprehension and expectation of another state, my value of your judgments who conceive what is here done may be useful thereto, and my peculiar respects to yourselves, the members and appendants of a family to which, besides some relation, I have many obligations and endearments, do prevail with me not wholly to deny : yet pardon me that I have suspended my consent to this publication till I should have a copy transmitted to me from some of you, for my necessary review of so hasty a production ; that I might not offer to the view of the world what, after I had penned it, had scarce passed my own. And now, after so long an expectation, those papers are but this last week come to my hands. I here return them, with little or no alteration, save that what did more directly concern the occasion, towards the close, is transferred hither,—but with the addition of almost all the directive part of the use ; which I submit together to your pleasure and dispose.

And I shall now take the liberty to add, my design in con-

senting to this request of yours, and I hope the same of you in making it, is not to erect a monument to the memory of the deceased, (which how little doth it signify!) nor to spread the fame of your family, (though the visible blessing of God upon it, in the fruitfulness, piety, and mutual love, wherein it hath flourished for some generations, do challenge observation, both as to those branches of it which grow in their own more natural soil, and those, as I have now occasion to take further notice, that I find to have been transplanted into another country;) but that such into whose hands this little treatise shall fall, may be induced to consider the true end of their beings; to examine and discuss the matter more thoroughly with themselves, what it may or can be supposed such a sort of creatures was made and placed on this earth for: that when they shall have reasoned themselves into a settled apprehension of the worthy and important ends they are capable of attaining, and are visibly designed to, they may be seized with a noble disdain of living beneath themselves and the bounty of their Creator.

It is obvious to common observation, how flagrant and intense a zeal men are often wont to express for their personal reputation, the honour of their families, yea, or for the glory of their nation: but how few are acted by that more laudable and enlarged zeal for the dignity of mankind! How few are they that resent the common and vile depression of their own species; or that, while in things of lightest consideration they strive with emulous endeavour that they and their relatives may excel other men, do reckon it a reproach if, in matters of the greatest consequence, they and all men should not excel beasts! How few that are not contented to confine their utmost designs and expectations within the same narrow limits, through a mean and inglorious self-despiciency, confessing in themselves, to the truth's and their own wrong, an incapacity of greater things: and with most injurious falsehood, proclaiming the same of all mankind besides!

If he that, amidst the hazards of a dubious war, betrays the interest and honour of his country, be justly infamous, and thought worthy severest punishments, I see not why a debauched sensualist, that lives as if he were created only to indulge his appetite,—that so vilifies the notion of man, as if he were made but to eat and drink and sport, to please only his sense and fancy,—that, in this



time and state of conflict between the powers of this present world and those of the world to come, quits his party, bids open defiance to humanity, abjures the noble principles and ends, forsakes the laws and society of all that are worthy to be esteemed men, abandons the common and rational hope of mankind concerning a future immortality, and herds himself among brute creatures ;—I say, I see not why such an one should not be scorned and abhorred as a traitor to the whole race and nation of reasonable creatures, as a fugitive from the tents, and deserter of the common interest of men ; and that, both for the vileness of his practice and the danger of his example.

And who, that hath open eyes, beholds not the dreadful instances and increase of this defection ; when it hath prevailed to that degree already, that in civilized, yea, in Christian countries,—as they yet affect to be called,—the practice is become fashionable and in credit, which can square with no other principle than the disbelief of a future state, as if it were but a mere poetic, or at best a political fiction ? And, as if so impudent infidelity would pretend not to a connivance only, but a sanction, it is reckoned an odd and uncouth thing for a man to live as if he thought otherwise, and a great presumption to seem to dissent from the profane infidel crew. As if the matter were already formally determined in the behalf of irreligion, and the doctrine of the life to come had been clearly condemned in open council as a detestable heresy ! For what tenet was ever more exploded and hooted at, than that practice is which alone agrees with this ? Or what series or course of repeated villanies can ever be more ignominious than, in vulgar estimate, a course of life so transacted as doth become the expectation of a blessed immortality ? And what ! after so much written and spoken by persons of all times and religions for the immortality of the human soul, and so common an acknowledgment thereof by Pagans, Mohammedans, Jews and Christians, is man now at last condemned and doomed to a perpetual death, as it were, by the consent and suffrage even of men ; and that too without trial or hearing, and not by the reason of men, but their lusts only ? As if, with a loud and violent cry, they would assassinate and stifle this belief and hope, but not judge it. And shall the matter be thus given up as hopeless, and the victory be yielded to prosperous

wickedness, and a too successful conspiracy of vile miscreants against both their Maker and their own stock and race ?

One would think, whosoever have remaining in them any conscience of obligation and duty to the common Parent and Author of our beings, any remembrance of our Divine original, any breathings of our ancient hope, any sense of human honour, any resentments of so vile an indignity to the nature of man, any spark of a just and generous indignation for so opprobrious a contumely to their own kind and order in the creation, should oppose themselves with an heroic vigour to this treacherous and unnatural combination.

And let us, my worthy friends, be provoked in our several capacities, to do our parts herein ; and at least, so to live and converse in this world, that the course and tenor of our lives may import an open asserting of our hopes in another, and may let men see we are not ashamed to own the belief of a life to come. Let us by a patient continuance in well-doing,—how low designs soever others content themselves to pursue,—seek honour, glory, and immortality to ourselves ; and by our avowed, warrantable ambition in this pursuit, justify our great and bountiful Creator, who hath made us not in vain, but for so high and great things ; and glorify our blessed Redeemer, who, amidst the gloomy and disconsolate darkness of this wretched world, when it was overspread with the shadow of death, hath brought life and immortality to light in the gospel. Let us labour both to feel and express the power of that religion which hath the inchoation of the participated Divine life for its principle, and the perfection and eternal perpetuation thereof for its scope and end.

Nor let the time that hath since elapsed be found to have worn out with you the useful impressions which this monitory, surprising instance of our mortality did at first make. But give me leave to inculcate from it what was said to you when the occasion was fresh and new ; that we labour more deeply to apprehend God's dominion over his creatures ; and that he made us principally for himself, and for ends that are to be compassed in the future state, not for the temporary satisfaction and pleasure of one another in this world. Otherwise Providence had never been guilty of such a solecism, to take out one from a family long famous for so exemplary mutual love, and dispose him into so remote a part, not permitting

to most of his nearest relations the enjoyment of him for almost thirty years, and therein all the flower of his age; and at last, when you were expecting the man, send you home the breathless frame wherein he lived. Yet it was not contemptible that you had that, and that dying as Joseph in a strange land, he gave also "commandment concerning his bones;" that though in his life he was mostly separated from his brethren, he might in death be gathered to his fathers. It was some evidence, though you wanted not better, that amidst the traffic of Spain, he more esteemed the religion of England, and therefore would rather his dust should associate with theirs with whom also he would rather his spirit should.

But whatever it did evidence, it occasioned so much, that you had that so general meeting with one another, which otherwise probably you would not have had, nor are likely again to have,—so hath Providence scattered you,—in this world: and that it proved a more serious meeting than otherwise it might; for however it might blamelessly have been designed to have met together at a cheerful table, God saw it fitter to order the meeting at a mournful grave, and to make the house that received you—the native place to many of you—the house of mourning rather than of feasting. The one would have had more quick relishes of a present pleasure, but the other was likely to yield the more lasting sense of an after profit. Nor was it an ill errand to come together (though from afar for divers of you) to learn to die; as you might, by being so sensibly put in mind of it, though you did not see that very part acted itself. And accept this endeavour to further you in your preparations for that change, as some testimony of the remembrance I retain of your most obliging respects and love, and of my still continuing

Your affectionate and respectful Kinsman,

And Servant in our common Lord,

J. HOWE.

ANTRIM, *April 12, 1671.*



## THE VANITY OF MAN AS MORTAL.

PSALM lxxxix. 47, 48.

“REMEMBER HOW SHORT MY TIME IS : WHEREFORE HAST THOU MADE ALL MEN IN VAIN ? WHAT MAN IS HE THAT LIVETH, AND SHALL NOT SEE DEATH ? SHALL HE DELIVER HIS SOUL FROM THE HAND OF THE GRAVE ? SELAH.”

WE are not concerned to be particular and curious in the inquiry touching the special reference or occasion of the foregoing complaints, from the 37th verse. It is enough to take notice, for our present purpose, that besides the evil which had already befallen the plaintiff, a further danger nearly threatened him, that carried death in the face of it, and suggested somewhat frightful apprehensions of his mortal state ; which drew from him this quick and sensible petition in reference to his own private concern, “Remember how short my time is ;” and did presently direct his eye with a sudden glance from the view of *his own*, to reflect on the common condition of *man*, whereof he expresses his resentment, first in a hasty expostulation with God, “Wherefore hast thou made all men in vain ?” then secondly, in a pathetic discourse with himself, representing the reason of that rough charge, “What man is he that liveth, and shall not see death ? shall he deliver,” etc. ; as much as to say, ‘When I add to the consideration of my short time, that of dying mankind, and behold a dark and deadly shade universally overspreading the world, the whole species of human creatures vanishing, quitting the stage round about me, and disappearing almost as soon as they show themselves, have I not a fair and plausible ground for that seemingly rude challenge ? Why is there so unaccountable a phe-

nomenon,—such a creature made to no purpose? the noblest part of this inferior creation brought forth into being, without any imaginable design? I know not how to untie the knot upon this only view of the case, or avoid the absurdity. It is hard sure to design the supposal, (or what it may yet seem hard to suppose,) “that all men were made in vain.”

It appears the expostulation was somewhat passionate, and did proceed upon the sudden view of this disconsolate case, very abstractly considered, and by itself only; and that he did not in that instant look beyond it to a better and more comfortable scene of things. An eye bleared with present sorrow sees not so far, nor comprehends so much at one view, as it would at another time; or as it doth presently, when the tear is wiped out, and its own beams have cleared it up.

We see he did quickly look farther, and had got a more lightsome prospect, when in the next words we find him contemplating God’s sworn loving-kindness unto David;<sup>1</sup> the truth and stability whereof he at the same time expressly acknowledges, while only the form of his speech doth but seem to import a doubt,—“Where are they?” But yet, they were *sworn in truth*: upon which argument he had much enlarged in the former part of the psalm, and it still lay deep in his soul, though he were now a little diverted from the present consideration of it; which, since it turns the scales with him, it will be needful to inquire into the weight and import of it. Nor have we any reason to think that David was either so little a prophet or a saint, as in his own thoughts to refer those magnificent things (the instances of that loving-kindness confirmed by oath, which he recites from the 19th verse of the psalm to the 38th, as spoken from the mouth of God, and declared to him by vision) to the dignity of his own person, and the grandeur and perpetuity of his kingdom; as if it were ultimately meant of himself, that God would “make him his first-born, higher than the kings of the earth,”<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> v. 49.

<sup>2</sup> v. 27.

when there were divers greater kings, and in comparison of the little spot over which he reigned, a vastly spreading monarchy that still overtopped him all his time, as the same and successive monarchies did his successors; or that it was intended of the secular glory and stability of his throne and family; that God would “make them to endure for ever, and be as the days of heaven,”—that they should be “as the sun before him, and be established for ever as the moon, and as a faithful witness in heaven.”<sup>1</sup>

That God himself meant it not so, experience and the event of things hath shown; and that these predictions cannot otherwise have had their accomplishment than in the succession of the spiritual and everlasting kingdom of the Messiah (whom God raised up out of his loins to sit on his throne<sup>2</sup>) unto his temporal kingdom: wherein it is therefore ended by perfection rather than corruption,—these prophecies being then made good, not in the kind which they literally imported, but in another far more noble kind. In which sense God’s covenant with him must be understood, which he insists on so much in this psalm,<sup>3</sup> even unto that degree as to challenge God upon it, as if in the present course of His providence he were now about to make it void;<sup>4</sup> though he sufficiently expresses his confidence both before and after that this could never be. But it is plain it hath been made void long enough ago, in the subversion of David’s kingdom; and in that we see his throne and family have *not* been established for ever, have *not* endured as the days of heaven, if those words had no other than their obvious and literal meaning. And if any, to clear the truth of God, would allege the wickedness of his posterity, first making a breach and disobliging him, this is prevented by what we find inserted in reference to this very case: “If his children forsake my law, and walk not in my judgments, . . . then will I visit their transgression with the rod. . . . Nevertheless my loving-kindness will I not utterly

<sup>1</sup> vv. 29, 36, 37.

<sup>2</sup> Acts ii. 30.

<sup>3</sup> vv. 28—34.

<sup>4</sup> v. 39.

take from him, nor suffer my faithfulness to fail. My covenant will I not break, nor alter the thing that is gone out of my lips."<sup>1</sup> All which is solemnly sealed up with this, "Once have I sworn by my holiness that I will not lie unto David:"<sup>2</sup> so that they that will make a scruple to accuse the holy God of falsehood, in that which with so much solemnity He hath promised and sworn, must not make any to admit his further intendment in these words. And that He had a further, even a mystical and spiritual intendment in this covenant with David, is yet more fully evident from that of the prophet Isaiah: "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters. . . . Incline your ear, and come unto me; . . . and I will make an everlasting covenant with you, even the sure mercies of David. Behold, I have given him for a witness to the people, a leader and commander,"<sup>3</sup> etc. What means this universal invitation to all thirsty persons, with the subjoined encouragement of making with them an everlasting covenant (the same which we have here, no doubt, as to the principal parts, and which we find him mentioning also,<sup>4</sup> with characters exactly corresponding to these of the prophet), even the sure mercies of David? The meaning sure could not be, that they should be all secular kings and princes, and their posterity after them for ever; which we see is the verbal sound and tenor of this covenant.

And now, since it is evident God intended a mystery in this covenant, we may be as well assured He intended no deceit, and that He designed not a delusion to David by the vision in which He gave it. Can we think He went about to gratify him with a solemn fiction, and draw him into a false and fanciful faith; or so to hide His meaning from him, as to tempt him into the belief of what He never meant? And to what purpose was this so special revelation by vision, if it were not to be understood truly, at least, if not yet perfectly and fully? It is left us, therefore, to collect, that

<sup>1</sup> vv. 30—34.<sup>2</sup> v. 35.<sup>3</sup> Isa. lv. 1—5.<sup>4</sup> 2 Sam. xxiii. 5.



David was not wholly uninstructed how to refer all this to the kingdom of the Messiah. And he hath given sufficient testimony, in that part of sacred writ whereof God used him as a penman, that he was of another temper than to place the sum and chief of his expectations and consolations in his own and his posterity's worldly greatness. And to put us out of doubt, our Saviour, who well knew his spirit, expressly enough tells us,<sup>1</sup> that he in spirit called Him Lord, when he said, "The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool;"<sup>2</sup> a plain discovery how he understood God's revelation touching the future concerns of his kingdom, and the covenant relating thereto, namely, as a figure and type of Christ's, who must reign till all His enemies be subdued.

Nor was he in that ignorance about the nature and design of Christ's kingdom, but that he understood its reference to another world and state of things, even beyond all the successions of time and the mortal race of men; so as to have his eye fixed upon the happy eternity which a joyful resurrection must introduce, and whereof Christ's resurrection should be the great and most assuring pledge. And of this we need no fuller an evidence than the express words of the apostle Peter,<sup>3</sup> who, after he had cited those lofty, triumphant strains of David, "I have set the Lord always before me: because he is at my right hand, I shall not be moved. Therefore my heart is glad, and my glory rejoiceth; my flesh also shall rest in hope: for thou wilt not leave my soul in hell" (or, "in the state of darkness"); "neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption. Thou wilt show me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore;"<sup>4</sup> all which, he tells us,<sup>5</sup> was spoken concerning Christ;—he more expressly subjoins,<sup>6</sup> that "David being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xxii. 43.<sup>2</sup> Ps. cx. 1.<sup>3</sup> Acts ii. 25, etc.<sup>4</sup> Ps. xvi. 8—11.<sup>5</sup> v. 25.<sup>6</sup> vv. 30, 31.

his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne; he, seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ." It appears he spake not at random, but as knowing and seeing before what he spake, "that *his* soul was not left in hell," etc.; nor can we think he thus rejoices in another's resurrection, forgetting his own.

And yet we have a further evidence from the apostle Paul, who affirms, that "the promise made to the fathers, God had fulfilled to their children, in that he had raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee. And as concerning that he raised him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, he said on this wise, I will give you the sure mercies of David;"<sup>1</sup> which it is now apparent must be understood of eternal mercies, such as Christ's resurrection and triumph over the grave doth insure to us. He therefore looked upon what was spoken concerning his kingdom here, as spoken ultimately of Christ's, the kingdom whereby He governs and conducts His faithful subjects through all the troubles of life and terrors of death,—through both whereof He Himself, as their King and Leader, hath shown the way,—unto eternal blessedness; and upon the covenant made with him as the covenant of God in Christ, concerning that blessedness and the requisites thereto. And to say no more in this argument, how otherwise can we conceive he should have that fulness of consolation in this covenant when he lay a-dying, as we find him expressing,<sup>2</sup> for these were some of the last words of David, as we see in the first verse, "He hath made with me an everlasting covenant, ordered in all things, and sure; for this is all my salvation, and all my desire?" What so great joy and solace could a dying man take in a covenant made with him, when he had done with this world and was to expect no more in it, if he took it not to concern a future blessedness in another world? Was it only for the hoped prosperity of his house and family when he was gone? This,

<sup>1</sup> Acts xiii. 32—34.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Sam. xxiii. 5.

which is the only thing we can fasten on, he plainly secludes in the next words,—“Although he make it not to grow.”

Therefore it was his reflection upon those loving-kindnesses mentioned in the former part of the psalm, contained in God's covenant, and confirmed by His oath, but understood according to the sense and import already declared, that caused this sudden turn in David's spirit; and made him that lately spake as out of a Golgotha, as if he had nothing but death in his eye and thoughts, to speak now in so different a strain, and—after some additional pleadings, in which his faith further recovers itself—to conclude this psalm with solemn praise: “Blessed be the Lord for evermore. Amen, and Amen.”

We see then, the contemplation of his own and all men's mortality, abstractly and alone considered, clothed his soul with black, wrapped it up in gloomy darkness, makes the whole kind of human creatures seem to him an obscure shadow, an empty vanity: but his recalling into his thoughts a succeeding state of immortal life clears up the day, makes him and all things appear in another hue, gives a fair account why such a creature as man was made; and therein makes the whole frame of things in this inferior world look with a comely and well-composed aspect, as the product of a wise and rational design. Whence therefore, we have this ground of discourse fairly before us in the words themselves: *That the short time of man on earth, limited by a certain, unavoidable death, if we consider it abstractly by itself, without respect to a future state, carries that appearance and aspect with it, as if God had made all men in vain.* That is said to be vain, according to the import of the word נִזְוָה, here used, which is either *false*, a fiction, an appearance only, a shadow, or evanid thing; or which is *useless*, unprofitable, and to no valuable purpose. The life of man in the case now supposed, may be truly styled vain either way. And we shall say somewhat to each, but to the former more briefly:—

I. It were vain; that is, little other than a *show*, a mere *shadow*, a *semblance of being*. We must indeed, in the present

case, even abstract him from himself, and consider him only as a mortal, dying thing; and, as to that of him which is so, what a contemptible nothing is he! There is an appearance of somewhat; but search a little, and inquire into it, and it vanishes into a mere nothing,—is found a lie, a piece of falsehood, as if he did but feign a being, and were not. And so we may suppose the Psalmist speaking, upon the view of his own and the common case of man; how fast all were hastening out of life, and laying down the being which they rather seemed to have assumed and borrowed than to possess and own: ‘Lord, why hast thou made man such a fictitious thing,—given him such a mock-being? Why hast thou brought forth into the light of this world such a sort of creatures, that rather seem to be, than are; that have so little of solid and substantial being, and so little deserve to be taken for realities; that only serve to cheat one another into an opinion of their true existence, and presently vanish and confess their falsehood? What hovering shadows, what uncertain entities are they! In a moment they are and are not. I know not when to say I have seen a man. It seems as if there were some such things before my eyes; I persuade myself that I see them move and walk to and fro, that I talk and converse with them; but instantly my own sense is ready to give my sense the lie. They are on the sudden dwindled away, and force me almost to acknowledge a delusion. I am but mocked with a show; and what seemed a reality, proves an imposture. Their pretence to being is but fiction and falsehood, a cozenage of over-credulous, unwary sense. They only personate what they are thought to be, and quickly put off their very selves as a disguise.’ This is agreeable to the language of Scripture elsewhere: “Surely men of low degree are vanity, and men of high degree are a lie,” etc.<sup>1</sup>

In two respects may the present state of man seem to approach near to nothingness, and so admit this rhetorication of the Psalmist, as if he were in this sense a vain thing, a

<sup>1</sup> Ps. lxii. 9.

figment, or a lie,—namely, in respect of the *minuteness* and *instability* of this his material and perishable being:—

1. The *minuteness*, the small portion or degree of being which this mortal part of man hath in it. It is truly said of all created things, “Their *non-esse* is more than their *esse*,”—they have more *no-being* than *being*. It is only some limited portion that they have, but there is an infinitude of being which they have not. And so coming infinitely nearer to nothingness than fulness of being, they may well enough wear the name of *nothing*. Wherefore the first and fountain Being justly appropriates to himself the name, “I AM;” yea, tells us he is, and there is none besides him; therein leaving no other name than that of *nothing* unto creatures. And how much more may this be said of the material and mortal part, this outside of man, whatever of him is obnoxious to death and the grave!—which alone abstractly looked on, is the subject of the Psalmist’s present consideration and discourse.

By how much anything hath more of matter, it hath the less of actual essence; matter being rather a capacity of being than being itself, or a dark umbrage or shadow of it, actually nothing but εἰδωλον, ψευδος, (as are the expressions of a noble philosopher,<sup>1</sup>)—a mere semblance, or a lie. And it is the language not of philosophers only, but of the Holy Ghost, concerning all the nations of men, that “they are as nothing, less than nothing, and vanity.”<sup>2</sup> What a scarcity then, and penury of being, must we suppose in each individual; especially if we look alone upon the outer part, or rather the umbrage or shadow of the man!

2. The *instability* and fluidness of it. The visible and corporeal being of man hath nothing steady or consistent in it. Consider his exterior frame and composition,—he is no time all himself at once. There is a continual defluence and access of parts; so that some account each climacteric of his age changes his whole fabric. Whence it would follow, that besides his statique individuating principle, from which we

<sup>1</sup> Plotin. En. 2. i. 6.

<sup>2</sup> Isa. xl. 17.

are now to abstract, nothing of him remains;—he is another thing; the former man is vanished and gone; while he is, he hastens away, and within a little is not. In respect to the duration, as well as the degree of his being, he is next to nothing. “He openeth his eyes, and he is not;”<sup>1</sup>—gone in the twinkling of an eye. There is nothing in him stable enough to admit a fixed look. So it is with the whole scene of things in this material world; as was the true maxim of an ancient,<sup>2</sup> “All things flow, nothing stays, after the manner of a river:” the same thing which the Apostle’s words more elegantly express, “The fashion of this world passeth away,”<sup>3</sup>—the scheme, the show, the pageantry of it. He speaks of it but as an appearance, as if he knew not whether to call it something or nothing,—it was so near to vanishing into nothing. And therefore he there requires that the affections, which mutual nearness in relation challenges, be as if they were not; that we rejoice in reference to one another (even most nearly related, as the occasion and scope of his discourse teach us to understand him), but as if we rejoiced not; and weep, as if we wept not: which implies the objects merit no more, and are themselves as if they were not. Whence, therefore, a continued course of intense passion were very incongruous towards so discontinuing things.

And the whole state of man being but a show, the pomp and glittering of the greatest men make the most splendid and conspicuous part of it; yet all this we find is not otherwise reckoned of than “an image,” “a dream,” “a vision of the night;” “Every man at his best state is altogether vanity, . . . walketh in a vain show, . . . disquieteth himself in vain,”<sup>4</sup> etc. Of all without exception, it is pronounced, “Man is like to vanity; his days are as a shadow that passeth away:” as Ecclesiastes often, of all sublunary things, “Vanity of vanities,” etc.

II. But yet there is another notion of “vain,” as it

<sup>1</sup> Job xxvii. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Heracl.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. vii. 31.

<sup>4</sup> Ps. lxxiii. 20; Job xx. 8; Ps. xxxix. 5, 6.

signifies *useless*, unprofitable, or to no purpose. And in this sense also, if we consider the universal mortality of mankind, without respect to a future state, there was a specious ground for the expostulation, "Why hast thou made all men in vain?" Vanity in the former notion speaks the emptiness of a thing, absolutely and in itself considered; in this latter relatively, as it is referred to and measured by an end: that is in this sense vain, which serves to no end, or to no worthy and valuable end, which amounts to the same. For inasmuch as all ends, except the last, are means also to a further end; if the end immediately aimed at be vain and worthless, that which is referred to it, as it is so referred, cannot but be also vain. Whereupon now let us make trial what end we could in this case, think man made for; which will best be done by taking some view of his *nature*, and of *the ends for which*, upon that supposition, *we must suppose him made*:—

1. Of the former, (neglecting the strictness of philosophical disquisition,) no more is intended to be said than may comport with the design of a popular discourse. And it shall suffice therefore, only to take notice of what is more obvious in the nature of man, and subservient to the present purpose. And yet we are here to look farther than the mere surface and outside of man, which we only considered before, and to view his nature as it is in itself, and not as the supposition of its having nothing but what is mortal belonging to it would make it: for as the exility, and almost nothingness, of man's being, considered according to that supposition, did best serve to express the vanity of it, in the former notion that hath been given of a vain thing; so the excellency and solid substantiality of it, considered as it is in itself, will conduce most to the discovery of its vanity in this latter notion thereof,—that is, if we first consider that, and then the supposition of such a creature's being only made to perish. And if what shall be said herein do, in the sequel, tend to destroy that above-mentioned disposition,—as it, being established, would destroy the prime glory of human nature,—it can only be said, "*Magna est veritas*," etc.

In the meantime we may take a view, in the nature of man,—

(1.) Of his *intellective* powers. Hereby he frames notions of things, even of such things as are above the sphere of sense; of moral good and evil, right and wrong, what is virtuous and what is vicious; of abstract and universal natures; yea, and of a first Being and Cause, and of the wisdom, power, goodness, and other perfections, which must primarily agree to Him. Hereby he affirms and denies one thing of another, as he observes them to agree and disagree, and discerns the truth and falsehood of what is spoken or denied. He doth hereby infer one thing from another, and argue himself into firm and unwavering assent to many things; not only above the discovery of sense, but directly contrary to their sensible appearances.

(2.) His power of *determining himself*,—of choosing and refusing, according as things are estimated and do appear to him: where also it is evident how far the objects which this faculty is sometimes exercised about, do transcend the reach of all sensible nature; as well as the peculiar nobleness and excellency is remarkable of the faculty itself. It hath often for its object things of the highest nature, purely spiritual and Divine,—virtue, religion, God himself: so as that these (the faculty being repaired only by sanctifying grace, not now first put into the nature of man) are chosen by some, and, where it is not so, refused it is true by the most; but not by a mere *not-willing* of them (as mere brutal appetite also doth not-will them, which no way reaches the notion of a refusal), but by *rejecting* them with a positive aversion and dislike, wherein there is great iniquity and sin; which could not be but in a nature capable of the opposite temper.

And it is apparent this faculty hath the privilege of determining itself, so as to be exempt from the necessitating influence of anything foreign to it: upon the supposal whereof, the management of all human affairs, all treaties between man and man to induce a consent to this or that, the whole frame of government, all legislation and distribution of



public justice, do depend. For, take away this supposition, and these will presently appear most absurd and unjust. With what solemnity are applications and addresses made to the will of man upon all occasions! How is it courted, and solicited, and sued unto! But how absurd were it so to treat the other creatures, that act by a necessity of nature in all they do; to make supplications to the wind, or propound articles to a brute! And how unjust, to determine and inflict severe penalties for unavoidable and necessitated actions and omissions! These things occur to our first notice, upon any (a more sudden and cursory) view of the nature of man. And what should hinder but we may infer from these that there is further in his nature,—

(3.) A capacity of an *immortal state*; that is, that his nature is such that he may, if God so please, by the concurrent influence of his ordinary power and providence, without the help of a miracle, subsist in another state of life after this, even a state that shall not be liable to that impairment and decay that we find this subject to. More is not as yet contended for; and so much, methinks, none should make a difficulty to admit, from what is evidently found in him. For it may well be supposed that the admitting of this, at least, will seem much more easy to any free and unprejudiced reason, than to ascribe the operations before instanced in, to alterable or perishable matter, or indeed to any matter at all: it being justly presumed that none will ascribe to matter, as such, the powers of ratiocination or volition; for then every particle of matter must needs be rational and intelligent,—a high advance to what one would never have thought at all active. And how inconceivable is it, that the minute particles of matter, in themselves each of them destitute of any such powers, should, by their mutual intercourse with one another, become furnished with them; that they should be able to understand, deliberate, resolve, and choose, being assembled and duly disposed in counsel together, but apart, rest all in a deep and sluggish silence! Besides, if the particles of matter, howsoever modified and

moved to the utmost subtilty or tenuity, and to the highest vigour, shall then become intelligent and rational, how is it that we observe not, as any matter is more subtile and more swiftly and variously moved, it makes a discernibly nearer approach, proportionably, to the faculty and power of reasoning; and that nothing more of an aptitude or tendency towards intelligence and wisdom is to be perceived in an aspiring flame or a brisk wind than in a clod or a stone? If to understand, to define, to distinguish, to syllogize, be nothing else but the agitation and collision of the minute parts of rarified matter among one another, methinks some happy chemist or other, when he hath missed his designed mark, should have hit upon some such more noble product, and by one or other prosperous sublimation have caused some temporary resemblance, at least, of these operations. Or, if the paths of nature, in these affairs of the mind, be more abstruse, and quite out of the reach and road of artificial achievement, whence is it that nature herself,—that is vainly enough supposed by some to have been so happy as, by some casual strokes, to have fabricated the first of human creatures, that have since propagated themselves,—is grown so effete and dull, as never since to hit upon any like effect in the like way; and that no records of any time or age give us the notice of some such creature sprung out of some Epicurean womb of the earth, and elaborated by the only immediate hand of nature, so disposing the parts of matter in its constitution that it should be able to perform the operation belonging to the mind of man?

But if we cannot, with any tolerable pretence or show of reason, attribute these operations to any mere matter, then there must be somewhat else in man to which they may agree, that is distinct from his corruptible part, and that is therefore capable, by the advantage of its own nature, of subsisting hereafter, while God shall continue to it an influence agreeable to its nature, as He doth to other creatures. And hence it seems a modest and sober deduction, that there is in the nature of man at least a *capacity* of an immortal state.

2. Now, if we yet suppose there is actually no such state for man hereafter, it is our next business to view the ends for which, upon that supposition, he may be thought to have been made; whence we shall soon see there is not any of them whereof it may be said, 'This is what he was created for, as his adequate end.' And here we have a double agent to be accommodated with a suitable end;—*man now made, and God who made him*:—

(1.) Man himself: for it must be considered, that inasmuch as man is a creature capable of propounding to himself an end, and of acting knowingly and with design towards it, —and indeed incapable of acting otherwise as a man,—it would therefore not be reasonable to speak of him in this discourse as if he were merely passive, and to be acted only by another; but we must reckon him obliged, in subordination to his Maker, to intend and pursue himself the proper end for which He appointed and made him. And in reason we are to expect, that what God hath appointed to be his proper end should be such as is in itself most highly desirable, suitable to the utmost capacity of his nature, and attainable by his action; so carrying with it sufficient inducements, both of desire and hope, to a vigorous and rational prosecution of it. Thus we must, at least, conceive it to have been in the primitive institution of man's end, unto which the expostulation hath reference, "Wherefore hast thou made all men in vain?" And we can think of no ends which men either do or ought to propound to themselves, but by the direction of one of these principles,—*sense, reason, or religion*:—

i. *Sense* is actually the great dictator to the most of men, and, *de facto*, determines them to the mark and scope which they pursue, and animates the whole pursuit. Not that sense is by itself capable of designing an end, but it too generally inclines and biasses reason herein; so that reason hath no other hand in the business than only as a slave to sense,—to form the design and contrive the methods which may most conduce to it, for the gratification of sensual appetite and inclination at last.

And the appetitions of sense, wherein it hath so much mastery and dominion, are but such as we find enumerated, "The lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, the pride of life;"<sup>1</sup> or, if we understand the Apostle to use the name of "lust" objectively, the objects sufficiently connote the appetitions themselves: all which may fitly be referred to sense,—either the outward senses, or the fancy or imagination, which as deservedly comes under the same common denomination.

Now, who can think the satisfying of these lusts the commensurate end of man? Who would not, upon the supposition of no higher, say with the Psalmist, "Wherefore hast thou made all men in vain?" To what purpose was it for him to live in the world a few years upon this account only, and so go down to the place of silence? What is there in the momentary satisfaction of this mortal flesh; in his pleasing view of a mass of treasure, which he never brought with him into the world, but only heaped together, and so leaves not the world richer or poorer than he found it; what is there in the applause and admiration of fools, as the greater part always are; that we should think it worth the while for man to have lived for these things? If the question were put, 'Wherefore did God make man?' who would not be ashamed so to answer it; 'He made him to eat, and drink, and take his pleasure, to gather up wealth for he knows not whom; to use his inventions, that each one may become a talk and wonder to the rest; and then, when he hath fetched a few turns upon the theatre, and entertained the eyes of beholders with a short scene of impertinences, descend, and never be heard of more?' What! that he should come into the world furnished with such powers and endowments for this! It were a like case, as if one should be clad in scarlet to go to plough, or curiously instructed in arts and sciences to tend hogs. Or,—

ii. If we rise higher, to the view of such ends as more

<sup>1</sup> 1 John ii. 16.

refined *reason* may propose, within the compass only of this present state: we will suppose that it be either the acquisition of much knowledge, the furnishing his understanding with store of choice and well-digested notions, that he may please himself in being, or in having men think him, a learned wight. Death robs away all his gain. And what is the world the better? How little shall he enrich the clods, among which he must shortly lie down and have his abode! Or how little is the gain, when the labour and travail of so many years are all vanished and blown away with the last puff of his dying breath, and the fruit that remains is to have it said by those that survive, 'There lies learned dust!' That any part of his acquisitions in that kind, descends to others, little better's the case, when they that succeed are all hastening down also into the same ignoble dust. Besides that, the increase of sorrow: both because the objects of knowledge do but increase the more he knows—do multiply the more upon him, so as to beget a despair of ever knowing so much as he shall know himself to be ignorant of—and a thousand doubts about things he hath more deeply considered, which his more confident, undiscovered ignorance never dreamt of or suspected, and thence an unquietness, an irresolution of mind, which they that never drove at any such mark are, more contentedly, unacquainted with;—and also, because that by how much knowledge hath refined a man's soul, so much it is more sensible and perceptive of troublesome impressions from the disorderly state of things in the world; which they that converse only with earth and dirt have not spirits clarified and fine enough to receive. So that except a man's knowing more than others were to be referred to another state, the labour of attaining thereto, and other accessory disadvantages, would hardly ever be compensated by the fruit or pleasure of it: and unless a man would suppose himself made for torment, he would be shrewdly tempted to think a quiet and drowsy ignorance a happier state.

Or if that a man's reason, with a peculiarity of temper, guide him to an active negotiating life, rather than that of

contemplation, and determine him to the endeavour of *serv*ing mankind, or the community to which he belongs; by how much the worthier actions he performs, and by how much more he hath perfected and accomplished himself with parts and promptitude for such actions, the loss and vanity is but the greater thereby; since he, and those he affected to serve, are all going down to the silent grave. Of how little use are the politician, the statesman, the senator, the judge, or the eloquent man, if we lay aside the consideration of their subserviency to the keeping the world in a more composed and orderly state for the prosecution of the great designs of eternity, when ere long all their thoughts shall perish! What matter were it what became of the world, whether it be wise or foolish, rich or poor, quiet or unquiet, governed or ungoverned? Whoever should make their order and tranquillity their study, or that should intend their thoughts and endeavours to the finding out the exactest methods and rules of government and policy, should but do as they that should use a great deal of pains and art in the curious adorning and trimming up of a dying person; or as if some one, among many condemned persons, should be very solicitous to have them march with him in very exact order to the place of execution. If the world be not looked upon as an attiring-room to dress one's self in for an appearance on the eternal stage, but only as a great charnel-house, where they undress and put off themselves, to sleep in everlasting darkness,—how can we think it worth a thought, or to be the subject of any rational design or care? Who would not rather bless himself in a more rational neglect and regardlessness of all human affairs, and account an unconcerned indifference the highest wisdom! Yea,—

iii. If we suppose *religion* (which we need not, because it is mentioned in this order, conceive exclusive of reason, but rather perfective of it; for reason having first found out God, religion adores Him) to become with any the ruling principle, and to have the direction and government of the man, as to his way and end: how would even that languish with the

best, were the consideration of a future state laid aside, which with so few, notwithstanding it, hath any efficacy at all to command and govern their lives!

Religion terminates upon God, and upon Him under a double notion; either as we design service and honour to Him, or as from Him we design satisfaction and blessedness to ourselves. Now, if a man's thoughts and the intention of his mind be carried towards God under the former notion, how great an allay and abatement must it needs be to the vigour and zeal of his affection, who shall with the most sincere devotedness apply himself to serve His interest and glory, to reflect upon the universal mortality of himself and mankind, without any hope of compensation to it by a future immortality!

It is agreed on all hands, that the utmost contributions of creatures can add nothing to Him; and that our glorifying Him doth only consist, either in our acknowledging Him glorious ourselves, or representing Him so to others. But how little doth it signify, and how flat and low a thing would it seem, that I should only turn mine eye upwards and think a few admiring thoughts of God this hour, while I apprehend myself liable to lose my very thinking power and whole being the next! Or if we could spread his just renown, and gain all the sons of men to a concurrence with us in the adoring of his sovereign excellencies, how would it damp and stifle such loyal and dutiful affection, to consider that the universal testimony so deservedly given Him shall shortly cease for ever, and that infinitely blessed Being be ere long again, as He was from eternity before, the only witness of His own glory!

And if the propension of a man's soul be towards God under the latter notion also, in order to a satisfaction that shall thence accrue to himself, (which design, both in the pursuit and execution of it, is so conjunct with the former that it cannot be severed,) it cannot but be an unspeakable diminution and check to the highest delights in this kind, to think how soon they shall have an end,—that the darkness and dust of

the grave shall shortly obscure and extinguish the glory of this lightsome scene.

To think every time one enters that blessed presence, 'For aught I know, I shall approach it no more; this is possibly my last sight of that pleasant face, my last taste of those enravishing pleasures!'—what bitterness must this infuse into the most delicious sweetness our state could then admit! And by how much more free, and large, grace should be in its present communications, and by how much any soul should be more experienced in the life of God, and inured to Divine delights, so much the more grievous and afflictive resentments it could not but have of the approaching end of all, and be the more powerfully tempted to say, "Lord, why was I made in vain?" How faint and languid would endeavours be after the knowledge of that God whom I may but only know, and die! How impotent and ineffectual would the attractions of this end be to man in this terrene state, to raise him above the world, and rescue him from the power of sensible things; to engage him in the pursuit of that sanctity and purity which alone can qualify him for converse with God; to bear him out in a conflict against the more natural inclinations of sense; when if, with much labour and painful striving, much self-denial and severity to the flesh, any disposition should be attained to relish Divine pleasures, it be considered all the while, that the end of all may be as soon lost as it is gained, and that possibly there may be no more than a moment's pleasure to recompense the pains and conflicts of many years! Although, in this case, the continual hope and expectation of some further manifestation and fruition might much influence a person already holy, and a great lover of God, unto a stedfast adherence to Him, yet how little would it do to make men such that are yet unsuitable and disaffected to Him; or even to recover such out of their lapses and drowsy fits that are not altogether so!

And it is further to be considered, that since God hath given man a being capable of subsisting in another state,—as doth appear by what hath been already said,—and since



he is therefore capable of enjoying a greater happiness than his present state can admit of; that capacity will draw upon him a most indispensable obligation to intend that happiness as his end. For admit that there be no future state for him, it is however impossible any man should know there is none; and upon an impartial view of the whole case, he hath enough to render it at least far more likely to him that there is. And certainly he cannot but be obliged to pursue the highest good, even by the law of nature itself, which his nature is capable of; which probably he may attain, and which he is nowhere forbidden by his Creator to aspire unto. Whence therefore, if we now circumscribe him within the limits of this present mortal state,—or if, for argument's sake, we suppose eventually there is no other,—we must not only confess that capacity to be given him in vain, but that he is obliged also to employ the principal endeavours of his life and all his powers in vain (for certainly his principal endeavour ought to be laid out in order to his principal end);—that is, to pursue that good which he may attain, but never shall; and which is possible to him, but not upon any terms future.

And if it be admitted that the subject state of man must silence all objections against any such inconsistencies, and make him content to act in pure obedience to his Maker,—whether He signify His will by the law of nature only, or by any positive precept,—though he shall not hereafter enjoy any permanent state of blessedness as the consequent reward; that virtue and goodness, a holy rectitude of inclinations and actions, are reward enough to themselves; that there is that justice and sweetness in religion to oblige him to love, and reverence, and adore the Divine Majesty this moment, though he were sure to perish for ever, and be reduced to nothing the next;—I say, admitting all this, yet,—

(2.) Since the blessed God Himself is to be considered as the principal agent and designer in this inquiry, “Why hast thou made all men in vain?” it is with modest and humble reverence to be considered, what end, worthy of that infinitely

perfect Being, He may be supposed to have propounded to Himself in forming such a creature, of so improvable a nature, and furnished with so noble faculties and powers, for so transient and temporary a state: and how well it will consist with the most obvious and unquestionable notions we can have of an absolutely perfect Being, and the attributes which he most peculiarly challenges and appropriates to himself,—so as not only to own, but to glory in them,—that he should give being not to some few only, but to the whole species of human creatures, and therein communicate to them a nature capable of knowing, of loving, and enjoying himself in a blessed eternity, with a design to continue them only for some short space on earth, in a low, imperfect state, wherein they shall be liable to sink still lower to the vilest debasement of their natures; and yet not for their transgression herein, (for it is the mortality of man, not by sin, but by creation or the design of the Creator only, that is now supposed,) but for his mere pleasure, to bereave them of being, and reduce them all again to nothing.

It is to be considered, whether thus to resolve and do, can any way agree to God, according to our clearest and most assured conceptions of Him, not from our reasoning only, but His discovery of Himself; for otherwise we see the imputation falls where we should dread to let it rest,—of having “made man in vain.”

He is, in common account, said to act vainly, who acts beneath himself; so as to pursue an end altogether unworthy of him, or none at all. It is true, that some single acts may be done by great persons as a divertisement, without dishonourable reflection, that may seem much beneath them. And if any do stoop to very mean offices and employments to do good, to help the distressed and relieve the miserable, it is a glorious acquiescence; and the greater they are, the higher is the glory of their condescending goodness. Benignity of nature, and a propension to the most unexpected acts of a merciful self-depression, when the case may require it, are the most comely ornaments of princely greatness, and out-

shine the glory of the richest diadem. But a wonted habitual course of mean actions in great persons, that speak a low design or no design at all, but either a humour to trifle or a mischievous nature and disposition, would never fail to be thought inglorious and infamous; as may be seen in the instances of Sardanapalus's spinning, and Domitian's killing of flies.

When wisdom and goodness are in conjunction with power and greatness, they never persuade a descent, but upon such terms and for such purposes that a more glorious advancement shall ensue; wisdom foreseeing that end, and goodness readily taking the way, which—though it were most undesigned, or not aimed at as an end—could not fail to effect it. Nor are any attributes of the Divine Being more conspicuous than these, more testified by Himself, or more generally acknowledged by all men that have not denied His existence. Or if any have done that violence to their own minds, as to erase and blot out thence the belief of an existing Deity, yet at least, while they deny it, they cannot but have this notion of what they deny, and grant that these are great perfections, and must agree to God, upon supposition that He do exist. If therefore, he should do anything repugnant to these, or we should suppose him to do so, we should therein suppose him to act below a God, and so as were very unworthy of him.

And though it becomes us to be very diffident of our own reasonings concerning the counsels and designs of that eternal Being,—so as if we should find him to assert anything expressly of himself which we know not how to reconcile with our own preconceived thoughts, therein to yield him the cause, and confess the debility of our understandings,—yet certainly it were great rashness, and void of all pretence, to suppose anything which neither He saith of Himself nor we know how consistently to think. Nor are we, in judging of His designs, to bring Him down to our model, or measure Him by man, whose designs do for the most part bespeak only his own indigency, and are levelled at his own

advantage, and the bettering some way or other of his present condition. Whatsoever the great God doth towards his creatures, we must understand him to do, though with design, yet from an exuberant fulness of life and being, by which he is incapable of an accession to himself: and hence, that he can in reference to himself, have no other inducement to such action, besides the complacency which he takes in diffusing his free communications, (for he “exercises loving-kindness, judgment, and righteousness in the earth,” because he delighteth in these things,<sup>1</sup>) and the maintaining the just honour and reputation of his government over his creatures, who, as they are of him, and through him, must be all to him, that he may have glory for ever.<sup>2</sup>

Now, though it be most undoubtedly true that the sovereignty of His power and dominion over His creatures—of which He hath no need, and to whom He so freely gave being—is so absolute and unlimited, that if we consider that only, we must acknowledge He might create a man or an angel and annihilate him presently; yea, that he might, if he so pleased, raise up many thousand worlds of intelligent and innocent creatures into being in one moment, and throw them into nothing again the very next moment: yet how unwarrantably should we maim the notion of God, if we should conceive of Him only according to one attribute, secluding the consideration of the rest! How misshapen an idea should we bear of him in our minds! And how would it deform the face of Providence, and spoil the decorum of his administrations, if they should be the effects of one single attribute only, the others having no influence on the affairs of the world! If nothing but *mercy* should appear in His dispensations towards sinful man, so that every man might do what were good in his own eyes, without cause of fear to be called to account; if the most dissolute and profane were equally assured of His favour, with those who are most holy and strictly regular in all their conversation,—what

<sup>1</sup> Jer. ix. 24.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. xi. 36.

would be thought of God and religion? or how should we savour the notion of an impure Deity, taking pleasure to indulge the wickedness of men? And if *justice* alone have the whole management of affairs, and every act of sin be followed with an act of sudden vengeance, and the whole world become a flaming theatre, and all men held in a hopeless expectation of fiery indignation and of judgment without mercy,—what would become of that amiable representation and the consolatory thoughts we have of God, and of that love and duty which some souls do bear towards Him? Or if *power* should affect daily to show itself in unusual appearances and effects, in changing every hour the shapes of the terrestrial creatures, in perpetual, quick innovations of the courses of the celestial, with a thousand more kinds of prodigious events that might be the hourly effects of unlimited power, how were the order of the world disturbed, and how unlovely an idea would it beget in every intelligent creature of Him that made and rules it! Yet is it from no defect of *mercy* that all men are not equally favoured and blessed of God; nor of *justice*, that a speedy vengeance is not taken of all; nor of *power*, that the world is not filled with astonishing wonders every day; but rather from their unexcessiveness, and that they make that blessed temperature where they reside, and are exercised in so exact proportion, that nothing is ever done unworthy of Him who is at once both perfectly merciful, and just, and powerful and wise, and hath all perfections eminently comprehended and united in his own most simple being.

It were therefore, beside the purpose to insist only what sovereign power, considered apart, might do; but we are to consider what may be congruous to him to do who is infinitely wise and good, as well as powerful. And,—

i. Let it be weighed, how it may square with the Divine *wisdom* to give being to a world of reasonable creatures, and, giving them only a short time of abode in being, to abandon them to a perpetual annihilation.

Wisdom in any agent must needs suppose the intention of

some valuable end of his action. And the Divine wisdom, wherein it hath any end diverse from that which his pure goodness and benignity towards his creatures would incline him to,—which also we must conceive it most intent to promote and further,—cannot but have it chiefly in design, it being determined that his goodness should open itself and break forth into a creation, and that of reasonable creatures, so to manage his government over these (which indeed are the only subjects of government, in the strict and proper notion of it) as may most preserve his authority, and keep up his just interest in them, both by recommending him to their fear and love; to possess them with that due and necessary reverence of him that may restrain them from contemptuous sinning, and so endear his government to them as to engage them to a placid and free obedience. But how little would it agree with this design of the Divine wisdom, to have made man only for this temporary state! For,—

First, how little would it tend to the begetting and settling that *fear* of God in the hearts of men that were necessary to preserve his authority and government from a profane contempt!—Whereas daily experience shows that there is now no difference made between them that fear God and them that fear him not, unless wherein the former are worse dealt with and more exposed to sufferings and wrongs—that at least it is often, yea for the most part so—that “to depart from iniquity is to make one’s self a prey”—that those who profess and evidence the most entire devotedness to God, and pay the greatest observance and duty to him, become a common scorn upon this very account, and are in continual danger to be eaten up as bread by those that call not upon God, while in the meantime “the tabernacles of robbers prosper,” and they that provoke God are secure, “are not plagued as other men, nor in trouble as other men,” and judgment is not here executed for wicked works in this world;—IF also nothing is to be expected, either of good or evil, in another, who is likely to

be induced in this case, to fear God, or to be subject to him? And how unlike is this to the wisdom of the Supreme Ruler, to expose his most rightful and sovereign authority to the fearless and insolent affronts of his own revolted creatures, without any design of future reparation to it; as if he had created them on purpose only to curse him and die! But he hath prevented the occasion of so reproachful a censure, and thought fit to fill his word, and the consciences of guilty sinners, with threats and dreadful presages of a future judgment and state of punishment: to which he is no less concerned, both in point of wisdom and veracity (and I may add of legal justice), to make the event correspond, that he may neither be found to have omitted any due course for preventing or redress of so great an evil; and that if the threatening do not effectually overawe sinners, the execution may at least right himself; and that in the meantime he do not (that which would least of all become him, and which were most repugnant to his nature) make use of a solemn fiction to keep the world in order, and maintain his government by falsehood and deceit,—that is, by threatening what he knows shall never be.

Secondly, nor were there—in the case all along supposed—a more probable provision made to conciliate and procure to the Divine Majesty, the *love* which it is requisite he should have from the children of men. And this cannot but be thought another apt method for his wisdom to pitch upon, to render his government acceptable, and to engage men to that free and complacential subjection which is suitable to God. For how can that filial and dutiful affection ever be the genuine product or impress of such a representation of the case between God and them; that is, that they shall be most indispensably obliged to devote their whole being and all their powers entirely to his service and interest, exactly to observe his strictest laws, to keep under the severest restraint their most innate, reluctant inclinations; and in the meantime expect the administrations of providence to be such towards them, that they shall find harder usage all their

days than his most insolent and irreconcilable enemies; and at last lose their very beings they know not how soon, and therewith necessarily, all possibilities of any future recompense? Is this a likely way to procure love, and to captivate hearts into an affectionate and free obedience? Or what is it probable to produce but a sour and sullen despondency, the extinction of all generous affection, and a temper more agreeable to a forced enthrallment to some malignant, insulting genius, than a willing subjection to the God of all grace and love?

And every one will be ready to say, there is little of wisdom in that government, the administration whereof is neither apt to beget fear nor love in those that are subject to it; but either through the want of the one to be despised, or to be regretted through the want of the other. And this being the very case, upon supposition of no future state, it seems altogether unworthy of the Divine wisdom that such a creature should ever have been made as man, upon which no end is attainable, as the course of Providence commonly runs in this world, in comparison whereof it were not better and more honourable to his Maker—whose interest it is the part of His wisdom to consult—that he had never been: and therefore, as to God and the just and worthy designs of His glory, he would seem, upon this supposition, wholly “made in vain.” And,—

ii. How congruous and agreeable would this supposition prove to the *goodness* of God! As that other attribute of wisdom doth more especially respect His own interest, so doth this, the interest of His creatures; that is, if it be understood not in a metaphysical, but in a moral sense,—as it imports a propensity and steady bent of will unto benefaction, according to that of the Psalmist, “Thou art good, and doest good.”<sup>1</sup> And this free and generous principle it is which gives the first rise and beginning to all the designs any way respecting the well-being and happiness of creatures;

<sup>1</sup> Ps. cxix. 68.



which then, Infinite Wisdom forms and manages to their full issues and accomplishment, guiding as it were, the hand of almighty power in the execution of them.

That there should be a creation, we may conceive to be the first dictate of this immense goodness, which afterwards diffuses itself through the whole, in communications agreeable to the nature of every creature; so that even this inferior and less noble part, the earth, "is full of the goodness of the Lord."<sup>1</sup> It creates first its own object, and then pours forth itself upon it with infinite delight, rewarding the expense with the pleasure of doing good. Now, if we should suppose such a creature as man made only for that short time and low state which we see to be allotted him in this world, it were neither difficult nor enough to reconcile the hypothesis with strict *justice*, which, upon the ground of absolute dominion, may do what it will with its own; but the ill accord it seems to have with so large and abounding *goodness*, renders it very unlike the dispensation of the blessed God; no enjoyment being in that case afforded to this sort of creatures, agreeable to their common nature and capacity, either in degree or continuance.

Not in *degree*: for who sees not that the nature of man is capable of greater things than he here enjoys? And where that capacity is rescued from the corruption that narrows and debases it, how sensibly do holy souls resent and bewail their present state, as a state of imperfection; with how fervent and vehement desires and groans do they aspire and pant after a higher and more perfect! "We that are in this tabernacle do groan, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed," (*that is not enough, to be delivered out of the miseries of life, by laying down this passive part,—is not that which will terminate their desires,*) "but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life."<sup>2</sup> Theirs are not brutal groans, the complaint of oppressed sensitive nature under a present evil; but rational and spiritual, the

<sup>1</sup> Ps. xxxiii. 5.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. v. 4.

expressions of desire strongly carried to pursue an apprehended suitable good.

The truest notion we can yet have of the primitive nature and capacity of man, is by beholding it in its gradual restitution. And is it agreeable to the goodness of God, to put such a nature into any, and withhold the suitable object,—as if it were a pleasure to Him to behold the work of His own hands spending itself in weary strugglings towards Him, and vexed all the while it continues in being, with the desire of what it shall never enjoy, and which He hath made it desire, and therein encouraged it to expect?

Nor in *continuance* : for I suppose it already evident that the nature of man is capable, in respect of his principal part, of perpetuity, and so of enjoying a felicity hereafter that shall be permanent and know no end; and it seems no way congruous to so large goodness, to stifle a capacity whereof it was itself the author, and destroy its own work. For if the being of man is intended for so short a continuance, either he may have the knowledge of this determination concerning him, or not. If he cannot have the knowledge of it, why should any one say what they cannot know; or put such a thing upon God, that is so vilely reflecting and dishonourable to him? If he may have the knowledge of it, then doth he seem a creature made for torment, while by an easy reflection upon himself he may discern he is not incapable of a perpetual state, and is yet brought forth into the light to be ere long extinguished and shut up in everlasting darkness. And who can think this a thing worthy of infinite and eternal goodness? Besides, as hath been insisted before, that this torture, proceeding from so sad an expectation, cannot but be most grievous and afflictive to the best. Whence the Apostle tells us that Christians, “if in this life only they had hope, were of all men most miserable;”<sup>1</sup> so that it were more desirable never to have been. If any yet fall hereafter into a state to which they would prefer

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 19.

perpetual annihilation, inasmuch as it is wholly by their own default, it no way reflects upon Divine goodness. But it would be a dishonourable reflection rather upon that Author and Fountain of all goodness, if He should not express Himself wise and just as well as good; as it would upon a man, especially a ruler over others, if that which we call good-nature were conjunct with stolidity, or an insensibleness of whatsoever affronts to his person and government.

Upon the whole therefore, it seems most repugnant to these great attributes of the Divine Being, to have made man only for this present state; that to think so, were to conceive unworthily of Him, as if He had acted much beneath Himself, and done a vain thing in making such a creature, no end being attainable by it which we can suppose either His wisdom or goodness to aim at.

If any would imagine to themselves an expedient, by supposing an eternal succession of human generations, upon whom the wisdom and goodness of God might have a perpetual exercise, in the government and sustentation of them for their appointed times; this would be far from satisfying as to either, but would rather increase the difficulty: for there would be the same temptation upon all the individuals to contemn or regret the government of their Maker. So that He should hereby even eternize His own reproach, and should always, in every succession, have still the same craving appetites returning, and expectations never to be satisfied; which were as repugnant to all He hath discovered to us of His nature as anything we can suppose.

Though some persons of a light and desultory humour might imagine to themselves a pleasure in it, if they had the power to make such a rotation of things, rising and falling, coming and passing away, at their beck and command; and such as were of a sanguinary temper, might sport themselves in raising up and lopping off lives at pleasure with an arbitrary hand; yet sure they would never gain by it the esteem of being either wise or good, and would, it is like, in time grow weary of the sport. But to form to ourselves such

ideas of the blessed God, were an injury not inferior to the very denial of his being.

His providence towards the inferior creatures hath no resemblance of any such thing, whom his bounty sustains agreeably to their natures; who have no foresight of their own cessation from being, to keep them in a continual death by the expectation of it; and who serve to valuable and reasonable purposes while they are continued: for they are useful, partly to the sustentation of man, and partly to his instruction, in order to his higher ends. And though each individual of them do not actually so, it is sufficient that the several kinds of them are naturally apt thereto, which are propagated according to a settled course and law of nature, in their individuals: and if all immediately serve not man, yet they do it mediately, in serving those that more immediately do. Besides that, when such a work was to be done, as the furnishing out and accomplishing this lower world, it was meet all things should be in number, weight, and measure, and correspond in every part; as if one build a house for entertainment, though the more noble rooms only do come in view, yet all the rest are made answerably decent, on supposition that they may. It was becoming the august and great Lord of this world, that it have in it, not only what may sustain the indigent, but gratify the contemplative by fresh variety, who would be apt to grow remiss by conversing only with what were of every day's observation. Nor was that a low end, when such contemplation hath so direct a tendency to raise a considering mind to the sight, and love, and praise of the Supreme Being, that hath stamped so lively signatures and prints of His own perfections upon all His works.

If it be said, 'Man might be in the same kind serviceable to the contemplation of angels, though he were himself never to know any other than this mortal state;'—it is true that he might so; but yet the incongruities were no way salved, of God's putting a capacity and expectation into his nature of a better state,—of His dealing so hardly with them that He

hath procured to love Him,—of His never vindicating their high contempt that spent their days in rebellion against Him: besides, that these were ill precedents, and no pleasant themes for the view of an angelical mind; and if they see a nature extinct, capable of their state, what might they suspect of their own? So that, which way soever we turn our thoughts, we still see that man's mortality and liableness to an unavoidable death, abstracted from the thoughts of another state, carry that constant aspect, as if all men were "made in vain."

What remains then, but that we conclude hence, we ought not too much or too long thus to abstract, nor too closely confine our eye to this dark and gloomy theme, death and the grave, or withhold it from looking farther. For, far be it from us to think the wise and holy God hath given being to man, and consequently exercised a long-continued series of providence through so many successive ages towards him, in vain.

Nothing but a prospect of another state can solve the knot, and work through the present difficulty,—can give us a true account of man, and what he was made for. Therefore, since it would be profane and impious, sad and uncomfortable, a blasphemy to our Maker and a torture to ourselves, to speak it as our settled apprehension and judgment, that God hath made man to no purpose, we are obliged and concerned, both in justice to Him and compassion to ourselves, so to represent the case, as that we may be able to remove so unworthy and black a thought to the greatest distance from us, both in itself and whatsoever practice would be consequent thereto: that is, to conclude, *That certainly there must be another state after this; and accordingly steer our course.*

The IMPROVEMENT, then, of the foregoing discourse will have a double aspect—on our *judgments* and *practice*:—

1. On our *judgments*; to settle this great principle of truth in them, the certain futurity of another state after this life is over, unto which this present state is only preparatory and introductive. For whereas we can never give a

rational account why such a creature as man was made, if we confine all our apprehensions concerning him to his present state on earth; let them once transcend those narrow limits, fly over into eternity, and behold him made for an everlasting state hereafter, and the difficulty now vanishes, the whole affair looks with a comely and befitting aspect.

For we may now represent the case thus to ourselves: That man was put into this terrestrial state and dwelling by the wise and righteous designation of his great Creator and Lord, that his loyalty to Him, amidst the temptations and enticements of sensible things, might be tried a while; that, revolting from Him, he is only left to feel here the just smart of his causeless defection; that yet such further methods are used for his recovery as are most suitable to his so impaired state. An allayed light shines to him in the midst of darkness, that his feebler eye may receive a gradual illumination, and behold God in those more obscure discoveries which He now vouchsafes of Himself, till by degrees he be won to take up good thoughts of Him, and return into an acquaintance and friendship with Him; which, once begun here, shall be hereafter perfected in eternal fruitions. The offence and wrong done to his Maker, He in a strange, unthought-of way makes compensation of to Himself, and testifies His reconcilableness, and persuades a reconciliation, upon such terms, and by so endearing mediums, as might melt and mollify hearts of adamant, and shall effectually prevail with many to yield themselves the subjects and instances of His admired goodness for ever; while others lie only under the natural consequents and just resentments of their unremedied enmity and folly. So are the glorious issues of God's dispensation towards man, and the wise and merciful conduct of His equal government, worthily celebrated through the days of eternity with just acclamations and praises. We can fasten upon nothing exceptionable or unaccountable, yea, or that is not highly laudable and praiseworthy, in this course of procedure.

Therefore, though now we behold a dark cloud of mortality

hanging over the whole human race; though we see the grave still devouring and still unsatisfied, and that all are successively drawn down into it; and we puzzle ourselves to assign a reason why such a creature was made a reasonable being, capable of an everlasting duration, to visit the world only and vanish, to converse a short space with objects and affairs so far beneath it, and retire we know not whither: if yet our eye follow him through the darker paths of the region of death, till at the next appearance we behold him clothed with immortality and fitted to an endless state, the wonder is over, and our amazement quickly ceases.

Wherefore, let us thus bethink ourselves and consider: Surely He that made this great universe, and disposed all the sorts, stations, and motions of creatures in it in so exquisite order and method, cannot but be a most perfectly wise and intellectual agent, and therefore cannot be supposed to have done anything to no purpose; much less, when all the inferior creatures have ends visibly answering the exigency of their natures, to have made so excellent a creature as man, the nobler part of His lower creation, in vain;—that he only should be without his proportionable end, and after a short continuance in being, return to nothing, without leaving it conjecturable what he was made for. This were so intolerable an incongruity, and so unlike the footsteps that everywhere else appear in the Divine wisdom and goodness, that we cannot but inquire further into this matter, and conclude at last that he was made for some higher purposes than are within the reach of our sight, and hath his principal part yet to act upon another stage within the veil that shall never be taken down.

The future immortality of man seems therefore so certainly grounded upon what is discovered and generally acknowledged touching the nature of God, and his most peculiar and essential perfections, that unless we were further put to prove the existence of a God,—which to them that are rational needs not, and to them that are not were in vain,—there can no reasonable doubt remain concerning it:—

2. Wherefore the further use we have to make of the matter proposed, is in reference to our *practice*; which it may fitly serve both to *correct and reprove*, and also to *direct and guide* :—

(1.) It administers the ground of just *rebuke* : that since, if we terminate our thoughts and designs upon things only on this side the grave, it would seem we were wholly made in vain, we do yet so generally employ our cares and endeavours about such things, and even the vilest and most despicable of these; and so live not to our own dishonour only, but to the reproach of our Maker, as if He made us for no more worthy ends. And let us but impartially debate the matter with ourselves: Can we, in sober reason, think we were made only for such ends as the most only pursue? Have we any pretence to think so? or can it enter into our souls to believe it? Would not men be ashamed to profess such a belief? or to have it written in their foreheads, these are the only ends they are capable of? Then might one read,—Such a man born to put others in mind of his predecessor's name, and only lest such a family should want an heir: such a one to consume such an estate, and devour the provenue of so many farms and manors: such a one to fill so many bags and coffers, to sustain the riot of him that succeeds: some created to see and make sport; to run after hawks and dogs, or spend the time which their weariness redeems from converse with brutes, in making themselves such, by drinking away the little residue of wit and reason they have left; mixing, with this genteel exercise, their impure and scurrilous drolleries, that they may befriend one another with the kind occasion of proving themselves to be yet of human race, by this only demonstration remaining to them, that they can laugh; which medium, if the wisdom of the just were known, would be found so pregnant as to afford them a double conclusion, and be as effectual, oftentimes, to prove them fools as men. Others, one might read, born to trouble the world, to disquiet the neighbourhood, and be the common plague of all about them; at least, if they have any within their reach and



power that are wiser and more sober than themselves, or that value not their souls at so cheap a rate as they : others made to blaspheme their Maker, to rend the sacred name of God, and make proof of their high valour and the gallantry of their brave spirits, by bidding a defiance to heaven, and proclaiming their heroic contempt of the Deity and of all religion ; as if they had persuaded themselves into an opinion, that because they have had so prosperous success in the high achievements of conquering their humanity, and baffling their own fear and reason and conscience, death also will yield them as easy a victory, or be afraid to encounter men of so redoubted courage ; that the God of heaven, rather than offend them, will not stick to repeal His laws for their sakes, or never exact the observance of them from persons of their quality ; that they shall never be called to judgment, or be complimented only there with great respect, as persons that bore much sway in their country, and could number so many hundreds or thousands a-year ; that, at least, the infernal flames will never presume to touch so worthy personages ; that devils will be awed by their greatness, and fear to seize them, lest they should take it for an affront. No conceit can be imputed to these men absurd enough to overmatch the absurdity of their practice. They can themselves think nothing more gross and shameful than what they daily are not ashamed to act. For what absurdity can be compassed in a thought, greater than what appears in a course of life managed in perpetual hostility to all principles of reason and humanity ? And either they must own all the impious folly of such thoughts, or confess, upon other accounts, an equal infatuation in their thinking faculty itself. For either they think their course justifiable, or they do not. If they do, how fatally are all things inverted in their depraved minds ! Wisdom and folly, virtue and vice, good and evil, seem to them transformed into one another, and are no longer to be known by their own names. The common notions of all mankind are but blind fancies in comparison of their later and clearer illumination ; and the ancient religious sentiments

of all former ages, dreams and follies to their admired new light. Their wise and rare discoveries, that they and all things came by chance, that this world hath no Owner or Lord,—because they never had wit or patience to consider the nonsense of them; and though they never, any of them, had the luck to see one clod of earth, or grain of sand, start up into being out of nothing; much less ground to think that such a world, should of itself do so,—are reason enough with them to mock at the Eternal Being, and attempt to jeer religion out of the world, and all other men out of their reason and wits, as they have themselves. And sure this must be their only pretence, and their atheism the best reason upon which to justify their constant practice. For who can think, while he sees them not yet in chains, they should be so perfectly mad as to acknowledge only such a deity—the author and ruler of all things—whose favour were worth nothing, or to be procured by affronts; to whom contempt were a sacrifice, and the violation of whatsoever is sacred the most effectual propitiation; or acknowledge Him for a God whom they hope to overpower, and to prosper in a war against Him?

And if they acknowledge none at all, and this be the fundamental article of their creed, that there is indeed none, then can no man charge them with any thought more grossly foolish than their own; nor can they devise to say anything by which more certainly to argue themselves bereft of the common understanding of men. For who that is not so, if he only take notice of his own being, may not as certainly conclude the existence of a God, as that two and two make four? Or what imagination can be too absurd to have place in that mind, that can imagine this creation to be a casualty? He would be thought beside himself that should say the same of the composition of a clock or a watch, though it were a thousand times more supposable. But if they do not justify themselves, to what purpose is it further to press them with absurdities, that persist in constant self-contradiction; or that have not so much left them of rational

sensation as to feel in their own minds the pressure of the very greatest absurdity ?

If they only presume they do well, because they have never asked themselves the question, or spent any thoughts about it ; this speaks as much a besotted mind as any of the rest, and is as unworthy of a reasonable creature. Why have they the power of thinking ? Or who do in any case more generally incur the censure of imprudence and folly, than they who have only this plea for their actions, that they did not consider ? especially when the case is so plain, and the most sudden reflection would discover the iniquity and danger of their course ?

And one would think nothing should be more obvious, or more readily occur to the mind of a man, than to contemplate himself, and taking notice there is such a creature in the world, furnished with such abilities and powers, to consider, 'What was I made for ? what am I to pitch upon as my proper end ?'—nor anything appear more horrid to him, than to cross the very ends of his creation.

(2.) It may also be improved to the *directing* of our practice. For which purpose we may hence take this general rule, *That it be such as becomes the expectation of a future state* ;—for what else is left us, since in our present state we behold nothing but vanity ? We see thus stands our case, that we must measure ourselves by one of these apprehensions :—either, we are made in vain ; or, we are made for a future state. And can we endure to live according to the former, as if we were impertinencies in the creation, and had no proper business in it ? What ingenuous person would not blush to be always in the posture of a useless hang-by ; to be still hanging on where he hath nothing to do ; that if he be asked, 'Sir, what is your business here ?' he hath nothing to say ?

Or how can we bear it, to live as if we came into the world by chance, or rather by mistake ; as though our creation had been a misadventure, a thing that would not have been done had it been better thought on ; and that our

Maker had overshot himself, and been guilty of an oversight in giving us such a being? Who, that hath either just value for himself, or any reverence for his Maker, could endure either to undergo the reproach, or be guilty of the blasphemy, which this would import? And who can acquit himself of the one or the other, that lives not in some measure agreeably to the expectation of somewhat beyond this present life? Let us therefore gird up the loins of our minds, and set our faces as persons designing for another world; so shaping our course, that all things may concur to signify to men the greatness of our expectations. We otherwise proclaim to the world, to our own and our Creator's wrong, that we have reasonable souls given us to no purpose. We are therefore concerned and obliged both to aim at that worthy end, and to discover and make it visible that we do so.

Nor is a design for an immortal state so mean and inglorious, or so irrational and void of a solid ground, that we have any cause either to decline or conceal it,—either not to retain, or to be ashamed of our hope. Nor is there anything to be done in prosecution of it, so unworthy as to need a corner, or merit to be done as a work of darkness. Neither yet is it a vain-glorious ostentation, or the affectation of making show of an excellency above the vulgar pitch, that I persuade to; but a modest, sober avowing of our high design and hope,—neither making any near approach to a proud arrogance on the one hand, nor a mean pusillanimity on the other. Truly great and generous spirits know how to carry under secular honour with that prudent and graceful decorum, as shall signify a just owning of themselves without insolence towards others. Real worth, though it do not vaunt, will show itself; and while it doth not glare, yet cannot forbear to shine.

We should endeavour the excellency of a spirit, refined from earth and dross and aspiring towards a state of immortality, may express itself, and shine in its native lustre; with its *own*, not with *borrowed* beams; with a constant, even, natural, not with an unequal, artificial light: that

all that will, may see by the steady tendency of our course, that we are aiming at the great things of another world; though we, all the while, are not so much solicitous to have our end and purpose known, as to obtain it.

And verily, since the vile sons of the earth, the men of sense, that aim at no other end than to gratify their brutal appetite with such pleasure as is only to be compassed within a short life's time in this world, and who live to the reproach of their Maker and of mankind, do not go about to hide the infamy of their low design, or conceal the degenerate baseness of their mean spirits; but while "they make their belly their god, and only mind earthly things, do also glory in their shame;"—how much were it beneath the state and spirit of the sons of God, that are worthily designing for a glorious immortality, to be ashamed of their glory, or think of stealing a passage to heaven in the dark!

No; let them know it is not only too mean a thing for them to involve themselves in the common spirit of the sensual world, but even to seem to do so; and that this is so foul and ignominious a thing, as whereof they are concerned, not to be free from the guilt only, but the suspicion. Those worthy souls that in former and darker days were engaged in seeking the heavenly country, thought it became them to confess themselves pilgrims and strangers on the earth; and therein to declare plainly that they were seeking that better country:<sup>1</sup> which confession and plain declaration we need not understand to be merely verbal, but practical and real also; such as might be understood to be the language of their lives, and of a constant, uniform course of actions agreeable to such a design.

Let us therefore bethink ourselves, what temper of mind and manner of life may be most conformable to this design, and best become persons pretending to it: whereupon we should soon find our own thoughts instructing us that such things as these would be most becoming and fit in reference

<sup>1</sup> Heb. xi. 13—16.

thereto, and which we may therefore take as so many particular directions how to govern our spirits and behave ourselves answerably to so great an expectation :—

First, *That we endeavour for a calm indifferency and dispassionate temper of mind towards the various objects and affairs that belong to this present life.* There are very narrow limits already set, by the nature of the things themselves, to all the real objective value that such things have in them ; and it is the part of wisdom and justice to set the proportionable bounds to all the thoughts, cares, and passions, we will suffer to stir in our minds in reference to them. Nothing is a more evident acknowledged character of a fool, than upon every slight occasion to be in a transport. To be much taken with empty things betokens an empty spirit. It is a part of manly fortitude to have a soul so fenced against foreign impressions, as little to be moved with things that have little in them ; to keep our passions under a strict rein and steady command, that they be easily retractable and taught to obey ; not to move till severe reason have audited the matter, and pronounced the occasion just and valuable: in which case the same manly temper will not refuse to admit a proportionable stamp and impress from the occurring object. For it is equally a prevarication from true manhood to be moved with everything and with nothing: the former would speak a man's spirit a feather, the latter a stone. A total apathy and insensibleness of external occurrences hath been the aim of some, but never the attainment of the highest pretenders ; and if it had, yet ought it not to have been their boast, as upon sober thoughts it cannot be reckoned a perfection. But it should be endeavoured that the passions, which are not to be rooted up, because they are of nature's planting, be yet so discreetly checked and depressed that they grow not to that enormous tallness as to overtop a man's intellectual power, and cast a dark shadow over his soul.

A rational authority must be maintained, a continency and dominion of one's self, that there be not an impotent profusion, and we be never so affected with anything, but that

the object may still be able to warrant and justify the affection, both for the nature and degree of it: which rule, if we strictly observe and apply it to the present case, we shall rarely meet with any temporal concern that ought to move us much, both for the littleness of such things themselves, and that we have so unspeakably greater things in our view and design.

In conformity therefore, to our so great expectation, we ought more particularly to watch and repress our inclinations, appetites and affections towards each several sort and kind of objects, which time and this present state hath within the confines of it. As, how contemptuously should we look upon that empty vanity of being rich! How coldly and carelessly should we pursue; how unconcernedly should we lose, anything that might entitle us to that name!

The pursuit of so despicable a trifle with violent and peremptory desire, so as hereby to suffer a diversion from our design for another world, is to make our eternal hope less than nothing: for to any man's calm and sober thoughts this will be found as little, and so will amount to a total quitting of all our pretensions to a better, future state; that is, when we so indulge this odd, irrational, this wildly fanciful and purely humoursome appetite,—of which no man can give any tolerable account,—that it becomes ravenous; when it devours a man's time, his thoughts, the strength and vigour of his spirit, swallows up his nobler designs, and makes an idle doting about he knows not what, or why, his main business. Especially when conscience itself becomes a sacrifice to this impure, unhallowed idol; and the question is wholly waived, 'Is this thing just and honest?' and nothing is considered but that it is commodious and gainful.

Yet, if herein we will take upon us to pass a judgment upon other men, it will be no way ingenuous or just that in smaller and disputable matters we make our own apprehensions a measure and standard to them. They are commonly aptest to do so who have least studied the matter, and have nothing but their ignorant confidence to entitle them to the

dietator's chair ; where, however, having placed themselves, they liberally bestow their censures and reproaches on all that think it not fit to throw away their own eyes and see with their bad ones, and conclude them to have no conscience who go not according to theirs, and that they cannot but have some base design who in anything presume to swerve from their judgment, especially if the advantage, in any temporal respect, happen to lie on that side from which they dissent.

Nothing can indeed so comport with the spirit and design of one who believes himself made for another world, as a brave and generous disdain of stooping to the lure of present emolument, so as thereby to be drawn into any the least thing which he judges not defensible by the severest rules of reason and religion ;—which were to quit a serene heaven for mire and dirt.

There is nothing in this world of that value, or worthy to be bought so dear, as with the loss and forfeiture of the rest and repose of a mind, quiet, benign, peaceful, and well pleased with itself. It is enough, if one find himself, by difficulties which he cannot master, constrained to dissent from persons above exception wise and pious, placidly and without unbecoming confidence, to go on the way which his present judgment allows ; carrying with him a modest sense of human infirmity, and how possible it is the error may lie on his own part ; having yet, to relieve him against that supposition, the clearness of his own spirit, the conscience of his innocency of any ill disposition or design, of his instructibleness and preparedness to admit a conviction if he err ; and be he never so fully persuaded about the thing in difference, yet to consider the smallness of it, and how little cause he hath of glorying, if he know in this matter more than others, who possibly know ten times more than he in far greater and more important matters.

But, in matters clearly determined by common agreed principles, to prevaricate out of an indulgence to mere appetite,—to give up one's self to practices apparently immoral



and flagitious, only to comply with, and lest he should not satisfy, sensual desires,—is the character of one who hath abandoned the common hope of all good men, and who, that he may have his lot with beasts in this world, dreads not to have it with devils in the other.

And it is, upon the same ground, equally unbecoming them that pretend to this hope, to be visibly concerned and discomposed for losses and disappointments they may meet with in this kind, when unexpected events withstand their having much of this world, or deprive them of what they have. It becomes them that reckon their good things are to come hereafter, to show, by their equal deportment and cheerful aspect in any such case, that they apprehend not themselves touched in their most considerable interests. Yea, though they suffer not losses only, but injuries; and besides that they are dam-nified,—as much as such things can signify,—they find themselves wronged; and though further trouble and danger threaten them in the same kind;—they should evidence how much it is above the power either of chance or malice, not only to make them miserable, but even to disturb or make them sad; that they are not happy by a casualty, and that their happiness is not in the command of them who cannot command their own,—that it only depends on the inward constitution and frame of their own spirits, attempered to the blessed objects of the invisible world, whereby they have the assurance of enjoying them fully hereafter, and the present grateful relishes thereof in the meantime; and hence, that they can be happy without the world's kindness, and in despite of its unkindness; that they have somewhat within them, by which they are enabled to rejoice in tribulation; being troubled on every side, yet not to be distressed; to “take joyfully the spoiling of goods, knowing within themselves they have in heaven a better and enduring substance;” nor to suffer or discover any perturbation or disquiet; not to have their souls ruffled, or put into disorder; nor let any cloud sit on their brow, though dark and dismal ones seem to hang over their heads.

And the same absurdity it would be to indulge to themselves an unbounded liberty of sensual pleasures: for that looks like a despair of futurity; as if a day were a mighty gain for eating and drinking, because to-morrow we must die. An abstemious shyness here is comely; a tasting only the delights, whereof others suffer themselves to be engulfed; a prudent reservedness and restraint, so as that what shall cause with others an unbecoming transport and diffusion of themselves, be entertained, not with a cynical morosity, but a pleasant composure and well-ordered complacency, keeping a due and even distance between levity and sourness.

Yet there is a natural retiredness in some men's tempers; and in others an aversion to pleasures, proceeding only of a rational estimate of their emptiness and vanity in themselves: which may however much fall short of what the present case requires, the exigency whereof is no way satisfied but where such a moderation is the product of a comparative judgment between the delights of the present and those of the future state;—when one so enjoys anything in this world as to be under the power of nothing, because of the more prevailing influence he is under from the power of the world to come; when his faith is the parent of his sobriety, and his denial of worldly lusts flows from the expectation of the blessed hope; when, because he more highly prizes and lest he forfeit eternal pleasures, he so behaves himself towards all temporary ones, as neither to abuse those that are lawful nor to be abused by the unlawful,—not to exceed in the one, nor to touch with the other.

Thus also ought we to look upon secular honours and dignity; neither to make them the matter of our admiration, affectation, or envy. We are not to behold them with a libidinous eye, or let our hearts thirst after them; not to value ourselves the more for them, if they be our lot; nor let our eye be dazzled with admiration or distorted with envy, when we behold them the ornaments of others. We are not to express that contempt of them which may make a breach

on civility, or disturb the order and policy of the communities whereto we belong. Though this be none of our own country, and we are still to reckon ourselves but as pilgrims and strangers while we are here, yet it becomes not strangers to be insolent or rude in their behaviour where they sojourn, how much soever greater value they may justly have of their own country. We should pay to secular greatness a due respect, without idolatry, and neither despise nor adore it; considering at once the requisiteness of such a thing in the present state, and the excelling glory of the other: as though, in prudence and good manners, we would abstain from provoking affronts towards an American sachem or sagamore, if we did travel or converse in their country; yet we could have no great veneration for them, having beheld the royal pomp and grandeur of our own prince;—especially he who were himself a courtier and favourite to his much more glorious sovereign, whom he is shortly to attend at home, could have no great temptation to sue for offices and honours, or bear a very profound intrinsic homage to so mean and unexpressive an image of regality.

It can surely no way become one who seeks and expects the honour and glory which is conjunct with immortality,<sup>1</sup> to be fond of the airy titles that poor mortals are wont to please themselves with; or to make one among the obsequious, servile company of them whose business it is to court a vanishing shadow, and tempt a dignified trifle into the belief it is a deity; to sneak and cringe for a smile from a supercilious brow, and place his heaven in the disdainful favours of him who, it may be, places his own as much in thy homage,—so that it befalls into the supplicant's power to be *his* creator whose creature he affects to be. What eye would not soon spy out the grossness of this absurdity? and what ingenuity would not blush to be guilty of it? Let then the joyful expectants of a blessed immortality pass by the busy throng of this fanciful exchange, and behold it with as little

<sup>1</sup> Rom. ii. 7.

concern as a grave statesman would the sports and ludicrous actions of little children, and with as little inclination of mind as he would have to leave his business and go play with them; bestowing there only the transient glance of a careless or a compassionate eye, and still reserving their intent, steady views for the glorious hope set before them.

And with a proportionable unconcernedness should they look on, and behold the various alternations of political affairs; no further minding either the constitution or administration of government, than as the interest of the universal Ruler, the weal and safety of their prince or country, are concerned in them. But how many, under the specious pretence of a public spirit, make it their whole business to inspect and pry into these affairs, even with a most meanly private and interested one; watching over the public beyond the bounds of their own calling, and with no other design than to catch at an opportunity of serving their own turns! How many that stand perpetually at a gaze, in a suspenseful expectation how things will go; either joying or hoping to behold any favourable prognostics to the party whereto they have thought fit to addict themselves; glad or desirous to see it engross power, and grasp the sum of things; not from any sense of duties towards God's vicegerents, not from love of justice or study of public advantage, but that the happier lot may befall or remain to themselves! These men are absorbed and swallowed up of the spirit of this world, contempered only to this sublunary region, concorporate with the earth, so as to partake in all its pangs, and paroxysms, and tremulous motions. By the beating of their pulse you may know the state of things in this lower world, as if they were of the same piece and had but one soul with it. Let them see times and a state of things on earth suitable to their genius, and you put a new life and soul into them. Reduce them to a despair here, and—so little communion have they with the affairs of that other country—the most specious, inviting representation that can be made to them of the world to come hinders not

but their hearts languish and die, and become as stones within them.

But that lofty soul that bears about with it the living apprehensions of its being made for an everlasting state, so earnestly intends it, that it shall ever be a descent and vouchsafement with it, if it allow itself to take notice what busy mortals are doing in their (as they reckon them) grand negotiations here below; and if there be a suspicion of an aptness or inclination to intermeddle in them to their prejudice to whom that part belongs, can heartily say to it, as the philosopher to the jealous tyrant, 'We of this academy are not at leisure to mind so mean things; we have somewhat else to do than to talk of you.' He hath still the image before his eye, of this world vanishing and passing away; of the other, with the everlasting affairs and concerns of it, even now ready to take place and fill up all the stage; and can represent to himself the vision—not from a melancholic fancy or crazed brain, but a rational faith, and a sober, well-instructed mind—of the world dissolving, monarchies and kingdoms breaking up, thrones tumbling, crowns and sceptres lying as neglected things. He hath a telescope through which he can behold the glorious appearance of the supreme Judge; the solemn state of His majestic person; the splendid pomp of His magnificent and vastly numerous retinue; the obsequious throng of glorious celestial creatures, doing homage to their eternal King; the swift flight of His royal guards, sent forth into the four winds to gather the elect, and covering the face of the heavens with their spreading wings; the universal silent attention of all to that loud-sounding trumpet, that shakes the pillars of the world, pierces the inward caverns of the earth, and resounds from every part of the encircling heavens; the many myriads of joyful expectants arising, changing, putting on glory, taking wing, and contending upwards, to join themselves to the triumphant heavenly host; the judgment set; the books opened; the frightful, amazed looks of surprised wretches; the equal

administration of the final judgment; the adjudication of all to their eternal states; the heavens rolled up as a scroll; the earth and all things therein consumed and burnt up!

And now, what spirit is there any more left in him towards the trivial affairs of a vanishing world? How indifferent a thing is it with him, who bears himself highest in a state of things whereof he foresees the certain hastening end! Though he will not neglect the duty of his own place; is heartily concerned to have the knowledge and fear of God more generally obtained in this apostate world; and is ready to contribute his utmost regular endeavours for the preservation of common peace and order in subserviency hereto;—yet, abstractedly from these considerations, and such as have been before mentioned, he is no more concerned who is uppermost, than one would, passing by a swarm of flies, which hath the longest wings, or which excels the rest in sprightliness or briskness of motion. And for himself, he can insert this amongst his most serious thanksgivings, that while the care is incumbent on others, of watching over the public peace and safety, he may sit still and converse with God, and his own more sedate thoughts. How secure is he in this, that Infinite Wisdom governs the world; that all things shall be disposed the best way, to the best and most valuable ends; that an afflicted state shall never befall unto good men, but when it is fittest and most conducive it should do so; that the prosperity carnal appetite covets, is never denied them, but when it would be pernicious! How calm is he in the midst of external troubles! how placid and serene a spirit inhabits his peaceful breast! When all things are shaken round about him, he is not shaken. He bears all sorts of troubles, but creates none to others, nor is disturbed by any himself.

But they that delight to see this world rolling or fixed as may most serve their private purposes, and have a perpetual quarrel with it while it looks not kindly upon them,—their life is bound up in it; and their pretences to another are

but the languid, faint notions of what they never heartily believe nor desire.

Upon the whole matter, nothing is more agreeable to this great expectation, than a steady restraint and moderation of our passions towards things without us; that is, all the several sorts of external objects and affairs, that so variously invite and tempt our observation and regard in this our present state.

Secondly, I next add: a further congruity, if we pretend to this expectation, is, *That we be not over-much taken up in minding the body.* For this looks like a design, or that inconsistent wish, to have our present state perpetuated, and that the thoughts are remote from us of a change for a better. As if, notwithstanding all that the Divine goodness hath promised concerning the future inheritance of the free and heaven-born seed, this did still lie nearest to our hearts, "O that Ishmael might live in thy sight!" and that the belief did miserably languish with us of any better portion than what our eyes do already behold, together with the apprehension of a spiritual being in us, to be ripened into a complete and actual capacity of enjoying what is better. It is true, that all the exorbitant workings of those meaner and ignoble passions, that are moved by objects and occasions without and foreign to us, have the body for their first and last, their spring and source, their centre and end. But thence it becomes the more proper and requisite that we draw nearer this their seat and centre, and strike at the root; and in killing that inordinate love and solicitude for the body, mortify them all at once.

We are indeed so far to comply with the pleasure of our Maker, as not to despise the mean abode which he hath assigned us for a while in the body; but withal to take heed lest we so cross and resist it, as to make caring for the body our whole business, which he hath only enjoined us in subserviency to an unspeakably greater and more important business. Its health and welfare ought, upon very valuable accounts, to be carefully preserved by all prudent means: but

to indulge its slothful desires, and comply with its licentious, wild cravings, is far beneath us, a base unmaning of ourselves; and would signify, as if so absurd a conceit had passed with us into a settled judgment, that a reasonable, immortal spirit was created only to tend and serve a brute. It is monstrous to behold, with how common consent multitudes that professedly agree in the belief of the immortal nature of their souls, do yet agree to debase and enslave them to the meanest servility to their mortal bodies; so as these are permitted to give laws to them, to prescribe them rules of living, and what their daily employment shall be. For observe the designs they drive, and what is the tendency of their actions and affairs,—whence the judgment is to be made concerning their inward thoughts, deliberations, and resolves,—and is not the body the measure and mark of them all? What import or signification is there, in this course, of a design for futurity? And—which increases the folly of it to a wonder—they can make a shift to go on thus from year to year, and take no notice of the absurdity! They agree to justify each one himself, and one another. The commonness of the course takes away all sense of the horrid madness of it. And because each doth as the rest do, they seem to imagine they all do well, and that there is nothing exceptionable in the case; and go on, as the silly sheep, ‘not the way they ought, but which they see others go before them.’<sup>1</sup>

But if any place could be found for calm and sober thoughts, what would be reckoned a greater impertinency than to be at so great pains for maintaining a bodily life without considering what that life shall serve for? to employ our utmost care to live, but to live for we know not what? It becomes us to be patient of the body, not fond; to treat and use our bodies as things shortly to be put off and laid aside; to care for them, not for their own, but the work’s sake we have to do in them; and leave it to them to indulge and pamper the body who expect never to live out of it; not

<sup>1</sup> ‘Non quâ eundum est, sed quâ itur.’—*Sen.*



to concern ourselves that the circumstances of our bodily state be such as will gratify our appetites, but answer the ends for which our Maker thought fit we should live a while in the body; reckoning with ourselves, we are lodged in these mean receptacles, though somewhat commodiously, yet but for a little while, and for great purposes, and more minding our journey and home than our entertainment in our inn; contentedly bearing the want of bodily accommodations that are not easily to be compassed, and the pressure of unavoidable bodily infirmities; not much pitying ourselves because of them, nor deeply regretting it if wants and pains pinch our flesh,—nay, though we see the outward man perishing, so we can but find the inward renewing day by day.

Thirdly, *That we set ourselves with the whole intention of our souls to mind the concerns of the future state, the invisible things of the other world, and direct the main stream of our thoughts, desires, hopes, and joys, thitherward.* For how highly justifiable and becoming is it that we principally mind the state and things we are made for? We should therefore make these familiar to ourselves, and use our spirits to those more noble and pleasant themes; recounting often how unworthy it is of them to grovel in the dust, or choose the objects of their converse by such measures only as are taken from sense. It is an iniquity which, though God may be so gracious to us as to forgive, we should not easily forgive to ourselves, that we have so often chosen to converse with empty trifles, while so great things have invited our thoughts in vain.

Their remoteness from sense hath little of excuse in it, and unworthy a reasonable creature. Methinks they should be ashamed to allege it, who consider themselves furnished with an intellectual power that doth in many other instances control the judgment of sense and impeach it of falsehood. Would we not blush to profess it for a principle, that there is nothing real that exceeds the sphere of our sense?

We would reckon it a part of modesty not to ascribe too much to our own understandings, or presume too far upon our

intellectual ability, against the judgment of sage and knowing persons. How is it then, that we think it not immodest to oppose the apprehensions of our dull and incapacious sense to the common faith and reason of all good and wise men that are or have been in the world, as well as our own? If we have not seen what the state of things is in the other world, are we not told? And have we not enough to assure us that it is He hath told us whose nature cannot suffer Him to impose upon us, or represent things otherwise than they are? Who else can be the author of so common a persuasion? If any man had been the first inventor of the opinion that there is another state of things to succeed to this, would he not have assumed it to himself that he was so? would he not have owned it, and gloried in it? or would not some or other of his proselyted disciples have preserved his name and memory, and transmitted them to posterity? Could so vast a sect be without a head or master known and celebrated among men?

Less plausible opinions find some owners; why is it not said who was the first broacher of this? And if he can find no other parent for it but he who was the Parent of our beings, how grateful should such a discovery be to us, both for His sake and its own! Upon His account, we should surely think it worthy to be believed; and upon its own, to be considered and seriously thought on, with greatest delight and sense of pleasure.

Many things that we reckon considerable upon much lower accounts, we so believe as to let them engage our hearts and influence our practice upon much lower evidence. How entirely are men's spirits taken up many times about meaner matters, whereof they have only a much more uncertain and fallible report from one another! What pretence can we have less to regard the testimony of Him that made us, discovering to us things so great, so important, so rational in themselves, even though they had not been so expressly revealed! Let us therefore drive the matter to a clear and short issue, and come to a resolution with ourselves: Have we

reason to believe such things, or no? If we can so far impose upon ourselves as to think we have not, or be tempted into so abject, so unrequired, and so unwarrantable a self-denial, so base an esteem of our own beings, as to account the things of this earth and present world have enough in them to answer any ends we can suppose ourselves made for, let us no longer mock the world by pretending to believe what we believe not. But if this be our settled judgment, and we will avow and own it, that we believe these things, let us no longer expose and make ourselves ridiculous, by counteracting our own professed belief in matters of such moment, pretending to believe and disregarding them at the same time. It is absurd and foolish to believe such things, and not mind them much, or not let our souls and our practice be commanded and governed by them; not to have our desires and cares, and hopes and joys, influenced thereby to the uttermost. How rational is it here, to be deeply solicitous that by the unsuitableness of our own spirits we defeat not our own expectations! How pleasant and delectable, that danger being provided against, to sit down and compare our present with our expected state; what we are, with what we hope to be ere long!—to think of exchanging shortly, infirmity, pollution, darkness, deformity, trouble, complaint, for power, purity, light, beauty, rest, and praise; how pleasant, if our spirits be fitted to that state! The endeavour whereof is a further congruity in the present case, namely,—

Fourthly, *That we make it our principal business to intend our spirits, to adorn and cultivate our inward man.* What can more become us, if we reckon we have somewhat about us made for immortality, than to bestow our chief care upon that immortal part? Therefore, to neglect our spirits, confessedly capable of so high an estate, to let them languish under wasting distempers, or lie as the sluggard's field, overgrown with thorns and briers, is as vile a slur as we can put upon ourselves and our own profession.

We should therefore make this the matter of our earnest study, what would be the proper improvements and orna-

ments of our spirits, and will most fitly qualify them for the state we are going into; and of our daily observation, how such things thrive and grow in us. Especially, we should not be satisfied till we find in ourselves a refinedness from this earth, a thorough purgation from all undue degrees of sensual inclination and affection, the consumption of our dross by a sacred fire from heaven, a spirit of judgment and of burning; an aptitude to spiritual exercises and enjoyments, high complacency in God, fervent love, a worshipping posture of soul, formed to the veneration of the eternal wisdom, goodness, power, holiness; profound humility and abnegation of ourselves; a praiseful frame of spirit, much used to gratulations and thanksgivings; a large and universal love, imitating as much as is possible the Divine; a proneness to do good to all; a steady composure and serene temper of spirit, the repose and rest of a contented mind, not boisterous, not apt unto disquiet, or to create storms to ourselves or the world, every way suitable to the blissful regions where nothing but perfect purity, entire devotedness to God, love, goodness, benignity, well-pleasèdness, order, and peace, shall have place for ever.

This we ought to be constantly intent upon as the business of our lives, our daily work, to get our spirits so attempered and fitted to heaven, that if we be asked, 'What design we drive? what are we doing?' we may be able to make this true answer, 'We are dressing ourselves for eternity.' And since nothing is required hereto that is simply impossible, nothing but what is agreeable to our natures, and would be a perfection to them, how worthy and commendable an ambition were it to be always aspiring, not to rest or take up beneath the highest pitch of attainable excellency in these kinds; reckoning every degree thereof a due to our natures, and that they have not what belongs to them while anything of real intrinsic moral goodness is yet wanting; and not only due, but necessary, and what we shall have need of in reference to the state we are shortly to enter upon; that except such

things "be in us, and abound, we cannot have an abundant entrance into the everlasting kingdom!"

And should we, pretending to such an expectation, omit such endeavours of preparing ourselves, it were a like thing as if an unbred peasant should go about to thrust himself, with an expectation of high honours and preferments, into the prince's court; or as if a distracted man should expect to be employed in the greatest and most intricate affairs of state; or an uninstructed idiot take upon him to profess and teach philosophy.

Therefore let us consider,—Are we conscious of no unfitness for that blessed state; to dwell in the presence of the holy God; to be associated with the heavenly assembly of pure, intellectual spirits; to consort and join with them in their celebrations and triumphant songs? Can we espy no such thing in ourselves as an earthly mind, aversation to God; as pride, disdain, wrath, or envy, admiration of ourselves, aptness to seek our own things, with the neglect of others, or the like? And do not our hearts then misgive, and tell us we are unready,—not yet prepared to approach the Divine presence, or to enter into the habitation of His holiness and glory? And what then have we to do, but set ourselves to our preparatory work; to set our watches, make our observations, take strict notice of all the deflections and obliquities of our spirits, settle our methods, and hasten a redress? Do not we know this is the time and state of preparation? And since we know it, how would the folly torture us by reflection, of having betrayed ourselves to a surprisal! None are ever wout to enter upon any new state without some foregoing preparation. Every more remarkable turn or change in our lives is commonly, if at all foreknown, introduced by many serious forethoughts. If a man be to change his dwelling, employment, condition; common discretion will put him upon thinking how to comport with the place, business, converse, and way of living, he is next to betake himself to. And his thoughts will be the more

intense, by how much more momentous the change. If he be to leave his country, with no probability of returning; if he be designed to a station, the circumstances whereof carry anything of awfulness in them; if to public business, if on court attendances;—with what solemnity and address are such things undertaken! How loth and ashamed would one be to go into such a condition, being totally unapt, not at all knowing how to behave himself in it! But what so great change as this can the nature of man admit, that a soul, long shut up in flesh, is now to go forth from its earthly mansion, and return no more; expecting to be received into the glorious presence of the Eternal King, and go act its part among the perfected spirits that attend his throne? How solicitous endeavour of a very thorough preparation doth this case call for! But how ill doth the common course of men agree to this, who never have such matters in their thoughts, who so much neglect not their very hogs as they do their spirits!

Fifthly, *That we have much conversation with God.* He is the only full and permanent good; therefore the endeavour of becoming very inward with him, doth best agree with the expectation of a state perfectly good and happy. To expect this, and converse only with shadows and vanishing things, is to expect to be happy without a happiness, or that our happiness should betide us as a casual thing, or be forced upon us at last whether we will or no. But since our happiness in God is on his part not necessary, but vouchsafed and gratuitous, depending on mere good pleasure; is it our best way of ingratiating ourselves with him, to neglect him, and live as without him in the world,—to keep ourselves strangers to him all our days, with a purpose only of flying to him at last, when all things else that were wont to please us are vanished and gone? And if we could suppose his wisdom and justice to admit his forgiving so provoking contempt of him, and receiving an exiled soul forced out of its earthly abode, that to the last moment of it would never look after him, or have to do with him; yet can it be supposed that its

own habitual aversion to him could allow it to be happy in him, especially being increased and confirmed by its consciousness and sense of guilt? How can these but make it banish itself, and in a sullen enmity and despair perpetually flee the Divine presence? What can in this case be more natural to it, than to give up itself to eternal solitary wanderings, as a fugitive from God; to affect to be ever inwrought in its own darkness, and hidden from his sight, and be an everlasting tormentor to itself? Can we be happy in him whom we do not love; or love whom we will not know, or be acquainted with?

What sure ground of hope can we imagine to ourselves, that our reconciliation and acquaintance with God shall ever be brought about, if it be not done while we are here in the body? Will we be so vain as to cherish a hope that not only affronts the visible import of God's revelation, but the very reason of things, and the natural tendency of our own spirits? Nor indeed, if we would consider better, can we possibly hope for what we desire not, or whereto our hearts are in an habitual disaffection, otherwise than, in the present case, negatively, and that our infidelity permits us not to fear the contrary. Yea, and the lively hope of a blessedness in God, as it includes desire, would certainly infer that purity—the image of his own—that could never fail to incline our hearts to him, and which would habituate us to a course of walking with him in inward communion.

And this were comely and agreeable to our pretences, if, while we profess ourselves made for another state, we retire ourselves from the fading things that put a vanity into this, and single out by our own choice the stable good which we expect ever to enjoy. How befitting is it to pass by all things with neglect, and betake ourselves hither with this sense, 'Lord, I have viewed the world over, in which thou hast set me; I have tried how this and that thing will fit my spirit and the design of my creation, and can find nothing in which to rest, for nothing here doth itself rest; but such things as please me for a while in some degree, vanish and flee as

shadows from before me. Lo, I come to thee, the eternal Being, the Spring of life, the Centre of rest, the Stay of the creation, the Fulness of all things! I join myself to thee. With thee I will lead my life and spend my days, with whom I aim to dwell for ever; expecting, when my little time is over, to be taken up ere long into thy eternity!

Sixthly, And since we, who live under the gospel, have heard of the Redeemer, of the dignity of his person, of his high office and power, of his merciful design and great achievements for the restoring of lapsed and lost souls; it is most agreeable to our apprehensions of the vanity of this present state, and our expectations for the future, *That we commit ourselves to him*; that with entire trust and love, devotedness and subjection, we give ourselves up to his happy conduct, to be led by him to God, and instated into that eternal blessedness which we look for.

His "kingdom is not of this world;" as we profess not to be. We cannot be innocently ignorant that its constitution and frame, its laws and ordinances, its aspect and tendency in itself, and the whole course of its administration, are directed to that other state. He hath "overcome death, and him that had the power of it;" hath "brought life and immortality to light;" is "the first-begotten from the dead," and "the first-fruits of them that slept;" hath opened heaven to us; and is himself ascended and entered as our victorious, triumphant Captain and Forerunner. He is adorned with highest power, and hath set up a universal kingdom, extended to the utmost bounds of this apostate world and the vaster regions of innocent and constantly loyal spirits. His proclamations are issued out, his ensigns displayed, to invite and call in whosoever are weary of the sin and vanity of this wretched world, of their alienation from the life of God, of living in the midst of death, to join themselves to him, the Prince and Lord of life, and be led by him to the immortal state. If the present state of things appear dismal to us; if we reckon it a woful spectacle to behold sin and death reigning, wickedness and mortality acting their combined parts, to waste the world



and lay it desolate; if we would deliver ourselves and escape from the common ruin, are seriously designing for heaven, and that world in which death hath no place, nor any shadow of death; let us betake ourselves to him, enrol our names, put ourselves under his banners and discipline, strictly observing the laws and following the guidance of that our invisible Lord, who will be "author of eternal salvation to them that obey him," and "save to the uttermost all that come to God through him." How dear should he be to us! How cheerfully should we trust him, how dutifully serve him, how faithfully adhere to him, both for his own sake and that of the design he hath in hand for us, and the pleasant savour of heaven and immortality which breathes in both!

But if we neglect him, and disown our relation to him; or if we let days and years go over our heads, wherein we drowsily slumber; roll ourselves in the dust of the earth; and, while we call ourselves Christians, forget the reason and importance of our own name and think not of our being under his call and conduct to the eternal kingdom and glory: this is perversely to reject what we say only we seek; to disclaim and renounce our pretences to immortality; to blast and damn our own great hopes.

Seventhly and lastly, It is congruous to our expectation of so great things after death, *That we live in a cheerful, pleasant expectation of it.* For what must necessarily intervene, though not grateful in itself, should be reckoned so for the sake of that which is. This only can upon the best terms reconcile us to the grave, that our greatest hopes lie beyond it, and are not hazarded by it, but accomplished.

Although indeed nothing were to be expected hereafter, yet so little suitable entertainment doth this world afford to a reasonable spirit, that the mere weariness of beholding a scene of vanity and folly might well make a recess acceptable. For is it so grateful a thing to observe the confused scramble and hurry of the world; how almost every one makes it his business to catch from another what is worth nothing; with what toil, and art, and violence, men pursue what, when

they embrace, they find a shadow; to see deluded mortals, each one intent upon his own particular design and most commonly interfering with another's; some imposed upon by others' overreaching wit, and all by their own folly; some lamenting their losses, others their short and unsatisfying acquisitions; many pleasing themselves with being mocked, and contentedly hugging the empty cloud; till death comes and ends the story, and ceases the busy agitation,—that is, with so many particular persons, not with the world; a new succession<sup>1</sup> still springing up, that continue the interlude, and still act over the same parts, *ad tedium usque!*

What serious person, who is not in love with impertinency and foolery, would much regret it, to close his eyes, to have the curtains drawn, and bid good night to the world, without ever wishing to see the morning of such another day? And even they that have the world most in their power, and can command what they please for the gratifying of their appetites, without the contradiction and control of others, what can they enjoy more to-morrow than they did yesterday, or the next year than this? Is it so much worth the while to live, to see a few more persons bow the knee; to extend power a little farther; to make another essay what pleasure sense can taste in some or other hitherto unexperimented rarity,—what more peculiar gusto this or that thing will afford, and try the other dish, or to renew the same relishes over again?

He whose creative fancy could make him golden mountains in a dream, create him a prince of nations, give him to enjoy the most delicious pleasures of the world in idea, might, with some plausible show of reason, be deemed the happier man, than he that hath and is all this indeed; for his toil is less, and his victories unbloody, his pleasures not so impure. However, one would think, that to such whose utmost attainments end only in the pleasure of their sense, and have but

<sup>1</sup> The original edition has 'succretion;' which, as derived from 'succresco,' yields a good sense, and may be no misprint, but one of the unusual words to be found in our author's writings.—Ed.

this epiphonema, 'Now let us sit down, eat, drink, and be merry,' a little time might suffice for business of no more weight; and that no man, after he hath once seen the course of the world and tasted of its best delicacies, should greatly wish for a renewal or long-continued repetition of so fulsome vanities.

But the most find not the world so kind, and are not so much exercised in the innovating of *pleasures* as *miseries*,—changes being their only remedies, as the moralist speaks; or in bearing, more sadly, the same every-day's burden, and drawing out the series of their calamities in the same kind through the whole course of their time. And surely, these things considered, there wants not what might persuade a sceptic or even a perfect infidel as to another world, not much to be in love with this. For, upon the whole, let but the case be thus put: Is it not as good to do nothing, as to be busy to no purpose? And again: Is it not as good to be nothing, as to be and do nothing? Sober reason would judge, at least, there were but little odds.

But now, if such considerations as have been mentioned would suffice to state the matter *in æquilibrio*, to make the scales even,—ought the rational, sober belief of a blessed immortality to do nothing to turn the balance? Ought the love of God to do nothing? The desire and hope of a state perfectly good and happy, quiet and peaceful; of living in the region of undefiled, innocent love and pleasure; in the communion of holy and blessed spirits,—all highly pleased, not in their own only, but one another's happiness, and all concentrating in the admiration and praise of their common Parent and Lord;—ought all this nothing to alter the case with us, or signify nothing to the inclining our minds to the so unspeakably better part?

Methodists, since we acknowledge such an order of intelligent, and already happy creatures, we should even blush to think they should be spectators of our daily course and too plainly discovered inclinations, so disform and unagreeable to all the laws and dictates of reasonable nature! What censures,

may we think, do they pass upon our follies! Are those things great in their eyes that are so in ours? In lesser matters (as some interpret that passage, 1 Cor. xi. 10) indecencies are to be avoided, because of those blessed spirits. May we not then be ashamed that they should discern our terrene dispositions, and see us come so unwillingly into their comfort and happy state? Although our present depressing circumstances will not suffer us to be in all things as yet conformable to their high condition, we should however carry it as candidates thereto; studying to approve ourselves, waiting and longing to be transumed and taken up into it.

And since we have so high and great an expectation, and it is understood and known that the very perfection and end of our beings is no otherwise attainable than by putting off our sordid flesh, and laying aside this earthly appurtenance,—that yet there should be so fixed and prevailing an aversion to it, is a most unaccountable thing, and one of the greatest problems in nature. I say prevailing; for admit, what is like to be alleged, that an addictedness to the body is by natural inclination,—ought not the laws of a superior to prevail over those of the inferior nature? and is not the love of God a higher natural law than that of the body; to whom here our service is little, yea, our disservice much; and from whose most desirable commerce we suffer so uncomfortable a disclusion by the sad circumstances of our bodily state? Are we more nearly allied to a piece of clay than to the Father of our spirits? And again, is not everything nearest to itself, and obliged to place love there, rather than on any inferior thing at least, how nearly soever united; since there can be no pretence of any such nearer union than of a thing with itself? And are not our souls and our bodies, though united, yet distinct things? Why then, should not our souls, that are capable of understanding their own interest, mind that first; intend most their own perfection and improvement, and begin their charity at home? It is not strange, that what is weaker and more ignoble should affect union with what is above it, and a spring of life to it; but when it is

found burdensome, nothing forbids but that the superior being may be well content, upon fair and allowable terms, to be rid of the burden. Therefore, though flesh and blood may reluctate and shrink at it, when we think of laying it down, yet it becomes immortal spirits to consider their own affairs, and be more principally intent upon what will be their own advantage. If so mean a creature as a sorry flea, finding it can draw a suitable aliment from our bodies, affect to dwell there, and is loth to leave us, it were a ludicrous pity to be therefore content to endure its troublesome vellications, because we fear the poor animal should be put to its shifts, and not be otherwise able to find a subsistence. It is true, that the great Creator and Lord of the universe hath not permitted us the liberty of so throwing off our bodies when we will, which otherwise are in dignity far more beneath our spirits than so despicable a creature is beneath them. And to His dispose that hath ordered this conjunction for a time, whether we look upon it as an effect of his simple pleasure or of his displeasure, we must yield an awful and a patient submission, till this part of his providence towards us have run its course and attained its ends. And then, how welcome should the hour of our discharge and freedom be, from so troublesome an associate! which upon no other account, than that of duty towards the Author of our beings, one would more endure than to have the most noisome, offensive vermin always preying upon his flesh. At least,—though the consideration of our own advantage had no place with us in this matter,—the same sense of duty towards our great Creator, which should make us patient of an abode in the body while he will have it so, should also form our spirits to a willing departure, when it shall be his pleasure to release us thence. But, that neither a regard to his pleasure nor our own blessedness, should prevail against our love to the body, is the unaccountable thing I speak of. And to plead only in the case the corruption of our natures, that sets us at odds with God and ourselves, is to justify the thing by what is itself most unjustifiable,—or rather (as some that have

affected to be styled philosophers have been wont to expedite difficulties by resolving the matter into the usual course of nature,) to resolve the thing into itself, and say, 'It is so, because it is so, or is wont to be;' and, indeed, plainly to confess there is no account to be given of it: this being the very thing about which we expostulate, that reasonable nature should so prevaricate; the commonness whereof doth not take away the wonder, but rather render it more dreadful and astonishing.

The truth is, the incongruity in the present case is only to be solved by redress,—by earnest strivings with God and our own souls, till we find ourselves recovered into a right mind; into the constitution and composure whereof a generous fortitude hath a necessary ingrediency; that usually upon lower motives refuses no change of climate, and will carry a man into unknown countries and through greatest hazards, in the pursuit of honourable enterprises of a much inferior kind.

It is reckoned a brave and manly thing, to be in the temper of one's mind a citizen of the world, meaning it of this lower one; but why not rather of the universe? And it is accounted mean and base that one should be so confined by his fear or sloth to that spot of ground where he was born, as not upon just inducement to look abroad, and go, for warrantable and worthy purposes,—yea, if it were only honest self-advantage,—as far as the utmost ends of the earth. But dare we not venture a little farther? These are too narrow bounds for a truly great spirit. Anything that is tinctured with earth or savours of mortality, we should reckon too mean for us; and not regret it that heaven and immortality are not to be attained but by dying: so should the love of our own souls and the desire of a perpetual state of life, triumph over the fear of death.

But it may be alleged by some, that it is only a solicitous love to their souls that makes them dread this change. They know it will not fare with all alike hereafter, and know not

what their own lot shall be. And is this indeed our case? Then, what have we been doing all this while? and how are we concerned to lose no more time! But too often a terrene spirit lurks under this pretence; and men allege their want of assurance of heaven, when the love of this earth, which they cannot endure to think of leaving, holds their hearts.

And—a little to discuss this matter—what would we have to assure us? Do we expect a vision or a voice? or are we not to try ourselves, and search for such characters in our own souls as may distinguish and note us out for heaven? Among these, what can be more clear and certain than this, that *we have our hearts much set upon it?* They that have their “conversation in heaven,” may from thence expect the Saviour, who shall change “their vile bodies,” (the bodies of their humiliation, or low, abject state,) and make them “like his own glorious body.”<sup>1</sup>

God, “who will render to every man according to his deeds,” will give “them who, by patient continuance in well-doing, seek honour and glory and immortality, eternal life.”<sup>2</sup> They that “set their affections” (or “minds”) “on the things above, not on those on the earth, when Christ shall appear, who is their life, shall appear with him in glory.”<sup>3</sup> Mistake not the notion of heaven, or the blessedness of the other world; render it not to yourselves a composition of sensual enjoyments; understand it principally to consist in perfect holiness and communion with God, as his own word represents it, and as reason hath taught even some pagans to reckon of it;—and you cannot judge of your own right by a surer and plainer rule than that *eternal blessedness shall be theirs whose hearts are truly bent and directed towards it.* Admit we then this principle; and now let us reason with ourselves from it: We have a discovery made to us of a future state of blessedness in God, not as desirable only in itself, but

<sup>1</sup> Phil. iii. 20, 21.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. ii. 6, 7.

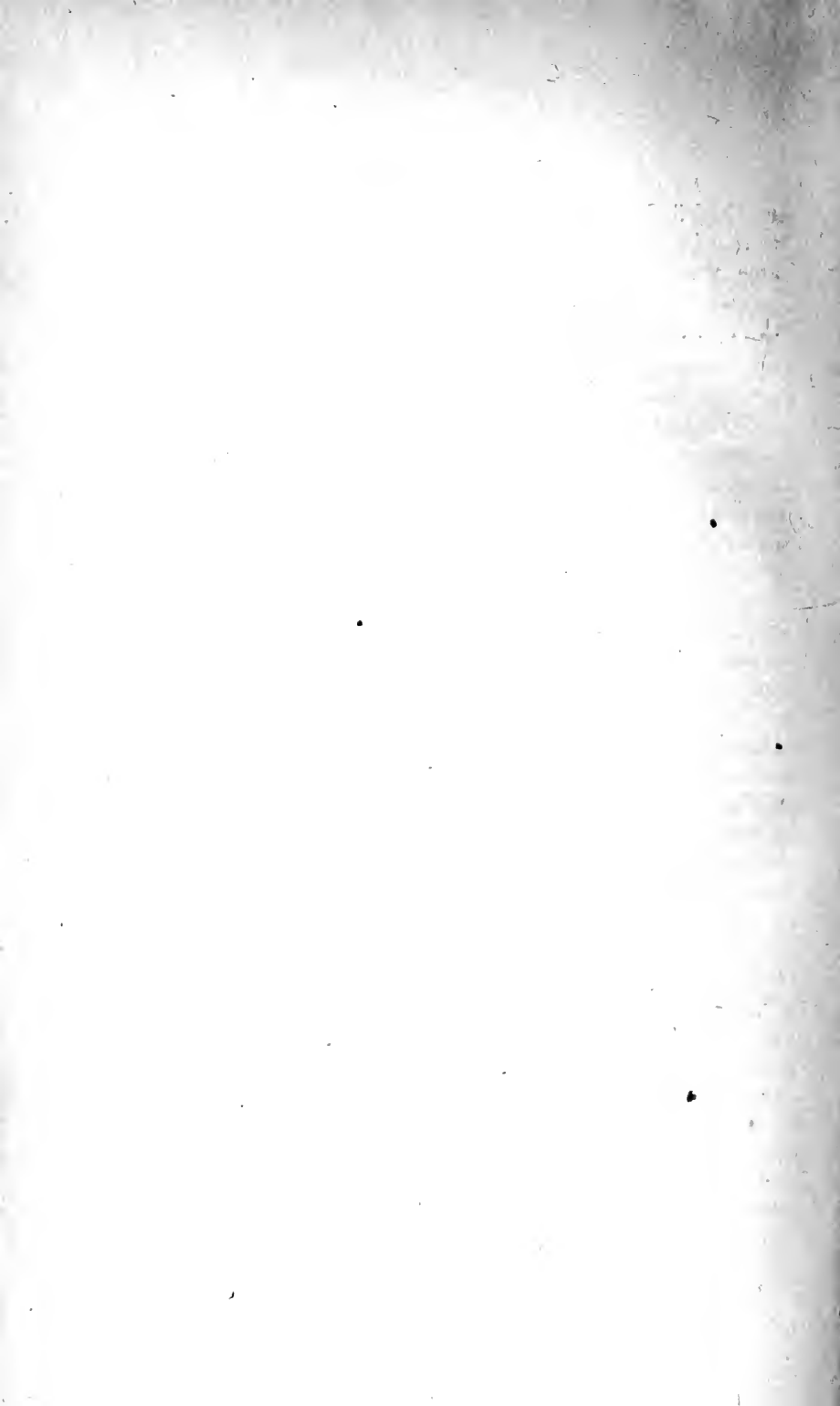
<sup>3</sup> Col. iii. 2, 4.

as attainable and possible to be enjoyed, the Redeemer having opened the way to it by his blood, and given us at once both the prospect and the offer of it; so that it is before us as the object of a reasonable desire. Now, either our hearts are so taken with this discovery, that we above all things desire this state, or not. If they be, we desire it more than our earthly stations and enjoyments, and are willing to leave the world and the body to enjoy it; and so did falsely accuse ourselves of a prevailing aversion to this change. If they be not, the thing is true, that we are upon no terms willing to die; but the cause is falsely or partially assigned. It is not so much because we are unassured of heaven, but, as was above suspected, because we love this world better, and our hearts centre in it as our most desirable good.

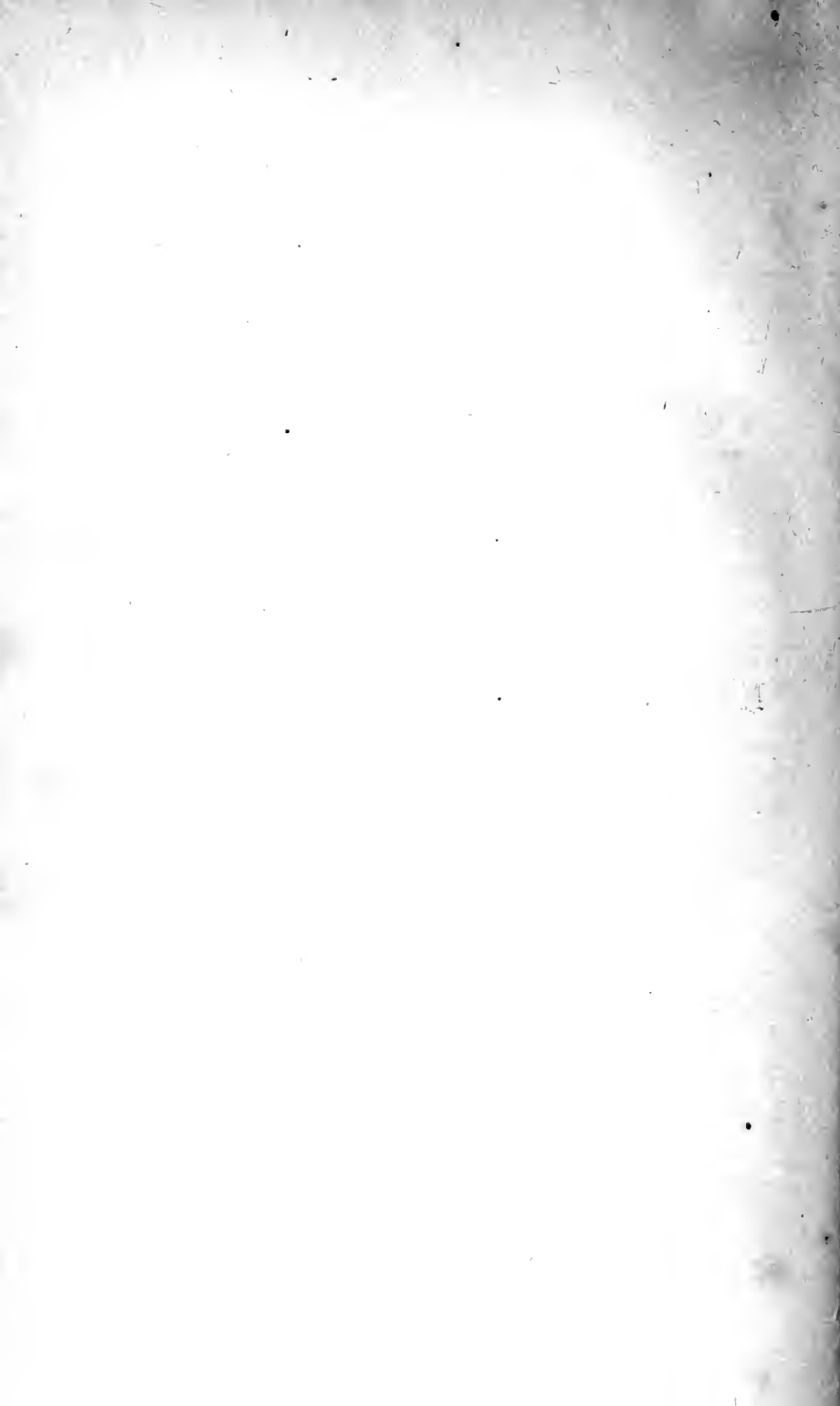
Therefore we see how unreasonably this is often said, 'We are unwilling to change states, because we are unassured.' The truth is, they are unassured because they are unwilling. And what then ensues? They are unwilling, because they are unwilling. And so they may endlessly dispute themselves round, from unwillingness to unwillingness. But is there no way to get out of this unhappy circle? In order to it, let the case be more fully understood. Either this double unwillingness must be referred to the same thing, or to diverse. If to the same thing, it is not sense; they say what signifies nothing: for being to assign a cause of their unwillingness to quit the body, to say because they are unwilling,—namely, of that,—is to assign no cause; for nothing can be the cause of itself. But if they refer to diverse things and say, they are unwilling to go out of the body, because they are unwilling to forsake earth for heaven, the case is then plain, but sad; and not alterable but with the alteration of the temper of their spirits. Wherefore let us all apply ourselves—since with none this is so fully done that no more is needful—to the serious endeavour of getting our souls purged from the dross of this world, and enamoured of the purity and blessedness of heaven: so the cause and effect will vanish together;



we shall find that suitableness and inclination in our spirits to that blessedness as may yield us the ground of a comfortable persuasion that it belongs to us; and then not be unwilling, though many deaths stood in our way, to break through to attain it.



MAN'S CREATION IN A HOLY BUT  
MUTABLE STATE.



## MAN'S CREATION IN A HOLY BUT MUTABLE STATE.

ECCLES. vii. 29.

“LO, THIS ONLY HAVE I FOUND, THAT GOD HATH MADE MAN UPRIGHT ;  
BUT THEY HAVE SOUGHT OUT MANY INVENTIONS.”

IN these words you have the result of a serious inquiry into the state of mankind. In the verse immediately foregoing, the preacher speaks his own experience touching each sex distributively,—how rare it was to meet with a wise and good man, how much rarer with a prudent and virtuous woman: so he must be understood, though these qualities are not expressed; then in the text gives this verdict touching both collectively, tending to acquit their Maker of their universal depravation, and convict them: “Lo, this only have I found,” etc.

The words contain two propositions:—

The first touching *man's perfection by his creation*: “God made,” etc.

The second touching *his defection by sin*: “But they have sought,” etc.

Together with a *solemn preface introducing both*, and recommending them as well-weighed truths: “Lo, this only have I found,” etc.; as much as to say, ‘I do not now speak at random, and by guess; no, but I solemnly pronounce it, as that which I have found out by serious study and diligent exploration, that God made man upright,’ etc.

The terms are not obscure, and are fitly rendered. I find no considerable variety of readings, and cannot needlessly

spend time about words: only, in short,—By “man” you must understand man collectively, so as to comprehend the whole species. “Making him upright,” you must understand so as to refer “making” not to the adjunct only, supposing the subject pre-existent, but to both subject and adjunct together; and so it is man’s concreate and original righteousness that is here meant. By “inventions” understand, as the antithesis doth direct, such as are alien from this rectitude. Nor is it altogether improbable that in this expression some reference may be had to that curious desire of *knowing much* that tempted Adam and Eve into the first transgression. “Many inventions,” seems to be spoken in opposition to that simplicity and singleness of heart which this original rectitude did include: truth is but one; falsehood, manifold. “God made man upright;” that is, simple, plain-hearted, free from all tortuous windings and involutions. So the word rendered “upright” in the text doth signify; and Jeshurun (derived therefrom) which God thought a fit name for his people Israel, the seed of plain-hearted Jacob, to be known by; answerably whereto Nathanael is said to be a true Israelite, in whom was no guile.<sup>1</sup> Such, man was at first; now, in the room of this simplicity, you find a multiplicity. He was of one constant, uniform frame and tenor of spirit, held one straight, direct, and even course; now he is become full of inventions, grown vafrous, multiform as to the frame of his spirit, uncertain, intricate, perplexed in all his ways. “Sought out;”—this notes the voluntariness and perfect spontaneity of his defection; it was his own doing. God made him upright; he hath sought out means to deform and undo himself. The words thus opened afford us two great gospel truths:—

DOCT. I. *That God endued the nature of man, in his creation, with a perfect and universal rectitude.*

DOCT. II. *That man’s defection from his primitive state was purely voluntary, and from the unconstrained choice of his own mutable and self-determining will.*

<sup>1</sup> John i. 47.

Though the latter part of the text would afford a sufficient ground to treat of the state of man now fallen, yet, that being by agreement left to another hand, I observe no more from it than what concerns the *manner of his fall*, and that only as it depended on a mutable will. In handling these truths, I shall, first, open them in certain explicatory theses; and, secondly, improve them in some few practical and applicatory inferences.

Doct. I. About the former,—‘That God endued the nature of man in his creation, with a perfect and universal rectitude,’—take these propositions for explication:—

*Prop. 1.* All created rectitude consists in conformity to some rule or law. Rectitude is a mere relative thing, and its relation is to a rule. By a rule, I here mean a law strictly taken; and therefore I speak this only of created rectitude. A law is a rule of duty given by a superior to an inferior; nothing can be in that sense a rule to God, or the measure of increated rectitude.

*Prop. 2.* The highest rule of all created rectitude is the will of God, considered as including most intrinsically an eternal and immutable reason, justice, and goodness. It is certain there can be no higher rule to creatures than the Divine will; and as certain that the government of God over his creatures is always reasonable, and just, and gracious; and that this reasonableness, justice, and goodness, by which it is so, should be subjected anywhere but in God himself, none that know what God is, according to our more obvious notions of him, can possibly think.<sup>1</sup>

*Prop. 3.* Any sufficient signification of this will, touching the reasonable creature’s duty, is a law, indispensably obliging such a creature. A law is a constitution *de debito*; and it is the legislator’s will, not concealed in his own breast, but duly expressed, that makes this constitution, and infers an obligation on the subject.

*Prop. 4.* The law given to Adam at his creation was

<sup>1</sup> Rom. vii. 12, xii. 1, 2; Ezek. xviii. 25, xxxiii.

partly *natural*, given by way of internal impression upon his soul; partly *positive*, given, as is probable, by some more external discovery or revelation. That the main body of laws whereby man was to be governed, should be at first given no other way than by stamping them upon his mind and heart, was a thing congruous enough to his innocent state, as it is to angels and saints in glory; it being then exactly contempered to his nature, highly approvable to his reason,—as is evident in that being fallen, his reason ceases not to approve it,<sup>1</sup>—fully suitable to the inclination and tendency of his will, and not at all regretted by any reluctant principle that might in the least oppose or render him doubtful about his duty.

Yet was it most reasonable also that some positive commands should be superadded, that God's right of dominion and government over him as Creator might be more expressly asserted, and he might more fully apprehend his own obligation as a creature to do *some things* because it was his Maker's will, as well as *others* because they appeared to him in their own nature reasonable and fit to be done; for so the whole of what God requires of man is fitly distinguished into some things which he commands because they are just, and some things that are just because he commands them.

*Prop. 5.* Adam was endued in his creation with a sufficient ability and habitude to conform to this whole law, both natural and positive; in which ability and habitude his original rectitude did consist. This proposition carries in it the main truth we have now in hand; therefore requires to be more distinctly insisted on. There are two things in it to be considered;—*the thing itself he was endued with; and the manner of the endowment.*

(1.) The thing itself wherewith he was endued; that was, uprightness, rectitude,—otherwise called the image of God, though that expression comprehends more than we now speak of; as his immortality, dominion over the inferior

<sup>1</sup> Rom. ii. 13.



creatures, etc.: which uprightness or rectitude consisted in the habitual conformity, or conformability of all his natural powers to this whole law of God; and is therefore considerable two ways, namely, in relation to its *subject* and its *rule*:—

i. In relation to its *subject*; that was the whole soul,—in some sense it may be said the whole man,—even the several powers of it. And here we are led to consider the parts of this rectitude, for it is co-extended, if that phrase may be allowed, with its subject, and lies spread out into the several powers of the soul; for had any power been left destitute of it, such is the frame of man, and the dependence of his natural powers on each other in order to action, that it had disabled him to obey, and had destroyed his rectitude; for ‘Bonum non oritur nisi ex causis integris, malum vero ex quovis defectu.’ And hence, as Davenant well observes,<sup>1</sup> according to the parts, if I may so speak, of the subject wherein it was, man’s original rectitude must be understood to consist of,—

First, a perfect illumination of mind to understand and know the will of God; secondly, a compliance of heart and will therewith; thirdly, an obedient subordination of the sensitive appetite, and other inferior powers, that in nothing they might resist the former. That it comprehends all these, appears by comparing Col. iii. 10, where the image of God, wherein man was created, is said to consist in knowledge, that hath its seat and subject in the mind, with Eph. iv. 24, where righteousness and holiness are also mentioned; the one whereof consists in equity towards men, the other in loyalty and devotedness to God; both which necessarily suppose the due framing of the other powers of the soul to the ducture of an enlightened mind. And besides, that work of sanctification, which in these Scriptures is expressly called a renovation of man according to the image of God wherein he was created, doth in other Scriptures appear, as the fore-

<sup>1</sup> Davenant de Justitiâ Habituali, etc.

mentioned author also observes, to consist of parts proportionable to these I mention; namely, illumination of mind;<sup>1</sup> conversion of heart;<sup>2</sup> victory over concupiscence.<sup>3</sup>

ii. Consider this rectitude in relation to its *rule*;—that is, the will of God revealed, or the law of God. “Sin is the transgression of the law:”<sup>4</sup> and accordingly righteousness must needs be conformity to the law; namely, actual righteousness consists in actual conformity to the law,—that habitual rectitude which Adam was furnished with in his creation, of which we are speaking, in an habitual conformity, or an ability to conform, to the same law. This habitual conformity was, as of the whole soul, so to the whole law; that is, to both the parts or kinds of it, natural and positive. He was furnished with particular principles, inclining him to comply with whatsoever the law of nature had laid before him; and with a general principle, disposing him to yield to whatsoever any positive law should lay before him as the will of God. And if it be said, in reference to the former of these, that this law of nature impressed upon Adam’s soul was his very rectitude, therefore how can this rectitude be a conformity to this law? I answer,—*1st.* A law is twofold,—‘*regulans et regulata* ;’<sup>5</sup>—*2dly.* The law of nature impressed upon the soul of Adam must be considered,—(*1st.*) As subjected *in his mind*, so it consisted of certain practical notions about good and evil, right and wrong, etc.; (*2dly.*) As subjected *in his heart*, so it consisted in certain habitual inclinations to conform to those principles. Now these inclinations of the heart, though they are a *rule* to actions, they are yet something *ruled* in reference to those notions in the mind; and their conformity thereto makes one part of original rectitude. And those notions, though they are a rule to these inclinations, yet they are something ruled in reference to the will of God signified by them; and in the conformity thereto consists another part of this original rectitude.

<sup>1</sup> Eph. i. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. li. 10.

<sup>3</sup> Rom. vi., vii.

<sup>4</sup> 1 John iii. 4.

<sup>5</sup> Aquin. Summ.

(2.) We have to consider the manner of this endowment. And as to this, it is much disputed among the schoolmen, whether it were natural or supernatural. I shall only lay down, in few words, what I conceive to be clear and indisputable:—

i. If by natural you mean *essential*, whether constitutively or consecutively, so original righteousness was not natural to man; for then he could never have lost it, without the loss of his being.

ii. If by natural you mean *connatural*,—that is, concreate with the nature of man, and consonant thereto,—so I doubt not but it was natural to him.

*Prop.* 6. This rectitude of man's nature could not but infer and include his actual blessedness, while he should act according to it. According to the tenor of the covenant, it could not but infer it. And consider this rectitude in itself, it must needs include it: the rectitude of his understanding, including his knowledge of the highest good; and the rectitude of his will and affections, the acceptance and enjoyment thereof;—as Augustine in this case, 'Nullum bonum abesset homini, quod recta voluntas optare posset,'<sup>1</sup> etc.

Thus far of the holiness and blessedness of man's first state. It follows to speak of the *mutability* of it, and of his fall as depending thereon:—

*Doctr.* II. That man's defection from his primitive state was merely voluntary, and from the unconstrained choice of his own mutable and self-determining will. For the asserting of this truth take the following propositions:—

*Prop.* 1. That the nature of man is now become universally depraved and sinful. This, Scripture is full of;<sup>2</sup> and experience and common observation put it beyond dispute. It is left then that sin must have had some original among men.

*Prop.* 2. The pure and holy nature of God could never

<sup>1</sup> De Civitate Dei.

<sup>2</sup> I Kings viii. 46; Ps. xiv. 1; Rom. iii. 12, etc., v. 12, 13, etc.; I John v. 19, etc.

be the original of man's sin. This is evident in itself. God disclaims it;<sup>1</sup> nor can any affirm it of Him without denying His very being. He could not be the cause of unholiness but by ceasing to be holy, which would suppose Him mutably holy; and if either God or man must be confessed mutable, it is no difficulty where to lay it: whatever He is, He is essentially; and necessity of existence, of being always what He is, remains everlastingly the fundamental attribute of His being.<sup>2</sup>

*Prop.* 3. It is blasphemous and absurd to talk of two principles (as the Manichees of old); the one good *per se*, and the cause of all good; the other evil *per se*, and the cause of all evil.

Bradwardine's two arguments,—first, That this would suppose two gods, two independent beings; secondly, That it would suppose an evil god,—do sufficiently convince this to be full both of blasphemy and contradiction.<sup>3</sup>

*Prop.* 4. It was not possible that either external objects or the temptation of the devil should necessitate the will of man to sin. External objects could not; for that were to reject all upon God: for if he create objects with such an allactive power in them, and create such an appetite in man as cannot but work inordinately and sinfully towards those objects, it must needs infer his efficacious necessitation of sin, seeing it would destroy the truth already established,—that God created man with such a rectitude as that there was a sufficient ability in his superior powers for the cohibition and restraint of the inferior, that they should not work inordinately towards their objects. The devil could not do it for the same reason, having no way to move the will of man but by the proposal of objects; yet that by this means,—which he could in many respects manage most advantageously,—he did much help forward the first sin, Scripture leaves us not to doubt.

<sup>1</sup> Deut. xxxii. 4; Ps. v. 4; 3 John 11.

<sup>2</sup> Jas. i. 17.

<sup>3</sup> Bradwardine de Causâ Dei.

*Prop. 5.* The whole nature of sin consisting only in a defect, no other cause need be designed of it than a defective; that is, an understanding, will, and inferior powers, however originally good, yet mutably and defectively so. I shall not insist to prove that sin is no positive being; but I take the argument to be irrefragable, notwithstanding the cavils made against it, that is drawn from that common maxim, that ‘*Omne ens positivum est vel primum, vel a primo.*’ And that of Dionysius the Areopagite<sup>1</sup> is an ingenious one. He argues that no being can be evil *per se*; for then it must be immutably, which no evil can be; for to be always the same is a certain property of goodness,—it is so even of the highest goodness.

And hence sin being supposed only a defect, a soul that is only defectibly holy might well enough be the cause of it; that is, the deficient cause. Nor is it in the least strange that man should be at first created with a defectible holiness; for if he were immutably holy, either it must be ‘*ex naturâ*’ or ‘*ex gratiâ*:’—‘*ex naturâ*’ it could not be, for that would suppose him God; if it were ‘*ex gratiâ*,’ then it must be free, then it might be or might not be,—therefore there was no incongruity in it that it should not be. And indeed, it was most congruous that God having newly made such a creature, furnished with such powers, so capable of government by a law, of being moved by promises and threats, He should for some time hold him as a ‘*viator*,’ in a state of trial unconfirmed,—as He did also the innocent angels; that it might be seen how he would behave himself towards his Maker, and that he should be rewardable and punishable accordingly, in a state that should be everlasting and unchangeable. The liberty, therefore, of the viators and the comprehensors, Gibieuf well distinguishes into ‘*inchoata*’ or ‘*consummabilis*,’ and ‘*perfecta*’ or ‘*consummata*;’<sup>2</sup>—the former such as Adam’s was at his creation: the latter such as is the state of angels and saints in glory, and as his would

<sup>1</sup> Dion. de Div. Nom.

<sup>2</sup> Gibieuf de Libertate Dei et Creaturæ.

have been had he held out and persisted innocent through the intended time of trial.

It was, therefore, no strange thing that man should be created defectible; it was as little strange that a defectible creature should 'deficere.' For the manner of that defection, whether error of the understanding preceded, or inconsideration only, and a neglect of its office,—with the great difficulties some imagine herein, I waive discourse about them; judging that advice good and sober, *for to consider more how sin may be gotten out of the world than how it came in*: though it is most probable there was in the instant of temptation a mere suspension of the understanding's act (not as previous to the sin, but as a part of it), and thereupon a sudden precipitation of will, as Estius doth well determine.

*Prop. 6.* Man being created mutable as to his holiness, must needs be so as to his happiness too: and that both upon a legal account, for the law had determined that if he did sin he must die; and also upon a natural, for it was not possible that, his soul being once depraved by sin, the powers of it vitiated, their order each to other and towards their objects broken and interrupted, there should remain a disposition and aptitude to converse with the highest Good.

The use follows; which shall be only in certain practical inferences that will issue from these truths; partly considered singly and severally, partly together and in conjunction.

From the first,—

1. Did God create man upright, as hath been shown? then how little reason had man to sin! how little reason had he to desert God, to be weary of his first estate! Could God's making him, His making him upright, be a reason why he should sin against Him? Was His directing his heart and the natural course of his affections towards Himself, a reason why he should forsake Him? What was there in his state that should make it grievous to him? was his duty too much for him? God made him upright, so that every part of it was connatural to him. Was his privilege too little? He knew, and loved, and enjoyed the highest and infinite

Good. O think, then, how unreasonable and disingenuous a thing sin was! that a creature that was nothing but a few hours ago, now a reasonable being, capable of God, yet should sin! Urge your hearts with this; we are too apt to think ourselves unconcerned in Adam's sin; we look upon ourselves too abstractedly; we should remember we are members of a community, and it should be grievous to us to think that our *species* hath dealt so unkindly and unworthily with God. And besides, do not we sin daily after the similitude of Adam's transgression? and is not sin as unreasonable and unjust a thing as ever?

2. Was our primitive state so good and happy? How justly may we reflect and look back toward our first state! how fitly might we take up Job's words! "Oh that I were as in months past, . . . as in the days of my youth, . . . when the Almighty was yet with me, . . . when I put on righteousness, and it clothed me, . . . when my glory was fresh in me!"<sup>1</sup> etc. With what sadness may we call to mind the things that are past, and the beginnings of ancient time; when there was no stain upon our natures, no cloud upon our minds, no pollution upon our hearts; when with pure and undefiled souls we could embrace, and rest, and rejoice in the eternal and incomprehensible Good! When we remember these things, do not our bowels turn? are not our souls poured out within us?

From the second,—

1. Did man so voluntarily ruin himself? how unlikely is he now to be his own saviour! He that was a self-destroyer from the beginning, that ruined himself as soon as God had made him, is he likely now to save himself? Is it easier for him to recover his station than to have kept it? Or hath he improved himself by sinning, and gained strength by his fall for a more difficult undertaking? Is he grown better-natured towards himself and his God than he was at first?

2. How little reason hath he to blame God, though he

<sup>1</sup> Job xxix. 2, 4, 5, 14, 20.

finally perish! What would he have had God to have done more to prevent it? He gave His law to direct him, His threatening to warn him; His promise for his encouragement was evidently implied; his nature was sufficiently disposed to improve and comport with all these; yet he sins!—is God to be charged with this?—sins upon no necessity, with no pretence, but that he must be seeking out inventions, trying experiments, essaying to better his state; as plainly despising the law, suspecting the truth, envying the greatness, asserting and aspiring to the sovereignty and Godhead of his Maker. Had we, any of us, a mind to contend with God about this matter, how would we order our cause, how would we state our quarrel? If we complain that we should be condemned and ruined all in one man,—that is to complain that we are Adam's children. A child might as well complain that he is the son of a beggar or a traitor, and charge it as injustice upon the prince or law of the land that he is not born to a patrimony; this is a misery to him, but no man will say it is a wrong. And can it be said we are wronged by the common Ruler of the world, that we do not inherit from our father the righteousness and felicity he had wilfully lost long before we were his children? If we think it hard we should be tied to terms we never consented to, might not an heir as well quarrel with the magistrate, that he suffers him to become liable to his father's debts, and to lie in prison if he have not to pay?

But besides, who can imagine but we should have consented, had all mankind been at that time existent in innocency together? that is, let the case be stated thus: Suppose Adam, our common parent, to have had all his children together with him before the Lord, while the covenant of works was not as yet made, and while as yet God was not under any engagement to the children of men. Let it be supposed, that he did propound it to the whole race of mankind together, that he would capitulate with their common parent on their behalf, according to the terms of that first covenant; if he stood, they should stand; if he fall,



they must all fall with him. Let it be considered, that if this had not been consented to, God might, without the least colour of exception, being as yet under no engagement to the contrary, have annihilated the whole species; for wherein can it seem hard, that what was nothing but the last moment, should the next moment be suffered to relapse into nothing again? Let it also be considered, that Adam's own personal interest, and a mighty natural affection towards so vast a progeny, might well be thought certainly to engage him to the uttermost care and circumspection on his own and their behalf. It must also be remembered, that all being now in perfect innocency, no defect of reason, no frowardness or perverseness of will, can be supposed in any, to hinder their right judgment and choice of what might appear to be most for their own advantage, and the glory of their Maker.

Can it now possibly be thought, the case being thus stated, that any man should rather choose presently to lose his being, and the pleasures and hopes of such a state, than to have consented to such terms? It cannot be thought.

For consider the utmost that might be objected, and suppose one thus to reason the matter with himself: 'Why, it is a mighty hazard for me to suspend my everlasting happiness or misery upon the uncertain determinations of another man's mutable will; shall I trust my eternal concerns to such a peradventure, and put my life and hopes into the hands of a fellow-creature?'

It were obvious to him to answer himself, 'Ay, but he is my father; he bears a natural affection to me; his own concernment is included; he hath power over his own will; his obedience for us all will be no more difficult than each man's for himself; there is nothing required of him but what his nature inclines him to, and what his reason, if he use it, will guide him to comply with; and though the hazard of an eternal misery be greatly tremendous, yet are not the hopes of an everlasting blessedness as greatly consolatory and encouraging? and besides, the hazard will be but for a time; which if we pass safely, we shall shortly receive a full and

glorious confirmation and advancement.' Certainly no reasonable man, all this considered, though there had been no mention made of a means of recovery in case of falling,—the consideration whereof is yet also to be taken in by us,—would have refused to consent: and then what reasonable man but will confess this to be mere cavil, that '*we did not personally consent?*' for if it be certain we should have consented, and our own hearts tell us we should, doth the power of a Creator over his creatures signify so little that He might not take this for an actual consent? For is it not all one, whether you did consent, or certainly would have done it, if you had been treated with? Covenants betwixt superiors and inferiors differ much from those betwixt equals; for they are laws as well as covenants, and therefore do suppose consent, the terms being *in se* reasonable, as that which not only our interest, but duty, would oblige us to. It is not the same thing to covenant with the great God and with a fellow-creature. God's prescience of the event, (besides that no man knows what it is yet,) whatever it is, it is wholly immanent in Himself, as also His decrees; therefore could have no influence into the event, or be any cause of it: all depended, as hath been shown, on man's own will; and therefore, if God did foresee that man would fall, yet He knew also, that *if he would, he might stand*.

From both jointly,—

1. Were we once so happy? and have we now undone ourselves? how acceptable should this render the means of our recovery to us! That it is a recovery we are to endeavour, (which implies the former truth,)—*that* supposes us once happy. Who would not be taken with such an overture for the regaining of a happiness which he hath lost and fallen from? It is a double misery to become from a happy estate miserable; it is yet as a double happiness to become happy from such misery, and proportionably valuable should all means appear to us that tend thereto. Yea, and it is a recovery after self-destruction (which asserts the former

truth), such a destruction as might reduce us to an utter despair of remedies, as rendering us incapable to help ourselves, or to expect help or pity from others. O how welcome should the tidings of deliverance now be to us! how joyful an entertainments should our hearts give them upon both these accounts! How greatly doth Scripture<sup>1</sup> commend the love and grace of Christ under the notion of *redeeming*! a word that doth not signify deliverance from simple misery only, but also connote a precedent better state, as they expound it who take the phrase, (as Scripture uses it,) to allude to the buying out of captives from their bondage. And how should it ravish the heart of any man to have mercy and help offered him by another hand, who hath perished by his own! How taking should gospel-grace be upon this account! How should this consideration engage souls to value and embrace it! It is urged, we see, to that purpose by Hosea, "O Israel, thou hast destroyed thyself, but in me is thine help."<sup>2</sup> And it follows, "I will be thy king; where is any other that will save thee?" etc., and, "O Israel, return unto the Lord thy God; for thou hast fallen by thine iniquity."<sup>3</sup> Now, friends, do but seriously consider this. If you believe the truths you have heard, how precious should Christ be to you! how precious should the gospel, the ordinances and ministry of it be! Do you complain that *formerly* you were not treated with? by all these God *now* treats with you. Now your own personal consent is called for; not to anything that hath the least of hazard in it, but what shall make you certainly happy, as miserable as you have made yourselves: and there is nothing but your consent wanting; the price of your redemption is already paid; it is but taking Christ for your Saviour and your Lord, and living a life of dependence and holiness for a few days, and you are as safe as if you were in glory;—will

<sup>1</sup> Rom. iii. 24, etc.; 1 Cor. i. 30, 31; Eph. i. 6, 7; Tit. ii. 11—14.

<sup>2</sup> Hos. xiii. 9, 10.

<sup>3</sup> Ch. xiv. 1.

you now stick at this? O do not destroy yourselves a second time, and make yourselves doubly guilty of your own ruin!

2. Was our state so good, but mutable? what cause have we to admire the grace of God through Christ, that whom it recovers, it confirms! It was a blessed state that by our own free will we fell from; but how much better even upon this account is this, which by God's free grace we are invited and recalled to!

THE END.





FL.1-4-68

BX            Howe, John  
9315            The Works  
H6  
1862  
v.1

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---



